



龍皇

午夜風流 著



lang="en">

Dragon Blood Warrior - Volume 01-04

Chapter 05

Table of Contents

1. [Chapter 1: Dragon Blood Identification](#)
2. [Chapter 2 : Piecing Female Officers](#)
3. [Chapter 3: Arousing Stepmother](#)
4. [Chapter 4: Affair](#)
5. [Chapter 5: Winning a Small Lolita](#)
6. [Chapter 6: Queen's Plot](#)
7. [Chapter 7: Taking liberties with sister-in-law](#)
8. [Chapter 8: Ejaculating on Stepmother's face](#)
9. [Chapter 1 : Entering the Imperial Palace](#)
10. [Chapter 2: The Queen's Trap!](#)
11. [Chapter 3: Meeting the Tanzya Tribe](#)
12. [Chapter 4: Planning to take a female General as prisoner](#)
13. [Chapter 5: Captive Bath](#)
14. [Chapter 6: How to handle](#)
15. [Chapter 7: This Hass person belongs to me](#)
16. [Chapter 8: An Unforeseen Event](#)
17. [Chapter 1: Pacifying The Rebellion](#)
18. [Chapter 2: Bestowing A Marriage](#)
19. [Chapter 3: To Vie For The Husband](#)
20. [Chapter 4: Sex Slave](#)
21. [Chapter 5: God Wolf](#)
22. [Chapter 6: Snatched Spirit Drop](#)
23. [Chapter 7: The Toad's Holy Water](#)
24. [Chapter 8: Conquering The Witch](#)
25. [Chapter 1: A Strange Encounter In The Canyon](#)

26. [Chapter 2: Brave Battle Against The Python](#)
27. [Chapter 3: Night Ambush](#)
28. [Chapter 4: Wolf Kingdom's Army's Retreat](#)
29. [Chapter 5: Night Of Passion](#)

Chapter 1: Dragon Blood Identification

“My beloved Margaret, Aiwa will be going through the gene identification soon. If I have not guessed wrong, in a month he will be assigned to a small garrison! You know, he’s our Holtzer clan’s future. Unfortunately I fear he may become like my little brother, Bagot, the type of person that shrinks from responsibility. Bagot’s already almost 35, yet he’s still an officer so I really don’t see him accomplishing anything by age 40.”

“Similarly, I fear our Aiwa may suffer the same fate. He had been sent to the East Empire to study but I feel that the East Empire’s education is impractical. Although you aren’t his birth mother, you are the only one that can handle the heavy responsibility of cultivating him. You have to be like a mother and protect him. Our Holtzer clan’s future rest on his shoulders. That’s why I wish that while he’s stationed at a garrison, you will serve as his assistant.”

As the highest ranking general in Montelago City spoke while smugly rubbed his hands, a thirtyish beauty was standing in front of his desk listening.

This woman was Master Kyle’s second wife. She had a head full of curly brown hair, deep eyes, and a tall nose giving her a delicate appearance. In addition, her tall stature made the mounds on her chest particularly conspicuous. Her officer uniform also gave her beauty a heroic spirit; however, I’m afraid you cannot describe her temperament with the same words.

“Me? To be a child’s assistant?”

Margaret thought that there must have been something wrong with her ears. She never would have imagined that Master Kyle would make her, an officer, go and be her immature little stepson’s assistant. Preposterous!

“Don’t look down on our son..... Oh. I’m sorry. I forgot. He’s not your biological son. However, don’t forget that his birth mother is the empire’s famous general ranked Dragon Blood Warrior. We have the same lineage, so our son will definitely be an authentic Dragon Blood Warrior. The gene identification is just a procedure. Once the results come out, he will obtain some territory from the empire. I hope his future will be brighter than mine!”

Master Kyle confidently looked at the beauty in front of him.

Although Margaret was unwilling, her husband was her boss and she could only obey.

“You don’t think this arrangement is inappropriate right?”

Master Kyle asked, his eyes flashing as he watched her.

“No... No problem!”

Margaret hesitated at first, but in less than half a second, she answered with a very resolute reply expressing her determination. However, she really wanted to tell this stubborn old man that Aiwa – her stepson would not have a future any brighter than Bagot’s, She unexpectedly found out that he had been secretly peeping at her from a slit in the door while she showered. However, now she suddenly changed her mind. She wanted to ‘cheerfully’ accept this duty, so that she could discipline this disrespectful little bastard and let him taste her Rou Qian martial arts!

“Very good, the fact that you can answer so quickly makes me very happy.”

Master Kyle walked by and patted her shoulders. “The empire’s future is in your hands!”

“Informing the General, Master Aiwa’s identification results have finally come out!”

A captain came in and snapped a salute. Then he bowed as he offered the identification report. Margaret took the report from the captain’s hands, taking a quick look before giving it to Master Kyle.

Master Kyle’s face was filled with an indescribable excitement. His eyes moved away from Margaret’s charming appearance, and fell on the report.

But Master Kyle’s excited face suddenly froze. Then his lips quivered: “How can this be possible?”

His hands holding the report were trembling.

“What’s wrong?”

Margaret had taken a quick glance at the report, but she didn’t see any of the

specifics. She could tell from the look on Master Kyle's face that the contents on the report must have been quite different from the old general's expectations.

"Aiwa doesn't have the Dragon Blood gene?"

Master Kyle's hands trembled as he pointed to the top of the report.

"Are you sure the blood flowing in his veins are yours?"

After Margaret said those words, she immediately felt that they were inappropriate. These words had too great of an effect on the normally proud Master Kyle. Shortly after, her quick mind immediately came up with a more appropriate reason that wouldn't aggravate the general. "I mean. During the time he was in the East Empire for training, could something have happened?"

"Impossible, this absolutely can't be possible. This must be that old bastard Groote's doing. He had already made our Holtzer clan his sworn enemy. I'm going to the hospital to ask Steven exactly what is going on!"

Master Kyle was so angry his beard was shaking. "Help me change my clothes! Prepare the carriage!"

Margaret quickly helped Master Kyle put on his military coat, then quickly ran downstairs and ordered for a carriage to be prepared.

Very soon, a luxurious carriage carrying the general drove out of the mansion racing toward Montelago's military hospital.

Seeing the General's carriage arrive, the two soldiers responsible for guarding the iron gate hurriedly pulled it open. Because the heavy iron gate couldn't handle the strain, it made a deafening noise as it was being pulled open. As the carriage charged through the gates, the coachman cracked his whip, bursting into the Montelago hospital.

"General!"

When a captain of the guards saw General Kyle's carriage come charging in, he rushed forward to stop it. But Master Kyle grabbed the horse whip and mercilessly whipped it. A red bloodstain immediately appeared on the captain's chin. The captain immediately clutched his chin and stood to the side respectfully looking straight as the carriage rushed towards the hospital building.

If Kyle hadn't shown mercy, the whip would have been sufficient enough to cut off his head.

Master Kyle was rarely active, but at this time he displayed his physical fitness. It's almost hard to imagine how fast he was as he jumped from the carriage, his large military coat unbuttoned. Walking like the wind his heavy coat fluttered behind him.

Kyle kicked open the door of the headquarter office. Inside several people immediately stood up.

"General Kyle?"

The person with the highest military rank in the hospital belonged to Steven. He was also the head of Montelago City's gene identification committee so naturally Aiwa's gene identification was under his management. This was why Kyle came to see him.

General Kyle did not speak. He grabbed Steven by the collar, and lifted his body up high: "I'll ask you once. How did you identify my son's genes? Isn't this report in your handwriting?"

Kyle glared at him. He had tarnished his reputation and now the Holtzer clan's reputation was ripped to shreds!

"We did not make a false report. We fully followed normal procedure while identifying your son's Dragon Blood."

Steven whose feet were in the air replied in a firm tone.

"You dare say you didn't do anything to my son's report?"

Master Kyle growled as if here were crazy, his eyeballs almost popping out. The one thing he hated the most were cheap tricks behind his back.

"I swear in the name of our supreme queen Sophia, that we were absolutely fair!"

Steven's collar was being clutched tightly by Kyle, so he was having some difficulty breathing. At the most crucial moment he used the empire's famous queen's name to save his little life.

"I want a duel with you!"

Kyle roared like a lion, his roar echoed through the large office building.

The air froze for nearly a minute.

“General Kyle. Please don’t forget your rank. Since you’re a general, you are not allowed to challenge lower ranking officers.

A beautiful and elegant female doctor walked out. Her dark blue pupils pierced the furious old general.

If you can hear her voice, you will think that she is an impeccable woman where even a hot tempered lion will stop roaring in front of her.

“Bang!”

Kyle threw Steven forwards causing him to fly through the air like a bullet, falling heavily on the elegant couch he was originally lying on. Everyone present at the scene did not dare to make a sound.

“General Kyle. We fully understand your feelings at this time. However, the identification wasn’t done by just one person. Because it was your son, all of the members of the committee participated in the identification. If you still have any doubts about the results of the identification, you can file a lawsuit in the Montelago court. We are willing to accept any investigation and the judgement of the court.”

The woman spoke in a calm manner. In front of the furious general she showed no fear. Her eyes surprisingly bright, looked determined at Kyle.

“General Kyle. Are my words not enough to convince you but also Miss Ruth’s? She’s one of our empire’s rare imperial Gene Identification committee members!”

After Steven was thrown onto the couch he didn’t dare sit up but he still couldn’t help but vent his frustration.

Miss Ruth only shot Steven a glance. She didn’t express any gratitude for his compliment. She didn’t need him to confirm her rank. While she was standing in front of Kyle she had already revealed her qi showing her strength to General Kyle. An attack domain ability of no less than rank 5 or 6. What surprised the general though was that her attack domain clearly wasn’t her specialty.

“Then, my son’s lineage is obviously Dragon Blood nobility. Why is there such a result?”

Kyle’s fury subsided a little but he was still angry. He slammed the identification results into the conference table. When he raised his hands the identification report was deeply embedded inside the tabletop by one centimeter.

Hearing the deafening sound, Steven’s body sitting in the sofa flinched. In the presence of everyone, only Miss Ruth’s expression stayed the same.

“Your excellency. We were also bewildered. You and your wife are both Dragon Blood nobility. This was all recorded in the Dragon Blood Warrior gene pool libraries. But when your son was injected with the Dragon Blood gene serum, the effects of the serum were different from other Dragon Blood Warriors. Moreover, his gene sequence is undergoing an unidentifiable transformation.”

Miss Ruth had a very serious expression. “Therefore, in the end your son Aiwa couldn’t be recognized as a Dragon Blood Warrior. We still have to wait for Montelago City Court’s final decision. Of course, if you are not satisfied with their decision, then you can also take your suit to the empire’s Supreme Court. There the presiding judge will give you a final answer!”

Ruth’s words were neither light nor heavy, but she managed to calm his rage. Her words weren’t the only thing in effect. Her cool expression working together with her flattering charm could not be resisted by any man

“That’s fine then. I will not give up. I will be waiting for the court’s decision!”

General Kyle turned around. His large military coat spun creating a gust of cold wind, chilling everyone in the room to the bone. Some people could not help but shudder. However, the closest to him, Miss Ruth, did not change her expression, only her white lab coat fluttered in the wind quickly returning to its original state.

In fact, Aiwa was still under observation. At the moment he was lying in the Dragon Blood identification lab’s complex metal bed. He was naked; his four limbs were firmly fixed making him unable to move. Since he was injected with the Dragon Blood serum, his body had been constantly undergoing changes. At the moment, Ruth didn’t dare tell General Kyle what she had done. After all, this

was his only son. If there was an accident even if Kyle didn't hold her responsible, she would still feel guilty.

She felt guilty because after Aiwa's gene sequence began to change from the Dragon Blood serum injection, she decided to act on her own accord and inject a resistance serum. However, it didn't work and instead made his muscles rapidly inflate making the metal buckles binding his limbs almost burst. Ruth had no choice but to loosen them by two holes.

She didn't know if his body would still undergo any changes, but if she let Kyle come into the lab now, he definitely wouldn't be able to recognize his son. Fortunately, Aiwa's muscle changes weren't necessarily a bad thing, because he now not only looked powerful and brave, but also a lot more handsome. Even lying there naked he gives off the impression of a rare handsome man within the empire.

"Aiwa, do you feel comfortable now?"

Ruth walked gracefully to his side. Even if she was still nervous in her heart, her expression was very calm. If she looked nervous too, she was afraid she would make Aiwa even more scared.

"Ah, it's not as painful anymore."

Aiwa had already been lying on the bed for nearly four hours. Although being unable to move made him uncomfortable, it wasn't as painful as when his body started reacting to the serum. Now he could feel the pain slowly subsiding.

As Ruth stood at the end of the bed Aiwa could just see her graceful curves. Ruth's two impressive peaks would make any man excited and as Aiwa laid naked on the bed, upon seeing her pretty face he had a reaction. What was originally soft moved a little.

Good. Ruth thought. *If he has this kind of normal reaction then his body did not suffer any serious injuries.* Ruth leaned over the middle of the bed, her slim fingers caressing Aiwa's legs. As she kept on caressing him, her slender and warm hands made Aiwa's rod quickly rise up becoming thick and long. Just like how his muscles suddenly increased, here also obviously increased a lot. As the palms of her hands touched his little guy, it went crazy. In less than a few seconds it already jumped out of the palm of her hand. Now it wouldn't fit in both hands.

She estimated that the length must have been over 30 centimeters, and the diameter must have been no less than 6 centimeters.

“Can such a crude thing fit inside a woman’s body? What kind of woman would be able to bear such a thing?” Looking at Aiwa’s little guy, Ruth could not help but gasp.

Ruth sat on the side of the bed. She didn’t let go of Aiwa’s rod as she unbuttoned her uniform with her left hand. The uniform was specially made. It was made with a thin material that insulated heat well and so Ruth was wearing only a thin shirt inside. Her shirt was wrapped tightly so that you could almost see the tips of her twin peaks.

“Is this a type of medical procedure?” The 17 years old Aiwa couldn’t help but stare stupidly at the beauty sitting next to him. He could not help but breathe heavily.

“Why are you so nervous? Never seen a woman before?”

Ruth’s eyes looked provocatively at Aiwa. She liked to tease people like this, especially the young man that was lying on the bed. Obviously he had never tasted a woman before and from Ruth’s experience, she could tell just from looking.

“Major is quite gorgeous!”

Aiwa’s compliment was largely out of fear because right now he was a lamb ready to be slaughtered without any possibility of resistance. If Ruth pulled hard at this moment, his currently hard stem would be uprooted. Even with a teasing smile on her face, such a woman could turn hostile at any moment.

“Do you want me to..... let it back up?”

Ruth’s hand was currently pressing down his rod onto his stomach. Her palm slid upwards all the way up to his chin. “You should feel lucky. You have become more handsome since you’ve came in. If you can keep it up for an hour I can make you my little lover. Hahaha.....”

Ruth’s laughter made the two mounds on her chest tremble. Her interest in Aiwa became greater. Before she was mainly interested in him because of the changes in his gene sequence. Now it was because his rod under her rank three

perception energy during her physical examination was still able to have a reaction. *This rascal is such a pervert.* You should know, usually when a man is covered by a rank two perception energy, it would become completely unresponsive.

Ruth slid her slender finger back and forth in a circle on Aiwa's lips. This wasn't just teasing but also sexual harassment.

"Hey, this room is really hot!" Sally, help me take off my uniform and bring over my white lab coat."

Ruth's hand slipped down Aiwa again and grabbed his already hard rod.

The nurse named Sally walked over with Ruth's lab coat. Ruth came up from the bedside and stood up straight. She let Sally take off her military uniform.

Sally's movements were very agile and very formal. One look and you could tell she was well-trained.

She stripped Ruth naked. Ruth's snow white body was like a jade sculpture and the curves on her body were just as smooth. According to Aiwa the most terrifying thing were not the two towering mounds on her chest but the triangular yellow jungle below. Aiwa really wanted to see the thicket below at her Shangri-la. But even with great effort he couldn't see anything, because as she undressed, his line of sight was blocked by Sally's body, and when not blocking, Ruth would close her legs and clamp tightly, making it impossible to see anything.

After Sally took off Ruth's uniform, she quickly folded them. Just as quickly she covered Ruth's body with the white lab coat. But after helping Ruth button two of the buttons, Ruth stopped her. Sally could only leave with Ruth's military uniform.

The only people left in the entire lab were Aiwa who was still fastened to the bed, and this female wolf. Ruth took off her black stockings, revealing her white legs.

If Aiwa wasn't held back by the fear of her unknown strength, Aiwa would have long ago used his qi techniques on her. But at this moment Aiwa could only try flirting with her. The feeling of humiliation and shame made him furious.

However, in front of this woman who was more powerful than him, Aiwa could only endure.

But now he really couldn't hold back. Because right now Ruth was pressing her slim fingers on his rod, He already wouldn't have been able to stand having his little toy grasped by a woman let alone by an exquisite and glamorous woman like Ruth. Moreover, she was wearing a white lab coat that wasn't even properly buttoned. Inside, her two white exposed mounds were especially attractive. She sat by his side, and his leg could feel her warm body through the lab coat.

Aiwa felt like all of his blood was concentrated on his pillar. Ruth's hand only grabbed it gently, but it became as hard as a steel bar.

"Aiwa, I have to admit. Compared to other boys your age, your little toy is much bigger. I just don't know if it's any useful. Can you let this lady give it a try?"

"Miss Ruth, have mercy on me. It's stretching so much that it's painful. If you really want me to do anything, then at least release me from these bindings. I'm uncomfortable as hell!"

Aiwa really wanted to use the qi techniques he had learned and let this woman experience his rod! However, now he was trapped in this iron bed and couldn't move. The only thing he could move was his rod below. He couldn't use his palms and release his qi and he couldn't direct his qi serpents to fight back. Right now looking at her commanding appearance felt very humiliating.

"Ha ha. That's not a bad idea, but you're still under observation. How can I possibly release you? However, you can lie there like a good boy, and serve this lady! Rest assured, I will not demand you to use your hands. I only need you to use this small treasure."

With that, her small hands firmly grabbed his rod and then crushed it. If not for Aiwa's rank 2 defense ability. He believed her grip would have long made him impotent.

After a burst of pain, Aiwa secretly vowed: "Someday, I will return the favor!"

"Are you cursing me in your heart?"

Ruth's hands once again grabbed his thick rod. Inside her bewitching eyes there was a sinister look.

“I didn’t. How could I dare curse a senior officer? I’m still waiting for beautiful Miss Ruth to write my identification results.”

Aiwa was surprised. Did his eyes give him away? It was in his heart yet she unexpectedly knew!

“I’ve always been fair. Well it doesn’t matter. Since I squeezed you a moment ago, if you want revenge then you can squeeze me too.”

While Ruth spoke she calmly unbuttoned her lab coat. A pair of snow white mounds appeared in front of Aiwa’s eyes. They were lustrous and glorious. With one look Aiwa almost popped a blood vessel: As she got closer he could almost see her thin blood vessels.

Ruth’s chest slowly fell up and down. Aiwa’s innocent face drew closer, as Ruth caressed the side of Aiwa’s face. Being touched like this made Aiwa’s blood boil. His rod below also immediately sprung up. Then she moved her chest near Aiwa’s hands and let one of his hands grab her breast. But did Aiwa dare pinch hard? In his heart it was very clear. If he dared get revenge, his rod below would certainly be broken in half. Aiwa could only follow along. He gently fondled her ample chest.

“My Aiwa, your reaction is so intense. It really moved this lady’s heart! Should I let you plug my hole?”

Ruth asked as she softly stroked Aiwa’s face.

Aiwa was unable to answer because he was panting too heavily. Seeing him teased into this state, Ruth felt very satisfied. In fact, as soon as she saw how thick his rod was, she had an urge to have sex with him. She lifted her white lab coat and got onto the metal bed. Then she walked over his head. Lying on the bed Aiwa could see underneath her white coat. There was curly yellow hair and the hair was slightly moist. Because her legs were open, Aiwa could even see her pink little hole.

“I heard that before sex it’s best to make it wet. Will you do me a favor?”

“Saying that, she bent both of her legs, and then slowly squatted down. As she squatted down, Aiwa had only taken a quick glance at her slightly moist hole before he started breathing heavily. He quickly closed his eyes, but soon his lips

felt moistness from her small hole. Aiwa involuntarily explored with his tongue, rubbing gently against Ruth.

“Oh..... You’re so good at licking..... Hmm.....”

With one lick she unexpectedly felt especially refreshed. She really didn’t expect that a 17 year old boy knew how to please a woman. She couldn’t help but squat lower, bringing her entrance closer to Aiwa’s lips. She liked the feeling of his tongue.

Aiwa was bound to the iron bed and couldn’t move. He could only use his mouth. When Ruth squatted down, he simply opened his mouth, pushed his tongue and mouth up and tightly clamped down on Ruth’s little hole quickly moving his tongue around.

“Ah.....so good.....”

Ruth under the attack of Aiwa’s quick tongue could not help rub her lips below on it. Ruth began to fully indulge in her desires while holding back her urge to cum. When provoking Aiwa she was already close to cumming and now Aiwa only needed to lick her once for her to almost lose control.

“Oh.... baby, this lady wants to.....”

Ruth’s alluring buttocks pressed down hard, causing Aiwa’s tongue to rub hard against her. Waves of pleasure attacked her, and she came. Her fluids came spraying out. Because she was moving too fast, some of it got into Aiwa’s mouth and he accidentally swallowed. The rest was sprayed over Aiwa’s handsome face.

[TOS](#)

Chapter 2 : Piecing Female Officers

“Ah..... so good!”

Ruth's tender body shivered gently, but she immediately controlled her spraying. Looking at Aiwa's mouth, Ruth felt very proud, but she didn't stop her torture. She moved down to Aiwa's rod, once again raising her lab coat. Her hand grabbed his pillar and slowly pointed it towards her hole. She had already untied her lab coat, so her front was completely exposed to Aiwa's eyes. The two mounds on her chest shook slightly as she moved.

Aiwa was unable to take his eyes from Ruth's pretty face. Ruth also looked at him: Her body slowly lowering. Aiwa's thick rod slowly entered Ruth's narrow insides.

“Ah.....”

While Ruth lowered her body, she softly moaned. Waves of pleasure began to attack her as his thick barrel pierced her body. She tried to relax, but Aiwa's thick rod was far too big. Like before she began to feel like cumming as her insides tightened. However she still tried to maintain control, and let the thick rod poke her tender flower bud inside.

“Ah! It hit the tip!”

When the rod hit the tip of her flower bud, a burst of intense thrill jolted through her tender body making her tremble. If she weren't diligently holding back the urge to cum, she certainly would've.

However, Aiwa's pillar was still not all the way in. At least two inches was exposed. This was unbearable for Aiwa because the length exposed wasn't able to enjoy feeling of Ruth's warm and wet insides.

Ruth slowly rode his rod. With every stroke, she would make Aiwa's hot firm rod pound against her flower bud. With every stroke, Ruth felt the petals of her flower bud spreading open bit by bit. She began to thrust faster and faster and even fiercer and fiercer. Suddenly she thrust too deeply, Ruth felt her flower bud open up a little bit, and then she felt his rod piece into the small opening.

“Oh.....”

A type of intense pleasure she had never experienced before hit her. Her narrow little mouth began to tighten snugly against Aiwa's round tip. It was a completely spontaneous action, involuntarily even. When she tried to move up again she found that it was very difficult because the round tip had deeply pierced her little mouth: For Aiwa it felt like he was being sucked by a powerful force. As a result, when Ruth tried to move her body up, Aiwa felt a painful pulling feeling on his thick rod.

“Ah.....”

Aiwa cried out in pain as Ruth tried to pull out, and Ruth who also couldn't handle the tearing pain had to sit down. After sitting, once again Aiwa's rod hit the tip of her flowering making her feel sore and itchy. She reached an intense high and came, fluid began to drip down Aiwa's jade pillar.

Ruth laid on top of Aiwa pressing her breasts down on him and kissing his mouth. Like how Aiwa licked her before, Ruth's tongue began to explore his mouth. While kissing and sucking she also began to wriggle around gyrating on Aiwa's jade pillar. Gradually, she was able to move her body freely. But the feeling of Aiwa's pillar grinding on her tip brought Ruth even more intense joy.

“Oh.....Oh.....”

Her moans quickly became loving gasps. Her two protruding mounds pressed and rolled against Aiwa's solid chest

While Ruth's whole body was stimulated and trembling from the intense pleasure, Aiwa's rod was still hard as ever inside her. Although he couldn't move his limbs, he could still move his hips. Ruth rested on top of him drowning in delight for so long before Aiwa's thick jade rod began to move. She soon found herself almost falling unconscious. As if she were fleeing for her life she suddenly pulled out, and rolled away.

“Ah.....”

Ruth wasn't hurt from falling but rather from Aiwa's thick rod. She felt as if he had torn off a piece of her flesh.

While she looked at Aiwa's still hard jade pillar she was unwilling to admit

defeat. With her husband she could make him cum with these movements, but she didn't think that this little kid could be so formidable!

"Sally..... take care of this kid for me!"

Ruth was lying powerless on the floor, but her mouth was just as unforgiving as before. If she alone couldn't defeat Aiwa, she would command Sally to help her vent.

Sally took out a sword, and leaped from one side of a room. She jumped high up in the air while holding the long sword. Her body moved as if it she were flying and she brought the sharp blade straight to Aiwa's throat.

Seeing the sharp blade in Sally's hands that was about to cut off his neck, Aiwa knew how his short life would soon play out. If his body were able to move freely he would have been able to avoid the sword. But at the moment all four of his limbs were bound. Right now even turning his neck was difficult. He could only shut both eyes and hope that her cut would be clean so that he wouldn't die painfully.

But at the instant he shut his eyes, he heard a loud clang. When he opened his eyes, the sharp blade in Sally's hands was knocked out with a great force. A *zi* was heard as the blade embedded the ceiling.

Sally's body fell heavily in front of Aiwa's bed. Ruth beautiful eyes stared towards Sally as she roared out: "Who told you to kill him? Do you know who he is? If you kill him even ten of your lives would not be enough to compensate. He's General Kyle's one and only son. The Holtzer clan's heir! Are you trying to destroy me?"

"Miss, I'm sorry, I didn't know what you wanted me to do....."

For a moment Sally was at a loss for words.

"Are you an idiot? If I wanted to kill him, would I need your help? Imbecile, how did you grow up to be this stupid, to not even understand what I said? Did you not see? I'm dripping with sweat, but that kid is still so hard. Figure out a way to make him soft!"

Ruth unquestionably ordered.

“I.....”

Sally hesitated. She had just witnessed their fierce battle on the bed. Ruth usually liked to sexually harass the handsome men that came for the identification. But none of them had a need for her to ride them. With just some slight teasing with her delicate hands all of those men would thank her for her kindness. On the other hand, Aiwa was not only the first man she had ridden, but also unexpectedly was still firm. Therefore, by seeing his fighting spirit. Sally could tell how strong he was.

“What, are you going to defy the order of your commanding officer?”

Ruth slightly narrowed eyes filled with anger. Sally knew that if her master really got angry then she would use the most stringent measures to punish her.

“Miss Ruth..... but I.....I’m still a!”

Sally really cared about her chastity. She wanted to give her chastity to her destined man, and this was the first time she had met Aiwa. Having to give the chastity she had been guarding for ten years to this young stranger made her feel really wronged. But Ruth was her immediate superior. How could she dare disobey her superior’s order?

Ruth crawled up from the ground staring at Sally. Her two eyes were like two sharp swords, stabbing Sally and causing her to shrink back.

Sally had no choice but to take off her nurse uniform.

After taking off her nurse uniform, skin whiter than the uniform was exposed. But even more attractive were the two mounds sticking out of her chest. Captivating bright red like cherries were set in the middle of her two developing mounds. The red was neither too deep nor too shallow and further down, underneath her flat and smooth belly, was a neat jungle in the shape of an inverted triangle.

Sally had chestnut hair, and the jungle underneath was the same color. It was not lush but very charming. Because she was too embarrassed, her intimate parts were being covered. She could not help but cover her chest tightly with her arms. Thus, her two breasts appeared a little bigger making up for her underdevelopment.

Aiwa couldn't see anything but when she lifted a leg to climb onto the bed, Aiwa caught a glimpse of her chestnut hair at her delicate place. Perhaps she had been aroused by the scene before because at this point she was somewhat fairly moist. Lying there, Aiwa had a clear view of her tender place with glistening dew.

Her silence was adorable as she silently separated her legs and imitated the way Ruth squatted down. Her hand reached out to grab Aiwa's thick rod inserting it into her delicate place. Although she had never experienced such a thing before, Sally was a self-taught nurse. She rubbed Aiwa's rod against her entrance pleasuring herself. Then she began to slowly lower her body

As she lowered her body a tearing pain hit her.

"Ah-"

Sally gently cried out. She could not help but clench her teeth. She had been pierced by Aiwa's rod. Her body shook, but it was not entirely out of pain but in anticipation of graduating from being a virgin.

She closed her eyes forcing her body down in order to hide the tearing pain.

But her narrow insides were unable to adapt to Aiwa's thick rod as if she were trying to stuff a wooden cork inside.

"Sally, good girl!"

Seeing Sally bravely lower her body, Ruth unexpectedly began to encourage her. Although Sally was reluctant a moment ago, she had after all carried out her orders.

"Sit down! Take all of it in! Sally, be brave!"

Ruth could see clearly how Aiwa's thick barrel was like a standing earthworm with a large part still exposed. Just before she couldn't make Aiwa's cum, so if Sally couldn't help a little, it would be impossible to make him concede.

"Ah! It hurts..."

When Sally began, she wanted to use the physical pain to distract her from her emotional distress but Aiwa's thick rod had exceeded her original expectations. Even taking him in was too difficult to bear.

"Everyone's first time hurts, be brave Sally, soon you will be very happy,

believe me!”

Ruth held down her fragrant shoulders. Sally knew, if she didn't take the initiative, Ruth would definitely press her body down, which would make the experience even more painful. As a result, Sally clenched her teeth, closed her eyes and suddenly sat down.

“Ah-“

Aiwa's thick rod reached her flower. Accompanied with the pain was a tingling sensation. She did not expect her body to be so flexible. The ache she felt rather than a feeling of pain was more like a pleasant sensation. It was better than the ache she felt when she secretly watched Aiwa and Ruth.

Aiwa was also feeling a nice tightness. Now he no longer felt any pain, but pleasure. Sally felt warm and soft. She wasn't rough like Ruth but her natural contractions made Aiwa ecstatic. He felt completely engulfed by a warm sensation. The young woman's secretions made Aiwa even more aroused. Now Aiwa began to take the initiative. Being attacked directly, Sally's body jolted. It was a really pleasurable jolt. His thick rod was not only rubbing her insides, but also occasionally touching her partially open flower. Even her moans were interrupted by Aiwa's thrusts.

“Ah! Ah! Oh...”

Her moans went up a pitch. The two tender white mounds on her chest twitched violently. Although her figure was not as impressive as Ruth's, she could be described as having a cute and petite body.

Because of Aiwa's rough thrusting Sally's carnal desires suddenly erupted. In order to completely fulfill her assignment, Sally began to twitch her body causing Aiwa to lose his rhythm. Though it wasn't voluntarily, but rather because of Aiwa. Her petite body was completely under the mercy of Aiwa.

“Ah... I'm going to die...”

Sally screamed out. Despite being shy, the intense pleasure made her delirious. Nectar, as well as blood flowed down her thighs. She did not know how many times she came, just that she felt dizzy.

Ruth was after all an experience woman. Seeing that Sally was gone, and that

Aiwa was on the final sprint, she wanted to enjoy the fruits of victory. She pulled Sally off Aiwa's body, and jumped onto Aiwa holding his rod towards herself.

As his thick rod entered her, before thrusting her hips back up, she imitated Sally and began to furiously ride Aiwa: Aiwa also frantically pieced her with his meat barrel.

After these two fought for a couple of rounds, Aiwa suddenly felt a wave of heat from inside Ruth. The heat surged through, penetrating his abdomen turning into a unit of blood qi and then dispersing throughout his body. This feeling, wasn't this precisely the qi technique mentioned in basic textbooks to absorb the purest essence of female yin while strengthening his own yang essence?

Aiwa was rejoicing in his heart. He absolutely did not expect his cultivation which he had struggled to breakthrough for such a long time, would be brought right to his fingertips! After the portion of qi essence made several revolutions inside his body, his dou qi rapidly swelled bigger. In less than two minutes it went from the size of an egg into the size of an apple!

At this time, Ruth also felt tremendous changes in Aiwa's body. She calculated that if Aiwa were to exert his strength now, the bindings on him would break.

Ruth began to have an orgasm and at that moment a stream of hot liquid shot out straight into Ruth's...

They shook violently for a while, eventually calming down.

Ruth laid on Aiwa's body, arms around him. At this time she could still occasionally feel his emptied gun, causing her charming body to shudder again. Her fragrant lips placed kisses on Aiwa's chest.

But soon Aiwa became hard again. His strength suddenly converged, causing Ruth to quickly get off him.

"Miss Ruth, release me!"

Although Aiwa felt a sudden increase in power, he was a wise man. He knew that even if his strength increased by a rank, it was still far behind this woman so it was only wise to be respectful.

“Have I tied you up?”

Ruth stood naked next to the bed. There was something flowing slowly down her white thighs. Her face was flushed and her body was glistening with sweat.

Aiwa consciously moved his four limbs. His wrist and ankles originally bound unexpectedly were free. Aiwa suddenly sat up from the bed scaring Sally to retreat to one side while Ruth stood unmoved.

“Sally, bring me an identification document”

Ruth ordered.

Sally quickly ran to the table, brought a stack of identification forms and handed her a pen. In a flash Ruth wrote an evaluation.

“Dragon Blood Clan A-Class!”

Later she added a big exclamation mark.

“The Dragon Blood Clan also has ranks?”

Aiwa asked, puzzled.

“Before, no, now yes. Your Dragon Blood has some differences from ordinary Dragon Blood, but I cannot remove you from the Dragon Blood clan. If you wish, I can recommend you to the Queen’s Guard as cavalry. Of course, with your good looks, it would be enough to serve as her majesty’s honor guard. Ah... that was a bit insulting.”

“As you please, Miss Ruth... Can I go now?”

With a slight movement he jumped out of the bed.

Ruth wrote a few more words on the letter, and gave the letter to him after folding it. “Take my letter of recommendation, so that the captain of the Queen’s Guard would more likely recruit you.”

Ruth’s eyes watched Aiwa.

“Miss Ruth, surely you wouldn’t want me to go to the Queen’s guard naked like this?”

Ruth smiled and swung her head towards Sally. Sally immediately brought Aiwa’s clothes over. His clothes had been casually tossed aside unlike Ruth’s

which were neatly folded.

Under the care of Sally, Aiwa put on his clothes. But he could hardly button some of his clothes because his muscles had recently greatly increased in size. As a result, some places started to tear.

“How about this? Wait here a bit; I’ll get a tailor to come make you a new set of clothes.”

Ruth said.

“This is about right.”

Sally went outside to look for a tailor. Ruth walked in front of Aiwa and Aiwa did not move. Ruth’s slender fingers wound against his rod again.

“Your little guy is so big! Tell me, before while you were inside me, was that the only thing you learned in the two years you spent in the East Empire?”

Her slender jade fingers gently stroked his thick rod with just the right force. And her two voluptuous breasts lightly rubbed against Aiwa’s chest. A pair of deep blue eyes with an infatuated look stared into Aiwa’s same dark blue eyes. Her mouth breathed gently over Aiwa’s face.

“I learned a defensive ability. Just... just as a hobby.”

Aiwa didn’t want to be a woman’s plaything. Although he was not as ambitious as his father wanted him to be, he also wanted to gain some achievements. Just now Ruth said she would introduce him to the captain of the Queen’s guard, but even though the position looked decent and he would be able to be in the Queen’s presence, he would definitely have no freedom. However, right now he still didn’t dare to offend the Major in front of him and complain. Even slightly offending her would cause unexpected trouble.

She stood on a tiptoe and holding Aiwa’s head kissed his lips. Her fragrant tongue parted his lips and drilled into his mouth. After twirling around his mouth a few times, her hands began to stroke Aiwa’s muscular chest slowly slipping down the sides.

First she rubbed her face against Aiwa’s spirited jade pillar. Then she opened her mouth inviting the thick rod in and looked up at Aiwa with a glance. Her long

eyelashes curled up made her look extremely charming. Totally unlike a field officer, she let Aiwa's thick rod penetrate deeply into her throat. If she were an ordinary woman, something so thick and long would definitely have made her gag, but Ruth was different. She was part of the Dragon Blood clan so she had extraordinary self-control over her various organs.

But Aiwa was still worried about going too deep. Although the feeling was very stimulating he slowly pulled out. Ruth apparently sensing Aiwa's fear spat out his throbbing rod and stood up. She spread her legs, grabbed his thick rod and stuck it inside her. This time she wasn't impatient. She gently rotated her hips and sometimes squeezing tight and sometimes lightly. Gradually, the little hole opened once again, clamping down the thing swallowed inside tightly.

"Oh... Hmm..."

While Ruth swung her hips, her breasts were rubbing against Aiwa's chest. However, as her rhythm got faster and faster, her moans became a charming huff. At this point Aiwa's felt a wave of heat flow from Ruth's body, transmitting into his rod and into his body.

Like last time, Aiwa suddenly felt a tremendous increase in strength. At this point, Ruth also felt something. She clearly realized that a portion of the energy gathered inside her body had unwittingly disappeared!

Ruth suddenly back off and separated from Aiwa's body pushing him away.

"You little bastard, are you stealing my energy?"

Ruth's eyes looked alertly at Aiwa.

"I..., I didn't meant to..."

Aiwa stammered. In fact, he was not conscious that he was absorbing Ruth's energy. When practicing the technique, he was unconsciously absorbing energy from Ruth's body.

This qi technique would cause his dou qi to rapidly rotate and if not met with an external force it would only continue to rotate. But in the event it encounters a higher level energy, it would automatically absorb external energy into its orbit and convert the energy into its own. It's similar to electric current, high voltage will naturally flow to a lower voltage.

Ruth became suspicious of Aiwa. During the last round she was unable to defeat Aiwa, and besides gaining a few ranks, his attack domain ability was now at rank 4. Lastly the qi technique he had used just so happened to cause some of her energy to flow into his body

But Ruth's assessment of his various domain abilities was still very accurate, none of his combat domain ranks reached half of her's. Thinking of this, her originally nervous mood relaxed.

"Boy, this lady will tell you the truth. At your current rank, you won't be able to use any of my energy in your combat abilities. Understand? Dou qi energy and dou qi ability are two different concepts. You can suck energy from my body but you won't be able to use it. You use focus on circulating your dou qi; otherwise, my energy will threaten your body."

Ruth solemnly warned Aiwa.

"I..., I have no other motives, but I want to use my qi techniques to make you happier."

Aiwa did not want to irritate this pretty major. His two eyes stared at Ruth's voluptuous breasts. He wanted to grab them again and suck on them. Although there would be no milk, the feeling of sucking would feel quite wonderful.

"Grobe them a little bit? Really?"

Ruth walked to him again, her soft hand grabbing Aiwa's attractive chin, at the same time stimulating his hard rod with her knee.

"Really, I swear on the name of Queen Sophia, Miss Ruth is the most beautiful woman I've ever seen. If I cannot make Miss Ruth happy, then I really would be a useless man."

"Then I can reliably inform you, my Aiwa, this lady is already happy enough. I don't need your qi techniques!"

Ruth turned to get dressed restoring her serious expression.

At this time, Sally came in with a seamstress.

Although Aiwa liked beautiful woman, being in front of the cute seamstresses holding a measuring tape and measuring him still made him feel a little

embarrassed. From time to time his body would come into contact with the seamstress. When she went to measure his waist his barrel unexpectedly bump into the seamstress.

[TOS](#)

Chapter 3: Arousing Stepmother

Leaving the army hospital as well as Ruth's laboratory, Aiwa got on his carriage.

Ruth stood in front of a window, leaning on the window and gazing off into the distance. As Aiwa got on the carriage, his long maroon colored hair was lifted by a gust of wind making it look like beautiful satin. At the sight of his healthy physique Ruth's heart could not help but flutter. This was the first man to make her feel this way. She had a premonition. This man with the special Dragon Blood, in the future he would definitely have extraordinary good fortune. If he were able to devote himself to practice, he should be able to easily become a famous general. In the even more distant future, perhaps he would not merely be in control of Montelago's military might, but also the entire imperial army's.

"This kid really knows how to handle women!"

The corners of her mouth pursed up revealing a satisfied expression rarely shown to others.

Only after Aiwa's carriage disappeared from her line of sight did Ruth turn away from the window. She opened a drawer, took out a pair of brand new black stockings and put them on.

"Young Master Aiwa is back!"

The chamberlains and maids seeing Aiwa's carriage return, all excitedly turned to inform Master Kyle.

"My dear son. What did that old devil Steven do to you?"

General Kyle hastily ran out of his room. The first thing he checked was his son's complexion.

From Aiwa's excited face, Kyle had a hunch that he had good news. Aiwa walked to Kyle, took the identification report as well as the recommendation, and handed them to his father.

"Special Dragon Blood? What does this mean?"

Looking at the flamboyant writing General Kyle was bewildered. He frowned and looked up at his son.

While Aiwa loosened his new clothes, he plunked himself down on a spacious leather sofa. One hand reached out to take a glass of milk from the maid. After venting on two beautiful women he didn't care about what was written on the identification report anymore. Even though during both times he was constrained, it was still very pleasurable.

"I'm also not sure but it should be more powerful than normal Dragon Blood right?"

Aiwa couldn't answer his father's question. First he had to take a drink. He felt that his body needed water because his body had been almost drained by those two women. On the other hand he didn't feel any fatigue. After all in both times he absorbed quite a lot of their energy so now he felt slightly excited.

Master Kyle was also excited. He was so engrossed in the identification report as well as the recommendation letter that he didn't even notice the great changes in his son's body. What was originally a frail boy came back as a tall and burly man. Now as Aiwa sat on the couch by himself he felt squished.

"Son, this is a personal letter from Miss Ruth?"

General Kyle could not believe his eyes. You should know, although Ruth was lower ranked, within the blood identification field she had a huge reputation. Otherwise, when he went to the hospital he wouldn't have backed off.

"There's no mistake, I watched her write it with my own eyes!"

Aiwa said proudly. Unfortunately his pride had been damaged by Ruth. He was the sheep whereas she was the wolf. Because of this his heart was conflicted, but Aiwa vowed in his heart. One day he will definitely get back his honor.

"Ha ha, my son is showing great promise! Ah, Special Dragon Blood!"

As Master Kyle spoke, his face could not help but be filled with a happy smile. His smile, made his old face become wrinkled.

"Servants come, prepare the carriage, I want to see the Queen!"

Master Kyle patted his son on the shoulder, and rushed out the hall. Soon, a

carriage drove into the central courtyard. Master Kyle flew onto the carriage. At that moment, he felt ten years younger.

With the loud sound of the whip, the carriage came rumbling out of the General's residence.

The Hass empire has three major cities: to the east Dublin City, to the south Hohfeld city, and in the middle Montelago city. Montelago city is the biggest of the three. Its military forces make up 3/5 of the empires. And General Kyle is the chief of Montelago's military affairs. But in order to ensure the Queen's power, the three great military leaders of the cities did not have the right to mobilize troops unless during times of war. In general the army was under the command of the Queen.

The palace was situated in the center of the city.

Even from far away you can feel the dignity and majesty of it. At this time it was close to dusk, so the palace was decorated with lanterns. Over the entire palace was a dense orange.

The carriage stopped a few meters from the palace gates and General Kyle stepped out. Originally in front of Steven he had an air of power and prestige, but now he didn't know where it was went. While he tidied his military uniform he suddenly felt that asking for an audience with the Queen was somewhat bold.

Standing there, he hesitated and decided to go back. Better to not bother the Queen.

As he turned to get onto the carriage, a group of people with the queen came out from the side of the garden which was only a dozen meters away from the palace gates.

"Whose carriage is that?"

The Queen seeing a luxurious carriage parked outside the gates could not help but ask her entourage.

"Seems like it's General Kyle's?"

An attendant replied.

"Looks like he has some business with me, why doesn't he come in?"

The Queen stopped and looked towards the gate.

General Kyle had already seen the Queen and her party so he faced the Queen and bowed.

“General Kyle, your majesty asked you to come in!”

An attendee officer shouted.

General Kyle nervously stepped towards the palace and arrive in front of the Queen.

“Long live your majesty!”

Said General Kyle respectfully. He was almost afraid to look up at her, with the momentum from before all gone.

This was Her Majesty, the Queen. In fact, Queen Sophia was quite beautiful. She had deep eyes, golden hair, a slender figure, and looked like a porcelain doll. Her dignified air combined with her good looks made her irresistible.

“Is there something important, why don’t you come in and say it?”

The Queen did not have the slightest doubt over General Kyle loyalty; moreover, General Kyle never flaunted his seniority over the Queen. Therefore, the Queen took General Kyle quite seriously. Seeing the old General standing outside hesitating she surmised that he must have something important to report.

“Actually there’s nothing really.... Just that your old servant received some happy news and he was so happy that he couldn’t help but arrive here...”

Because there were many attendants around the Queen, the old general didn’t want to say his personal affairs out loud. More importantly, the identification of “Special Dragon Blood” was never before seen. If the Queen didn’t approve it, it would be like saying it wasn’t a type of Dragon Blood. If he couldn’t get the Queen’s reply today he feared that he wouldn’t be able to sleep. In order to convince the Queen that the word “special” was good, he said he was happy but in fact he was worried inside his heart.

“Oh? What could have made the senior general so pleased? No harm telling me right?”

Queen Sophia wasn't without interest as she looked towards General Kyle.

Kyle couldn't hide it anymore, he muttered and said: "This old general's son, Aiwa, is now 17 years old. He can now enlist in the army. Today he just had his blood identification."

"As far as I know, the senior general has Dragon Blood veins, and your former wife also has Dragon Blood veins. According to common sense, your son should also have Dragon Blood veins. Am I right?"

With this conclusion she thought, *was this the good news that made him so happy?*

"The identification result came out, and Miss Ruth wrote "Special Dragon Blood." I have never seen such an identification before, so Your Majesty, please look over it"

Saying that, Kyle presented her the identification report together with the letter of recommendation from Miss Ruth.

The Queen took it and calmly looked over it. A smile emerged on her face: "Since Miss Ruth recognizes his worth, then he must certainly not be a common child. I heard that your son just came back from the East Empire. Presumably he learned a lot, but if I ask him to be an aide by my side, would the senior general feel wronged?"

The Queen's beautiful eyes looked at General Kyle with his head down. Her bright mind was like a wily old fox with the experience of a crafty minister. She knew certainly that the old general wanted his son to go directly into the army to get experience in order to become a great talent.

"I wouldn't dare to! Your Majesty looks upon me with favor. This old general is eternally grateful!"

Although the Queen did not directly give Aiwa command of a small garrison, as for the blood identification problem she had given her recognition. This was the most important thing.

"Since the senior general has been blessed with such a happy occasion, you might as well come and have dinner with me now!"

The Queen's invitation was basically an order, General Kyle was unable to contain his joy as he expressed his thanks.

When Kyle had just stepped out of his official residence, Aiwa's stepmother, Margaret came out from inside. When she saw Aiwa, she couldn't believe it. This kid had become even more handsome by several degrees since he left. In particular he looked very fit and muscular making his childish appearance into that of a man's.

"Aiwa?"

Margaret couldn't believe it as she walked in front of Aiwa. Her eyes looked at her son with appreciation. At this point it wasn't the appreciation of a mother looking at her son but a woman appreciating a man. This made the shy Aiwa a bit embarrassed.

"Hello Margaret."

Aiwa acted normally calling his stepmother what he usually called her. But his eyes were also wandering over her body.

"Aiwa, while you were going through the identification, you weren't also getting cosmetic surgery right?"

Margaret asked, surprised.

"Why would I need to improve my looks? Was I ugly before?"

It should be noted that while he was being injected with the Dragon Blood serum, he only felt dramatic changes in the muscles of his body. He did not realize that his appearance had also changed not to mention that he had become a lot more handsome.

"No son, I'm just saying. You're a lot more handsome since you left this morning! Really, come, let your mother hug you."

Margaret excitedly opened her arms leaving Aiwa who was sitting on the sofa no choice but to stand up. At that point he realized that there was some inconsistencies with her stepmother's size. But he still obediently embraced Margaret.

Margaret's warm embrace caused her twin peaks to press tightly against his

chest. This made him start to breathe rapidly. Besides childhood, Margaret would only occasionally hold him like this so he would rarely be intimate with this non blood related woman. In addition for the past two years he had went to the East Empire to study and he had not seen her since then. Even during those two years he rarely mentioned her name.

But that was not enough to wipe her image out of his mind.

She was very beautiful and had charming eyes. Aiwa soon felt a strange feeling for this woman, but being sensible, in his heart it was very clear. This was his father's woman. He could only think that silently in his heart. In order to control his desires, he had watched her shower. He secretly listened from the bathroom door the sound of her showering, and watched her elegant and moving figure through the glass but he had never actually offended her.

Margaret didn't give this young bud any more opportunities to enjoy himself and slowly released him.

"It's already so late, Her Majesty must have invited you father to the palace for dinner so we won't wait for him."

Said Margaret.

For this dinner, Margaret displayed affection to her stepson for the first time. She continued to pile food on her plate and she would sneak tender glances at Aiwa. On that supper not only did he feel welcomed but also moved. Every time he looked at her chest, his heartbeat would suddenly accelerate, and his rod would also harden. As a result, he could not help but blush almost eating nothing and leaving the table.

Aiwa would never slack on his cultivation exercises. Every day he would exercise his body improving his dou qi and strengthening his qi techniques. Today when he was on the metal bed having sex with Ruth, he subconsciously sucked some energy from her body, strengthening his dou qi. Measuring it now, his dou qi was about the size of an apple.

Aiwa sitting on his bed held his breath and concentrated on his qi. Soon, his mind was clear and his dou qi gathered together into the size of an apple. His mouth chanted an incantation he had read thousands of times: "My magic, quickly come out and grant me invincible power—"

Aiwa said this three times in a row and soon pale blue smoke began to spread through the room. Within the smoke a pair of green serpents danced around. With his mind he could control how the two serpents flew in the air. Unfortunately there was nothing in the room to test out his attack skills.

These two serpents, regardless if the target is male or female, as long as they get entangled by them, would fall into a state of confusion. Today when he was attacked by Ruth, he very much wanted to use his qi techniques on her. However her identity was too special. If he had angered her, he would've faced disaster. Moreover, with his current skill, these two serpents probably wouldn't be a match for her but if she had been willing to accept this kind of attack then it would have been a different story.

After practicing his dou qi for a while, Aiwa went to look at the troop formations book he had brought back from the East Empire. In the Hass Empire, no one upheld military formations and few knew about it because in combat, the military depended on the general, dou qi, and swordsmanship so no one paid attention to troop formations.

When Aiwa went to the East Empire, besides being interested in qi techniques able to capture women, he was interested in troop formations. Moreover he was particularly fascinated with trapping formations. Within a few month's time, he had a profound understanding of troop formations. During practice, just using trapping formations he could easily defeat his opponents.

So while studying abroad in the East Empire, he got an A in tactical deployment but only a B in qi techniques. However the teacher said, qi technique practitioners should get practical experience and because he's too young the course didn't let him practice. Otherwise he should have been able to receive an A.

Aiwa picked up the book and prepared to study but then he heard the sound of rushing water. He didn't even need to think about it; obviously it was his stepmother Margaret taking a shower. Margaret had a habit of taking a shower every day. But today the sound of the water was particularly loud.

Hearing the sound of rushing water Aiwa remembered Margaret's slender figure and steep twin peaks. On the day he came back, he went to peep on

Margaret taking a shower. He thought he was being stealthy but Margaret could hear his heavy breathing from outside. In Kyle's residence, servants weren't allowed to come to the second floor, and they wouldn't dare to eavesdrop on her while she was showering so it could only be Aiwa.

Aiwa was an adolescent so Margaret could understand. But as her stepson, he didn't leave a favorable impression. Then again she didn't hate him and so in front of General Kyle she didn't expose Aiwa's peeping.

The increasingly loud sound of water brought back Aiwa's lust. His body mysteriously jumped down from the bed and crept out of the room.

Aiwa's room was diagonally opposite of Margaret's bathroom. Making Aiwa even more excited was that today Margaret had forgotten to lock the door. Perhaps because he was just a 17 years old boy she was not on guard.

Aiwa walked out barefoot and attached himself firmly to the door. He looked inside with great effort through a small slit. The sound of rushing water came out from inside through the clear glass. Aiwa could see Margaret's slim figure showering in the waterfall. Her brown hair was wet and attached to her smooth skin.

Aiwa didn't have to worry about his father suddenly coming back because if he did, there would be the welcoming shouts from the servants. And every time General Kyle came back with his carriage as he entered the courtyard there would be the crisp sound of a whip.

Standing so close to listen to the sound of Margaret showering, for the 17 years Aiwa, it was a deadly temptation. When he saw Margaret's devilish body through the layer of glass his rod immediately sprang up making his crotch extremely uncomfortable.

Margaret would usually shower for half an hour but for someone that was peeping it really was a short period of time. He wished he could watch her wash a little longer. The longer she washed, the longer he could enjoy the view.

He suddenly thought of a great way to extend Margaret's bath time. That is to use his serpents to arouse Margaret's lust!

Thinking of this he was suddenly had feelings of guilt. Margaret was after all his

stepmother. If he used his serpents it would definitely put her in a confused state.

However his heart's desires were stronger than his conscience. He made up his mind and stood at the door way. With his two palms facing each other, he directed his dou qi and chanted an incantation: "My magic, quickly come out and grant me invincible power—"

This time, perhaps because of his strong desires, he only needed to say the incantation once and his two serpents flew out in a cloud of smoke. With his thoughts he directed them into the bathroom.

Margaret had her eyes closed enjoying the feeling of the water so when the two serpents crawled on her body she did not notice. At the beginning the serpents crawled on her body like water but gradually Margaret felt something touching her sensitive parts. She didn't do anything though because she thought the stroking of the two serpents was just the feeling of the water. So she closed her eyes and refused to break this illusion.

Under Aiwa's thoughts, a serpent crawled onto Margaret's body and carefully stimulated her twin peaks: the other one was attached to her thigh stimulating her slit.

As the serpent moved, Margaret's passion got more and more intense. She could not help but use both hands to touch her sensitive areas. When one hand accidentally touched the serpent she opened her eyes to discover two ½ meter long green serpents.

In the Hass Empire, serpents were a symbol of God. People revered serpents and associated them with goodwill. As a result, when Margaret saw the two serpents climbing on her body and teasing her sensitive parts, she did not cry out. Instead she quickly pulled her hand back letting the two serpents do as they pleased. Because at least for now these two serpents had no intention of harming her but to raise her passion. She even regarded them as gifts from God. She only stayed silent leaning against the wall and silently enjoying the feeling.

However, Margaret didn't expect that although the two serpents were small they had a magic power surprising her. They only used their long and thin bodies to touch her smooth body and stimulate her but the feeling was very unusual.

From below she could feel her lust rising making her want to cry out for help.

Just around this time, the serpent on her thigh suddenly poked her slit. She could not help but to be shocked but she did not cry out. These sacred things couldn't be driven away so she could only let these two serpents wander her body.

In less than half a minute, the serpent below squeezed into Margaret's slit.

The slippery serpent, although it couldn't give Margaret a sense of fulfillment, it continued to arouse her lust. "Oh... My Aiwa!"

Margaret groaned, whispering his name. However as the stepmother, Margaret was unable to reveal her innermost feelings and shout out loud. She could only moan softly and rub her body.

However, under the attack of these two serpents Margaret's passions grew more intense and she was unable to resist such a strong stimulation. The serpent that had crept inside her was gently slipping into her flower.

"Ah! Aiwa.... Quickly save me..."

Her desires grew stronger with the stimulation. She was lying on the ground now and the serpent had completely dug into her, but it couldn't satisfy her blazing desire, only fanning the flames.

Hearing Margaret's call, Aiwa rushed in without hesitation. It was a good excuse. He had rushed in in order to save his stepmother. Even if they were caught by his father, there was nothing to be embarrassed about.

When he rushed in he saw Margaret writhing on the floor, "Margaret, how can I help you?"

Seeing Margaret's beautiful body been tortured with passion Aiwa's Dragon Blood immediately began to boil.

From inside the mist, Margaret saw a bulge sticking out. Women, especially under the control of lust, would be excited to see such things, even despite being his mother. She grabbed Aiwa: "My Aiwa, Save me..."

Margaret's begging expression along with her body full of lust were caused by Aiwa's magic.

Aiwa had already recalled his serpents, but Margaret's body was still driving her crazy causing her creamy body to writhe on the floor. Aiwa could see that she was already very wet, enough to make his thighs glossy.

"I... I really don't know how to help you Margaret!"

Aiwa was already squatting, getting a close up view of her wonderful and moving body. For the first time, Aiwa felt like he couldn't breathe.

"Aiwa, you are already a man. Just use... as a man you have to save you mother right..."

Margaret's hand reached out to Aiwa's waist ripping off his belt.

Although, Aiwa really wanted his stepmother, but out of reverence for his father, he was somewhat timid. Even with his pants so tight, and even with the desires of his heart and body, made especially stronger with the sight of his writhing stepmother, he was still clinging on to his status, daring not to offend his father.

"Margaret, let me think about it..."

Aiwa did not run away. He just held onto his pants but Margaret had already ripped half off revealing his thick rod.

Seeing a 17 year old child have such a proud little guy Margaret's heart couldn't help but rejoice. If compared to Kyle then Aiwa's meat gun would be a divine object. Whether comparing coarseness or length it was more than double of Kyle's!

"Aiwa, still hesitating! I'm already like this... How can you be so cruel to let your mother make a fool of herself? Aiwa..."

Margaret's lust burned away any sense of shame, she suddenly leaped and threw herself at him. Her shyness as a woman was completely overshadowed by her desires. She wanted to him to take his huge rod and piece her completely satisfying her hunger and quenching the burning desire torturing her.

And she didn't hesitate for a moment! If Master Kyle came back at this moment she wouldn't be able to ask him for help because it would be too sudden and Master Kyle would doubt her purity, so Aiwa was the only one she

could ask for help.

“Aiwa, come quickly, mother is begging you!”

Margaret violent ripped off Aiwa’s pants and pulled his body down.

[TOS](#)

Chapter 4: Affair

From the beginning his male root was curled upwards, but because of Margaret's urgent request he became somewhat nervous. Because of his nervousness, what was originally hard softened down. Today he had already been with Miss Ruth and Sally so he was no stranger to women, but when he tried to insert it in Margaret, his little guy wouldn't harden.

"Aiwa, what's wrong? Weren't you fine just a moment ago?"

Margaret was lying on the floor but he couldn't start. She was also very nervous because she didn't know when Master Kyle would come back.

"I... I also don't know what's wrong..."

Aiwa had been stimulated all day and at this moment his heart was too anxious. And the more he worried the more he couldn't get it up.

"Don't worry baby, you must be too nervous. Would you let mom help you?"

Margaret helped Aiwa stand up, and got on her knees in front of Aiwa. Her upper body slowly got closer to Aiwa. Getting closer and closer until finally, her small mouth touched Aiwa's soft rod which was now a cream colored large eggplant.

"Relax, it will definitely feel good!"

Margaret said firmly. She glanced upwards at Aiwa, her eyes filled with trust, confidence and also full of tenderness. Aiwa looking down at Margaret, felt that her beautiful face looked as charming as ever. He looked at her sharp nose, tender twin peaks, and her snow white skin. As Margaret lowered her head, Aiwa felt his shriveled rod get slowly swallowed by Margaret's warm little mouth.

Margaret's clever tongue patiently stroked the tip; at the same time, Aiwa felt a powerful sucking force on his male root.

Blood began to collect in his male root once again. The soft rod in her mouth began to harden a little bit getting longer and thicker.

Margaret's mouth could clearly feel the changes happening to the soft flesh

inside. She looked up with satisfaction at Aiwa. Her bright eyes were brimming with encouragement and appreciation – My effort wasn't in vain!

Receiving Margaret's encouragement, Aiwa's male root began to rapidly grow. After sucking for two minutes, perhaps because she was worried Master Kyle would come back and interrupt her affair, she decided to immediately proceed to the next step.

"We can start now, come, insert it in your mother here."

Margaret laid down again, spreading her legs apart. Below was a tender and pink hole. From inside flowed out milk. Aiwa knew that this was lubricant secreted when women were sexually aroused.

This time his male root didn't not fail to live up to Margaret's expectations. This time it didn't soften down but was bigger than last time.

"Aiwa, yours is so big! Your mother is quite fond of it."

Margaret directed his stiff rod with her slender fingers. Aiwa also didn't want to dawdle any longer. He wanted to seize the moment and give this woman a good time.

He was afraid his little guy would disappoint again so he daringly got on Margaret and squeezed her plump twin peaks.

But he still didn't plan on kissing Margaret's small mouth. Not that he didn't want to but because he didn't dare to. He only looked at her rosy and sexy lips, and tried to insert his hot rod between her long legs. Margaret's legs were spread far apart so if Aiwa wasn't so nervous he would've been able to easily insert it in. But his body was trembling uncontrollably so even after 2 or 3 times he couldn't find the location.

It was Margaret that had to grab his thick rod and insert it into her flooding hole.

"Yes, that's it, press your body down..."

Margaret's hands let go and let the scalding thick rod penetrate her.

As the thick rod slowly advanced she could clearly feel it inside her.

Ah! This is such a refreshing feeling! This rascal's meat gun really is powerful.

Every fold inside her could enjoy the hot stimulation.

“Oh... very good, just like that... keep going...”

Margaret raised her hips quite a bit allowing Aiwa to go deeper inside her.

The person under him was after all his stepmother and wasn't the bully Ruth. Therefore, Aiwa wasn't very rough. Although right now he wanted to pound her wildly, he was very gentle.

The more he pushed the deeper he went. Finally, he reached the stamen. When the thick rod hit her stamen Margaret's whole body could not help but shiver.

Because Aiwa wanted to see her hot body, he raised his body up.

“Oh... good...”

Her body trembled causing her two red tips to shake.

With one hand propping himself up, the other free hand caressed her silky breasts. Touching these voluptuous breast had always been a dream for him and today he could finally touch them! He squeezed her ample snow white breasts feeling their softness and elasticity causing his Dragon Blood to boil. His rod inside Margaret began to rapidly expand.

“Aiwa, it's as if you got even bigger...”

Margaret said surprised. She could clearly feel the changes inside.

“It was because of you!”

Aiwa could finally use mouth to charm women.

“Am I really okay?”

Margaret excitedly clung to Aiwa's waist. Although his little guy had already reached the end, she felt that there was still a length exposed. But she wanted Aiwa to go even deeper.

“Aiwa, can you go even deeper please?”

She looked at his face with an intoxicated look. There was the power of his handsome face!

Aiwa's stick pressed further in and Margaret closed her eyes making an uncontrolled groan: "Oh... it feels so good, keep going...!"

Her two long legs were wrapped around Aiwa's waist pointing up to better withstand Aiwa's thrusts.

As Aiwa's was enjoying himself, Margaret was also squeezing his meat gun tightly. Sometimes she would relax giving Aiwa more freedom to go in and out.

When Margaret would relax, Aiwa would take the opportunity to pound wildly. He didn't know any techniques only brute force. Soon Margaret's flower was unable to bear the pounding.

"Oh..... pull out..... You're going to pound this mother to death....."

Margaret couldn't help but scream.

Only then did Aiwa realize he was being too rough. He could only pull out halfway and go two-thirds as fast.

Sure enough an intoxicated smile slowly emerged on her face: "Oh... Really clever, just like this, take your time... Oh..."

Margaret's long legs trembled gently in the air.

But Aiwa's little guy was too long, with half out, it was too uncomfortable for him. After going in two-thirds the way, he counted to 10 and then continued to pound crazily again. With this rhythm. Margaret's flower gradually broadened and opened. When Aiwa moved forward, it would naturally push into her cervix. This made Margaret's refreshing feeling turn back into pain again. She shouted out uncontrollably and even clung tightly to Aiwa, afraid to let him move again: "Aiwa... no more, you're going to take this mother's life!"

She opened his mouth slightly looking very delicate and pitiful so Aiwa couldn't bear to continue. When he looked down, Margaret was wildly spraying milk like a fountain.

"Have you cum yet?"

Aiwa's two eyes looked at Margaret's already intoxicated appearance asking him. He knew that Margaret couldn't possibly defeat him. After all, he practiced qi techniques whereas Margaret only relied on her instincts.

“Oh... just gently pound me a hundred times... okay... I’ll... I’ll count for you...”

Margaret was already too scared to open her eyes, her whole body clenched up. If she relaxed a little bit, then she should wouldn’t be able to bear Aiwa’s pounding.

“Okay, then 100!”

Saying that, Aiwa got into position ready to give Margaret a hundred strokes.

“One... two... three...”

At the beginning, Margaret could still clearly count. But after getting around 10 she couldn’t keep count anymore. Aiwa’s gun kept on poking her flower bud and the nectar inside kept spraying out wildly. She felt her whole body twitching.

“Ah! No more... quickly...”

Margaret couldn’t persevere any longer and her fingernails dug into Aiwa.

But Aiwa insisted on continuing until she finished counting.

“Ten... eleven... twelve... Ah.... ten... eleven...”

Finally he aimed his gun at her cervix shooting his hot fluids come out. Aiwa’s rod was very powerful, as he came Margaret’s body shuddered for a period of time.

Aiwa was already dressed, but Margaret still laid there groaning. Aiwa didn’t know if it was because she felt guilty over the affair, or because her body had no strength to get up.

After getting dressed, like someone that had eaten another person’s food, Aiwa returned to his bedroom to read. But in reality he couldn’t read at all. It was possibly because his head was full of Margaret’s snow white and enticing body, her proud twin peaks, and her warm insides. All of which made this 17 year old boy fascinated.

Now he regretted not kissing his stepmother while having sexual intercourse. Her fragrant tongue must have had a creamy feeling.

While indulging in flights of fancy, he heard the crisp sound of the whip in the courtyard. Without looking, he knew that it must have been his father Kyle

coming back. And from the clear sound of the whip he could guess his father had brought back good news. Aiwa couldn't help but lean out the window and look around.

"Son! Her Majesty the Queen wants you!"

General Kyle excitedly jumped out of the carriage totally unlike a proper and dignified general and like a 3 year old child cheering and dancing.

Aiwa thought: "What does the Queen want with me? What impossible thing can I do? Could it be to make her happy like Margaret?" When Kyle ran up to the second floor, Margaret was still in the bathroom while Aiwa respectfully welcomed his father.

"Father, what's the good news?"

Aiwa didn't properly express excitement, his calmness was very unlike that of a 17 year old boy's. But Kyle didn't mind, his main concern was whether or not his son's Dragon Blood identification result could get Her Majesty's recognition. He wanted his son as he reached adulthood, to give the queen a good and lasting impression. This was something he could and should do as a father.

"As Miss Ruth recommended, Her Majesty agreed to let you join her guard as an ordinary soldier. What do you think?"

Kyle was very excited. In front of the Queen he had repressed his excitement and now he could safely let it out. Therefore, he did not notice the changes in his son's body and looks.

At this time, Margaret came out of the bathroom with a towel on, smiling and saying: "This indeed is good news. It's an honor for the Hotlzer clan. Kyle. You still haven't noticed. Our son has become a lot more handsome than before!"

Margaret's appearance didn't attract Kyle's attention but her words finally made him turn to look at his son's face.

"Great! He's handsome enough, however, I never thought he looked bad before. It seems like he was just as handsome before. Am I right son?"

Kyle saw that his son really did become more robust than before, his shoulders seemed wider, and the edges of his face more defined. Compared to when he

was younger he seemed to attract more women. “I not only hope that my son will conquer his enemies, but also conquer all the women of Hass!”

Saying that, Master Kyle gave Aiwa’s wide shoulders a heavy slap. Unprepared for his father’s palm, Aiwa’s body became crooked. “Remember, tomorrow you have to report to the Queen. You must be punctual, do not give her Majesty the Queen a bad impression!”

Margaret stood behind Kyle’s side her affectionate gaze sprinkling over Aiwa’s body. Looking at this shy youth, she couldn’t believe just a moment ago she was having sexual intercourse with him.

“Well, you should go to sleep. Keep your mind vigilant. Tomorrow you’re going to meet with the Queen. We must show Her Majesty that the men of the Holtzer clan are not cowards!”

Saying that, General Kyle once again roughly patted his son’s shoulders. Then he walked towards his bedroom. His hands were very powerful, and he always liked to talk with his fists. At this point, Aiwa got really scared not knowing what Margaret was going to do.

“Kyle, tomorrow our son will go to the palace. He may not understand some of the rules, so for tonight, let me coach my son. After all I’ve stayed by the Queen’s side before.”

Margaret suddenly sent such a request to Kyle as he was at the bedroom door.

“That’s good. You’re right, you should teach him. You can’t let the Queen joke that the men of the Holtzer clan don’t understand the rules of the palace. That wouldn’t be fair right? I have to rest for now though, I’m worn out.”

It wasn’t because he was trembling out of anger when dealing with Steven and Ruth, but because he was trembling out of fear in front of the Queen. Now he urgently need some sleep. Since Margaret was willing to tutor his son, he could rest at ease.

After getting Kyle’s approval Margaret gave Aiwa an ambiguous smile and then pushed him into his bedroom.

“You don’t like me being your tutor? I know Nancy wasn’t a bad teacher but I’m also your mother. Correct?”

Margaret closed the door behind her, her eyes brightening. Her towel barely covered her captivating red tips. More than half of her fascinating mounds were exposed. And her long jade legs were only covered up to the buttocks by the towel leaving little to the imagination. Aiwa shot her an eager glance. Although he had fought her once, it was very hard to sample this woman's charm only one time. Her eyes were blue like the sea and her long eyelashes made her a little more beautiful.

"I..."

Aiwa's lips started trembling. Now that his father was home he didn't want to tease this beautiful woman that was tempting him to commit a crime. But the flame of his innermost desires was burning his body. His male root below couldn't help but once again rise making his pants pitch a large tent.

"If I remembered correctly, when we were in the bathroom you seemed to have left out an important part. Right?"

Margaret's fragrant tongue emerged from her mouth gently liking her rosy lips. And her dark blue eyes fixated invitingly on Aiwa's shy and eager expression. "Don't be afraid. I am your mother, and you are my son. Your father isn't going anywhere. Didn't you see, he's really tired. I think that he will fall asleep as soon as he hits the bed. I understand your father's character the best. Once he falls asleep, even thunder won't wake him up"

Margaret's eyes began to fill with lust, and her voice was very arousing. She slowly walked towards Aiwa who was already short of breath.

A mature woman likes to see a man dazed because of their appearance even if it's just a teenager. Her burning body reached Aiwa and her soft hands grabbed Aiwa's waist.

"Your treasure is really fierce. It almost made this mother faint!"

Margaret pressed her face against Aiwa's chest one hand sliding down his chest onto his pants and grabbing his thick rod. She slowly looked up, her beautiful eyes looking at Aiwa. "Do you want to go again?"

Her hand moved from the pitched tent to his waist, and her fingers gently loosening his buckles. Her hand calmly reached inside, directly grabbing his

scorching hot root.

“We’re... still learning the court rules right...?”

Aiwa’s lips were shaking.

“But you still haven’t kissed me.”

Her face looked upwards with her hands in his pants gently stroking. She looked at him eagerly.

With such sexy lips, what kind of man wouldn’t kiss you! But Aiwa’s head still didn’t bend down. He was already breathing heavily, with the fragrance from Margaret’s rising chest strongly stimulating him.

“Where those two serpents released by you? You know qi techniques?”

Margaret continued to look fascinated at him.

Aiwa didn’t deny it.

Margaret smiled: “In the future if you want me, just release your serpents and I will come at any time. Just keep your door open...”

She slowly stood on a tiptoe sending her red lips up.

Aiwa was still trembling causing his lips to be firmly shut. When the two lips touched, Margaret first sneaked her fragrant tongue into Aiwa’s mouth and feverishly sucked and teased him: Aiwa facing the attack, began to gasp, kissing her red fragrant tongue. One hand grabbed her tender twin peaks rubbing hard. And Margaret discreetly let the towel covering her glossy skin slip down...

Aiwa kissed Margaret’s fragrant tongue, and kissed her sensitive ears. And Margaret also frantically loosened his pants, and stripped off his shirt making him naked too.

As if he had experience, Aiwa wasn’t in a hurry. Instead he bent his body, and buried his face into her.

“Oh... Oh...!”

Margaret kept moaning, the feeling of her son sucking her off made her intoxicated. While reveling in the sensation she pulled Aiwa towards her. She began to leak once again causing clear liquid flowing down her thighs...

“Aiwa... quickly. Mom can’t stand it anymore. Ah...”

Margaret gently stroked Aiwa’s solid flesh her lust rising.

“No rush, I still haven’t gotten a good look at you!”

Aiwa raised his head looking at her intoxicated face. Her long eyelashes were hiding her deep blue eyes. But even without seeing, Aiwa believed her eyes were rippling with desire.

He carried her onto his bed and separated her two legs, his eyes shooting a glance into the seam between her legs. Her small round opening was soaked with milk flowing out. She was very obedient laying there and letting him examine it. He inserted a finger and her small mouth immediately tightened on his finger sucking it in.

Aiwa couldn’t help but wonder. How can such a narrow opening be big enough to fit his thick rod? He wanted to witness how this thick rod entered the hole. With one hand Aiwa directed his rod into Margaret’s oozing hole, and strangely, with just a gentle poke her pink little mouth completely swallowed his rod!

As he continued to push in, her small mouth kept on squeezing his thick rod making him unable to go deeper. Aiwa only thrust a few times before pulling out, as he remembered what happened at the hospital. Ruth had previously brought her hole to Aiwa’s mouth for him to lick. He thought: “Women might possibly like to be licked.” So he squatted his body, with Margaret’s jade legs on his shoulders and stuck his tongue out to lick Margaret. With just licking, Margaret’s body couldn’t help but tighten while simultaneously groaning: “Ah...”

Aiwa’s was very interested in her pink slit. He curved the tip of his tongue which was deep inside lightly and Margaret’s tender body began to tremble violently again: “Oh...”

While simultaneously cumming.

Seeing Margaret’s intense reaction Aiwa became even more interested. He intensified his licking where while licking he also sucked making Margaret’s tender body tremble.

“Aiwa, you’re such a good son, quickly now!”

Margaret finally looked up at him.

Aiwa felt that the time had come, he straightened his body and brought his thick rod to her entrance again.

Puzi!

His gun suddenly poked inside reaching Margaret's stamen.

"Ah..."

With a delicate cry she came again. Aiwa reached out energetically kneading her twin peaks while calmly pounding her: Margaret followed along with her fluids flowing down her body onto the bed sheets creating a puddle underneath her.

In order to control her moaning to not wake up Kyle, Margaret had no choice but to bite the bed sheets, that way her moans and noises wouldn't spread outside. Aiwa straightened his body abandoning her snowy white breasts. His hands held her jade legs and in the position of an old man with a walker he began pounding her. This was one of the positions which women found very enjoyable. Margaret's smooth stomach suddenly bent upwards because of Aiwa's deep thrusts. Her muscles constantly bulged and her whole body was covered in sweat.

In order to increase his energy to the next rank, at the end Aiwa didn't forget to absorb Margaret's yin essence from her body. As he thrust into her he also used his dou qi to suck clean all the energy in her body.

And when Margaret trembled as he entered her, Aiwa would bring her energy to his own dou qi.

Although Margaret's various domain ranks were inferior to Ruth's, she wasn't an ordinary person. Her body's energy was also just as important to Aiwa. It wasn't accumulating bit by bit, but at an incredible rate. Especially after being injected with the Dragon Blood serum his body's abnormal reaction required him to unceasingly absorb energy in order to enhance his own energy. Otherwise his blood will change his Dragon Blood genes. This was precisely the reason why Ruth added "special" to his identification.

Therefore, when Ruth first had sex with him on the metal bed it was to see if

this young youth had the luck to bear her energy. She intentionally passed it to him but she couldn't say so because she couldn't guarantee what would happen to him in the end. And she didn't want to bear the responsibility to the Holtzer clan.

Aiwa pulled out his rod from Margaret's body and sat on the bed. He faced his palms towards the other and let his dou qi gather into his palms into a flaming ball the size of a sphere sized apple. As the flaming ball moved around between his palms for a few seconds it became a raging flame.

The flaming ball's stability indicated a person's progress. Every time you advance a rank the original balance would be broken. But if it was only like this then Aiwa wouldn't be able to reach the next rank. So, he continued to run his dou qi for 2-3 more minutes waiting for the flaming ball to stabilize before retracting it.

"Aiwa, you can actually practice dou qi?"

Margaret seeing everything couldn't help but be excited. After all, Aiwa was just a 17 year old child. In the past, Margaret didn't care much about him: But now was different, he could not only give her this much pleasure, but also he could become a powerful god. If Aiwa couldn't get stronger in the future, once Kyle became old she would have a pitiful future.

"I've only started learning it."

Aiwa was modest in this regard. Others could use their dou qi to kill from meters away but he could only give a little demonstration between his palms.

"In the future you will slowly improve, come. We should still learn the palace etiquette."

Margaret got off his bed and wrapped the towel around her enticing body and then proceeded to teach him the palace etiquette.

"Aiwa, accompanying one's sovereign can be like accompanying a tiger!" Although the Holtzer clan has considerable reputation, there is no guarantee no one is watching us. Once a person takes advantage of us during a moment of weakness, it will be a catastrophe. You must be careful!"

After teaching him etiquette, Margaret still give him a word of warning

because she knew his character best. He liked women and the Queen was a beautiful woman!

[TOS](#)

Chapter 5: Winning a Small Lolita

Volume 1 Chapter 5

Winning a Small Lolita

Setting off on a carriage from Montelago Head's Official Residence, a perfectly straight avenue ran towards the East; this path directly leads to the Imperial Palace. With trees on both sides covering up the entire avenue under shade, a cool and refreshing feel could be experienced here even during the summer. However it was already late autumn, the foliage on top of these trees were withered, leaving only bare branches, shivering within the chilly wind.

Right now Aiwa wasn't bothered about the gelidity; he was imagining the Queen's figure from Margaret's description

In Aiwa's heart, she was a beautiful woman whose beauty was unrivalled in Hass Empire.

At a distance of 1 li from the Imperial Palace, Aiwa could feel its imposing manner and dignity. During his childhood, Aiwa frequently played here together with his comrades. They often wandered on the high palace walls, while trying to imagine the Queen's appearance. In their imagination, the Queen was the emblem of power, but it wasn't due to her beauty, they didn't hold Queen Sofia as a beautiful woman in their imagination but rather as that of a demonic queen.

TLN: 1 li = 0.5km

Until the age of 15, Aiwa had never visited the imperial palace and then he was sent to the East Empire, several hundred li outside of Montelago City to study by his father.

Aiwa's visit to the East Empire was the sole decision of General Kyle; it wasn't arranged by the Empire. The reason why he was sent to East Empire was because

since 59 years hadn't been any war between Hass Empire and East Empire, many merchant's coming in to Hass Empire from there all spoke of the East Empire as a mysterious place, resulting in stirring up the heart of even the obstinate Kyle, making him send his son abroad to study as well as gain knowledge and experience. If he didn't cultivate the future prospects of his son a bit early, then it would be difficult for their Holtzer Clan to retain their position in the Empire.

During this past year, Groote had already attained the prime minister's position by using his family's power and his few son's all held important positions within the army, making it a zenith time for the Herman Clan. But Kyle had only his son Aiwa, who was still young and unable to contend against the Herman Clan, this made Kyle anxious. Otherwise, he was unlikely to send his recently arrived son to meet the Queen. If his son was able to get the Queen's recognition and obtain a post, it would raise the Holtzer Clan status; then even Groote wouldn't dare to despise their Holtzer Clan.

The Queen had already spoken, to let Aiwa come and see her by himself. Although Kyle was not reassured about his son, he also didn't have any other choice, he consoled himself by believing in the experience his son gained in the outside world these past 2 years.

The carriage stopped outside the door of the imperial palace, Aiwa came down from the carriage wearing the Holtzer Clan's insignia on his chest.

At this time, a luxurious carriage came over galloping from another avenue, when Aiwa was preparing to enter the imperial palace that carriage quickly stopped right in front of him.

Arousing Aiwa's attention were the pair of male and female sitting together on the carriage, the man was approximately over 20 years, looking confident and elegant, wearing a Junior Officer's uniform; as for the woman she was wearing a skirt adornment reaching her knees, appearing delicate and pretty, age approximately 15, 16 years, with a highly sticking out nose bridge, blue eyes, long-long eyelashes, and elegant brown hair covered up under a female hat at the crown of her head.

This pair slowly came down from the carriage. Aiwa had a déjà vu feeling, after seeing the Herman Clan insignia on their chests; he remembered that they were

the son and daughter of the current Prime Minister, Groote.

After getting off, that girl pulled the man's arm towards Aiwa. In her memory, such a handsome boy never existed in the Holtzer Clan.

[If I haven't guessed wrong, you must be Young Master Aiwa? Surely, you aren't planning to offer a grand plan to the Queen at the audience with her.]

Federer said.

[I dare not, myself is receiving Queens's summon and arrived here]

TLN: 'Myself' here is used as a humble way of speaking.

Aiwa had already heard about Herman Clan's Young Master Federer, a guy whose mouth wouldn't spare a person, therefore he didn't feel like quarreling with this kind of man, and modestly bowed his body.

Relying on their clan insignia's, these three passed through the imperial palace sentry, entering the heavily guarded imperial palace. Within Hass Empire, there has never happened an incident of impersonation of these two great clan members; therefore, the imperial palace guards simply let the two great clan persons be exempt from checking. These insignia were like an all-pass within Hass Empire.

This party of three persons waited in front of the door of the Queen's office. Soon, someone came out to inform these two Young Master's and Young Lady Dolly to come in for the audience with the Queen.

They entered the Queen's Office side by side. Rather than to say this was an office, it would be right to say that it was a luxurious hall. The Queen was sitting at the end of a spacious table, accompanied by a girl on both sides. Although they didn't wear uniforms, but as soon as Aiwa entered the inside the hall, he faintly felt the cold air emerging from the two girls. Regarding anyone entering inside the Queen's office, these two higher than 10th rank skilled beautiful woman's ritual was to closely probe them.

Aiwa, who possessed a mere 3rd rank strength, was almost knocked down along with that hidden force. Although his body didn't move, but he knew, those beautiful women standing at the Queen's side had sensed Aiwa's weakness, and couldn't help but cover their mouths and laugh.

After they saluted the Queen together and obtained permission to sit on the high seats, Aiwa sat on one side while brother-sister pair; Federer and Dolly sat on the other side.

After the Queen sized up Aiwa once, a trace of happiness flashed through those deep pupils, but she quickly changed her sight towards Federer's face.

[Federer, do you have any important matter for me today?]

This was the Queen being persistent with her interrogation, but this really wasn't baseless. In fact, each and every person who came to the imperial palace seeking to see her all had important matters to speak of, if not, who would dare to come and chat with the Queen?

[Your Majesty, recently the southern part Tanzya tribes have frequently disturbed my empire's common population, I wish to request Your Majesty to give me another opportunity, to lead my soldiers and kill all the Tanzyanians!]

Federer stood up and said ambitiously.

[Those Tanzya women aren't vegetarian's, if you desire to establish achievements, then I feel it would be better to send you to the West and fight there, perhaps their terrain would suit your tactics better.]

The Queen said.

Hearing the Queen say that Tanzya Women are difficult to deal with, Federer's heart quickly felt unwell. Because, just a few days ago he had suffered a defeat by a Tanzya woman, so he was still unable to swallow this anger till now. He didn't expect that the courage which he had crawled up to gain the Queen's admiration would instead result in a reversal. Still, the Queen didn't hold any confidence in the fight between Federer's soldiers and the Tanzya tribe, because Federer had already suffered two continuous defeats at their hands. Those Tanzya tribes were also fighting over some Hass Empire border area, and didn't endanger Hass Kingdom's foundation. In the Queen's eyes, Tanzya's disturbance resembled a little bullying that's all, not worthy of making such a fuss.

The Queen's gaze went towards Aiwa: [I heard from your father that you went to East Empire to study for two years, surely you must have learned a lot?]

[Answering Your Majesty, I fear my father has exaggerated much. I only went

out to play for 2 years that's all.]

The two maids at the Queen's side were already shocked by Aiwa's reply, where did he dare to say he learned what thing and returned! Hearing the Queen's questioning, Aiwa's forehead was already dripping with sweat. However the Queen was a bit happy looking at Aiwa's distressed appearance, especially after seeing he was this young, but still knew how to show modesty. This was a really rare quality.

[Actually summoning you back from the East Empire was my wish, Hass Empire needs more personnel right now! How? What's your opinion on becoming my chamberlain?]

After listening to the Queen's gentle voice, Aiwa felt as if he was bathing in a spring wind. When he arrived inside the hall, he had already become restless after looking at her otherworldly beautiful face, merely being hindered by the Queen's status; Aiwa didn't dare to peek. Using this opportunity, Aiwa quite naturally lifted his head up glancing towards the Queen; he shockingly felt a gentle and soft emotion inside her deep gaze

[Aiwa wishes to serve Your Majesty!]

Aiwa immediately replied. Looking at the Queen's eyes, made Aiwa feel like serving her, he genuinely thought of following her everywhere, looking at her beautiful face, smelling the enchanting fragrance on her body.

Federer, who was waiting for the Queen to grant him an army, quickly thought of using this opportunity to let Aiwa make a fool of himself, and properly recover his face, so he pretended to lightly shrug off his shoulders, shooting a glance towards Aiwa, he said with a smile: [Your Majesty, letting Young Master Aiwa return from the East Empire was a really pitiable matter.]

The Queen wrinkled her brows, asked: [How so?]

No one ever dared to speak of the Queen's faults in front of her; however it seems that Federer's courage was unexpectedly so large. Looking at the change in the Queen's expression, Dolly reached out her hand to pull her older brother's sleeve, to prevent him from speaking, however was Federer ready to listen? This was an opportunity to show his cleverness and quick-wittedness, he couldn't miss it!

So, Federer once again stood up and asserted: [Relying on Young Master Aiwa's appearance, Your Majesty ought to let Young Master Aiwa stay at East Empire and be a spy? In case any issue arises between us and East Empire, perhaps a person like Young Master Aiwa could come in handy!]

After speaking, Federer very proudly returned to sit in his original position, giving a look towards Dolly, hoping to receive a look of praise from her face.

Dolly couldn't bear to see Federer harm other's moral integrity in this way, her originally set out hand to pull Federer's sleeve quickly returned with disgust: [When will proper points come out from older brother's mouth, since you do not know him, what are you doing by taunting him?]

Dolly shot a glance towards Federer, keeping a distance from him.

[Hehe, it's nothing. Looking at your army clothes, Young Master Federer is already a Junior Officer, frequently leading troops to battle, I heard that Groote had a son who was very good at battling, an undefeated general; I think that ought to be precisely your distinguished self right? Hass Empire really has an outstanding military service, that it can raise Young Master Federer this kind of talented person using battles.]

Although Aiwa was not familiar with Federer but he already heard his infamous name from his father.

Every time Federer set out for a battle, he was utterly defeated, if it were not for his father's asylum, he would have already been demoted by the Queen. Today, seeing his pitiable leather bag like appearance, and listening to him sneer at himself, Aiwa couldn't help but speak sarcastically in front of the Queen. Running into this kind of person, if you don't defeat him, he would continue to bully you! This was Aiwa's nature, if you don't offend me, I won't offend you, if someone felt like offending me, then I will fiercely offend him!

Although listening to a person belittle her older brother made her heart unhappy, but it seemed to Dolly that, this deficit was purely due to Federer's own fault, her heart unexpectedly held support for Aiwa. Although Aiwa's age wasn't very high, she could still feel a mature feel from him. She couldn't help but stealthily look towards Aiwa, his handsome appearance when showed off an empire's serviceman's demeanour instead of counterattacking her older brother,

gave rise to a tint of respect and admiration in her gaze.

The Queen thought of speaking a few sentences in behalf of Aiwa, making Federer embarrassed, however, she didn't expect Aiwa would settle it himself. A hidden smile floated across the Queen's face. Speaking of the truth, during the lunch with General Kyle yesterday, the Queen was only giving the old general face, not at all thinking to put up much thought about a 17 year old child, but after seeing him now, not only was his figure much different from her imagination of a thin and weak child, but rather excelling in wisdom. In the future, he would surely be capable of becoming the empire's personnel, however, she still didn't know what Aiwa learned at the East Empire, but seeing him being modest blindly, she felt this wasn't the right time to ask this.

If it wasn't for giving face to Prime Minister Groote, the Queen would have given this useless and conceited guy a good scolding and send him off. But regarding that beautiful young lady at Federer's side, the Queen liked her very much, she wasn't like the other Herman Clan members who always rejoiced in their grandiose deeds to express themselves, but rather had a good and honest heart, it would also appear that she was more intelligent than her older brother Federer.

[Federer, if you don't have any other matter, then you can go. I still have a matter to discuss with your younger sister and Aiwa.]

The Queen impolitely ordered him leave, this move, would make it difficult for Federer to complain to his father, because the Queen had a good opinion regarding Groote's daughter, if Federer spoke of this matter to his father, it would only lead to him getting scolded by Groote – Why only your younger sister was liked by the Queen and invited?

[Come, you two come over]

Queen Sofia waved her hand towards Aiwa and Dolly. Aiwa didn't dare to believe the Queen let him approach near her, he was overwhelmed, standing up he came over looking at the two maids at the Queen's side. He guessed that these two beautiful women weren't simply the Queen's maids; they were surely holding the government office's most important position – the Queen's personal guard.

After Aiwa heard the Queen call him, it didn't matter whether he was or wasn't afraid of those two guards, he went past them, compared to him, Dolly expertly and familiarly followed the Queen as if she frequently came to the palace, unlike him who revered the Queen.

The Queen sized them up once, wearing a smile: While Aiwa and Dolly were still unclear about the Queen's intention they heard the Queen's question:

[Are you two engaged to anyone?]

The Queen suddenly asked.

This question was very sudden, Aiwa and Dolly looked at each other, not knowing saying what would be good. However in order to make it clear that she still didn't have her husband's family, Dolly hurriedly said to the Queen: [Dolly isn't engaged!]

Since Aiwa was unaware of the Queen's intention, he didn't know what reply would be good. If he directly said he didn't like Dolly, then that would be accepting the plan arranged by the Queen. Dolly was pretty good, but he disliked her conceited older brother, or to say he wasn't fond of their Herman Clan. He learned from his father that, although Kyle and Groote similarly served Hass Empire, due to Queen Sofia's influence, these two clans have never gotten along, fighting openly and scheming covertly for many years; they never had friendly relations between them.

In order to avoid matrimony with the Herman Clan, Aiwa intended to speak he was engaged, but this would lead to the charge of cheating the Queen. He couldn't do that.

It can be assumed that, it was better for him to not reply.

After looking at Aiwa's distressed appearance, the Queen liked him even more.

[If I act as your matchmaker, are you willing to be husband and wife?]

The Queen wasn't prompted by an impulse today, she had already thought of a good plan, these two persons involved had came together today, so she thought to make it clear for these Clan's younger generation, first trapping these two insensible children.

Aiwa looked towards Dolly again, first to look at her behaviour and appearance which was indeed quite upright, fitting to his tastes, after looking at Dolly's submissive expression. He determined that this 15, 16 year old girl, probably didn't have any scheme she was hiding from Your Majesty Queen.

[Since you don't have any objection, then this matter is settled. I shall notify this to your family heads later, choosing a day to complete this happy occasion. Aiwa, you don't need to come for work today, you can return to General Kyle and consult with him regarding this matter, but I will be waiting to drink at your wedding feast.]

Saying this, the Queen retired herself. Without any better option, Aiwa and Dolly came out.

Coming out of the imperial palace, Dolly didn't seem to have any plans, [What's to be done?]

She didn't have any opinion and asked Aiwa.

[What what's to be done?]

Aiwa pretended to be silly.

[The elders still don't know this matter, but Her Majesty Queen has already decided this, if the elders don't agree, then what's to be done?]

Dolly naturally knew of the discord between their two clans. It seemed to her that her father wouldn't agree with her marrying Aiwa, to become his wife.

[Feel relieved, whether they like or not, with the Queen acting as the matchmaker, who are they to dare disobey her decree? Hehe, what's not known is whether this path is or isn't bringing grievance to you?]

Aiwa spoke vehemently till now, but now stealthily set about to feel the situation.

[I ... I will naturally listen to Her Majesty, we are after all her people, how can we disobey her decree?]

Dolly was also fond of Aiwa in her heart; however she was merely hindered by a young lady's shyness and embarrassment, preventing her expressions to come out. By using the Queen's decree, she raised her thoughts regarding this matter.

[I'm also the same, we are her people, and will naturally listen to her. Hah, I don't know when I'll be able to hold this beauty and return.]

Saying this, Aiwa glanced towards Dolly. After hearing Aiwa's words, Dolly's face immediately became red due to shyness.

[Since we have already decided to listen and obey Her Majesty Queen's command, shouldn't we also take the elders thoughts into consideration?]

Dolly said shyly.

[Anyway, I certainly will come to your Herman Clan later!]

Aiwa said proudly. Then he suddenly remembered that Dolly came in a passenger carriage with Federer, and Federer after getting reprimanded by the Queen, didn't wait and happily returned by himself, completely forgetting about Dolly.[Dolly, since your clan carriage has already returned, let me deliver you back all right?]

Dolly was one affluent family's humble daughter, how could she walk so far on foot? Apparently Federer had completely lost his mind with anger; casting his sister aside, giving a chance to Aiwa.

[Okay.]

Dolly lifted her skirt lightly and moved forward, Aiwa went forward to hold her small hand and pulled her on top of his carriage.

Following her older brother for the first time, and apart from her father, Dolly had never gotten on a carriage along with a male before, this made little Dolly feel uneasy, she didn't dare to relax her body, acting somewhat stiff. Aiwa reached out his hand towards her bee waist, and gently said:[Don't be so nervous, I am not an outsider, I am your future husband!]

After looking at Dolly's adorable small crimson face, Aiwa's hand didn't feel like leaving, his tepid hand not only warmed Dolly, but also caused one kind of youthful restlessness to rise in her. She gently looked towards Aiwa, and stiffly smiled, she liked this boy, however she wasn't familiar with him, therefore her heart inevitably held some misgivings.

Aiwa silently watched Dolly's pretty face, looking at her fiercely moving up and

down swelling chest; resembling great waves. A girly fragrance came from her body, almost making Aiwa's beastly desire emerge again.

But they were after all on top of a carriage, he could only hug that slim body of Dolly tightly, exerting all his strength to sniff her body's aroma which could easily causing a man to get infatuated.

Dolly didn't struggle, after Aiwa's powerful arm finished hugging her, she even felt that hand on her waist reach under her breasts, her heart resembled a frightened deer right now, her faint breathing voice was vividly heard by Aiwa.

Right now she couldn't disobey Aiwa, like how she couldn't disobey the Queen's decree, if only it wasn't too excessive, she would accept anything he did! Who let herself be promised to Aiwa by the Queen!

At this time, two hunting dogs suddenly appeared on top of the wide avenue, the coachman immediately pulled the carriage's reins causing the carriage to stop. At this moment, Aiwa and Dolly who were immersed inside their happiness didn't notice this, due to the huge inertia, their two bodies rapidly fell forward, Aiwa acting on his instinct to protect this girl, quickly settled himself, one hand grasping Dolly's bosom, holding her chest in his hands, groping those petite breasts with his palms.

Although Dolly was frightened momentarily; she was safe and sound, merely she was a bit reluctant to let Aiwa's hand relinquish from groping her breasts.

[I'm sorry, Young Master, just now I didn't take notice of those two wretched hunting dogs!]

The Coachman immediately apologized towards Aiwa.

[Don't mind it, keep going.]

The reason why Aiwa didn't blame his coachman was because he was very grateful for this very small mishap in his heart, using this excuse; he felt Dolly's petite and adorable breasts.

Although separated by dressed clothes, Dolly's those soft and ample flexible breast's made him fascinated, just now it was Dolly who was faintly breathing, and now it was Aiwa's turn to release a coarse gasp.

[Thank you, Aiwa.]

Dolly gratefully looked towards Aiwa, if he hadn't stepped in time to stop her falling body, she would have definitely been marred by a scar, a girl's appearance was precisely her asset, an asset a man would forever be fond of. She didn't have the intention of staying at a minister's house after marrying, being lonely and receiving her husband's cold shoulder. She wanted her man to like her for a lifetime, treasure her. Right now she didn't dislike Aiwa's big hand on her chest, rather she thought of it as one kind of happiness, so she leaned her body on top of Aiwa's body, sticking her face towards Aiwa's chest. The Coachman could only face towards the front of the carriage, and wouldn't turn around to look at the master; therefore she dared to act boldly like this.

However the Prime Minister's house quickly arrived, this made Aiwa feel a little dejected.

Hearing the rumbling sound of the carriage, Federer appeared from inside. He thought the Queen had sent someone to return his sister. Before when he was sulking, he forgot that his younger sister was still inside the palace, so he prepared to receive her from the carriage.

After seeing his younger sister return with Kyle's son, that abominable Aiwa and not the Queen's personnel, also looking at Aiwa holding his younger sister Dolly, Federer eyeball's almost popped out!

[Let her go!]

Federer bellowed.

Aiwa laughed, letting go of Dolly. After getting off first, he held Dolly bringing her down. Dolly simply hated Federer for forgetting about her and returning home alone, so she didn't even glance at Federer. But just now at the house door, the reason she lied in Aiwa's embrace wasn't to deliberately anger Federer, rather it was because she was unwilling to depart Aiwa's hug. He was a good guy; a person worthy of receiving her entire lifetime's adoration.

After saying thanks, Dolly turned around thinking of returning.

[Dolly, you still haven't kissed me.]

Aiwa stood there and said confidently.

After hearing Aiwa's words, Dolly turned around, walked until in front of Aiwa, she stood on tiptoe and held her small mouth up.

This scene let Federer become foolish, making his jaw drop down, a thousand jin young lady, was going to kiss a feuding clan's son? How could this be possible!

TLN: thousand jin: coming from a riches and fame home

Aiwa's hand held Dolly's bee waist inside his arm, while his other hand raised her small face, then he kissed her sexy and frail fragrant lips. The reason why he was so calm was, because he judged, even a presidential palace's Young Master won't be able to advance and separate them, as he didn't have any worry about his status.

TLN: Raw says he was worried about his identity but according to the flow it should be he wasn't worried so the last line was modified.

When Aiwa was kissing Dolly's lips, Dolly was still a bit nervous and felt awkward, her small tongue didn't agree to come out from her pearly white teeth. After Aiwa explored his tongue forward provoking her lips twice, Dolly suddenly extended her small lilac tongue and intertwined it with Aiwa's tongue, at the same time she held Aiwa's waist with her two hands..

Aiwa didn't give her a tempest like kiss, but rather gave her a lingering and delicate kiss, a little sample which prevented Dolly's nimble small tongue from returning.

Federer couldn't bear to look anymore, letting a feuding clan's son kiss his younger sister in front of him; this was extraordinary shame and humiliation for him! But he could only stand there and turn his face around.

[See you later, Dolly!]

[See you later, Aiwa!]

Aiwa turned around, jumping on top of his carriage.

At this time, Federer heard the two people's voice and turned back, looking at Aiwa jumping on top of the carriage, he abused roundly: [You bastard! I will tear you!]

[Goodbye, Federer, I will come to visit you another day!]

Aiwa laughed for a long time, he quickly made his way towards the path leading to the imperial palace. He could only return home through this path. A direct avenue between these two clans didn't exist; a person could only walk through a rugged lane.

Federer thought of overtaking this stinky youngster who took small advantages of his younger sister and hit him once, but what made his heart ache was, that Dolly held his arm, so he could only stand there and stamp with fury.

From Dolly's fond attachment to his body and that kiss, Aiwa could make out that she liked him very much.

It was indeed a fascinating affair; two individual feuding clan children fall in love with each other. He didn't know whether or not his father would fight against this marriage after finding out about it, as his father didn't have any good opinion regarding the Herman Clan.

Chapter 6: Queen's Plot

Book 1 Chapter 6: Queen's Plot

[Your Majesty, since you know Prime Minister Groote and General Kyle's families have never gotten along, why are you playing as a matchmaker for the marriage between these two families children?]

The maid Jancy didn't understand and asked. This rare attack and defense domain 10th rank eighteen year old girl, naturally couldn't understand the thoughts of the Queen struggling within politics for more than 10 years.

[Since they are feuding families, I acted as a matchmaker for their marriage. They since swore loyalty and devotion to me, shouldn't they naturally listen to me? Although they aren't delighted in their heart, at least they won't disobey my will on the surface. My power isn't something which is preserved by relying on those two, although they protect my life anytime and anywhere, I cannot guarantee whether my power would still be in my hands.]

[These two chancellors are already imperial elders, I have to be wary of their influence, and prevent them from being like neighbours who can't agree to lose out to a third party, resulting in using up my Hass Empire's power. There's no need to fear about those few Tanzya tribes to the South, however that Naluss Empire to the West is targeting us. Don't worry, their two families won't decline due to a single marriage, what I want is for them to disagree with each other, forever staying within a subtle state, this is my desired outcome.]

The Queen proudly turned her rattan chair, finally stopping in front of Jancy.

[Your Majesty really is an enlightened sage. If this happens, these two families won't decline due to internal friction and also won't ally; this can reduce both inside worry and foreign aggression!]

Jancy finally understood the essence behind this marriage proposed by the Queen, [However a pretty girl like Dolly, isn't suffering a deficit by being

entrusted to that youngster Aiwa, that 17 year old child, does he know how to love a woman dearly?]

Jancy spoke freely.

[This— — whether he knows or not, I'm also unclear, otherwise, why don't you try to find an opportunity to test?]

In front of these two maids Queen Sofia didn't have any taboo things since a long time, right now a lascivious smile appeared on her face.

[Your Majesty — —]

Immediately a shade of shy red appeared across Jancy's face. As she was also a girl going through puberty; she gave thought to stand in for Dolly, these two maids wait at the Queen's side every day, they also yearned of being a thousand jin young lady; enjoying that kind of free and easy life inside the Prime Minister House, it's a pity they weren't born at Prime Minister's family. Since they were born at a dragon blood family, relying on their intelligence and practicing their skills using their innate talent, they were entitled to wait upon the Queen. Even this could already be considered to be fortune, if they didn't have dragon blood vessels, this kind of fortune was impossible for them to fish up, leaving them no choice but to become a man's slave

TLN: thousand jin: coming from a money and fame background

The gaze the Queen used to look upon Aiwa and the two maids was absolutely different. It seemed to the two maids that Aiwa was only a common youngster, merely somewhat intelligent than that idiotic Young Master Federer that's all, according to their perception, Aiwa strength didn't exceed 5th rank in the defense or attack aspect, at Hass empire where experts roamed like the clouds, if this was considered to be talent, then inside the whole Hass empire there wouldn't be a single waste person!

As for the Queen, seeing Aiwa respond to Federer's attack, by not counterattacking but rather showing elegance and wisdom, furthermore getting that recommendation by Young Lady Ruth; if this Aiwa didn't any special quality, then Ruth was improbable to recommend him to her.

The Queen believed in Ruth's judgment, thus believed Aiwa absolutely wasn't a waste person. But if barely relying on Aiwa confronting Federer's attack, such a simple thing at once isn't worthy of Ruth's recommendation, if it's so then that would mean Ruth was not Ruth at all. Finally what excelling place existed on Aiwa's body? The Queen still hadn't made out to come; therefore she decided to slowly inspect him. She believed that the time for gold to shine would surely come.

After Aiwa returned home, Kyle asked him what happened in the palace. Aiwa anxiously looked towards his father and spoke: [Queen has indeed become muddled, raising such a tough question for us!]

After Kyle heard the Queen gave out a difficult problem, he simply asked about it.

[The Queen wants me to take Prime Minister Groote's daughter as my wife, say isn't this making trouble?]

Although Aiwa liked Dolly in his heart, but he knew Kyle and Groote could never exist together, how could he intentionally marry Groote's daughter? Thus, Aiwa had no choice but to show an angry appearance to his father, this can let his father feel some consolation.

[Let you take which of Groote's daughter's as wife?]

General Kyle eagerly looked towards his son; Aiwa was calm, showing a dispirited and downcast appearance.

[I also don't know is which one, Groote has a few daughters?]

[According to what your father knows, Groote altogether has five daughters, only one gentle and soft humble daughter, and other four are bossy and domineering, very difficult to deal with, what's not known is Your Majesty the Queen wants which of those girls to betroth to my baby.]

TLN: 'Your father' here is used by Kyle to address himself to Aiwa.

[It seems as if she's called Dolly.]

Aiwa spoke.

[Dolly? Right, Groote that old fool's most humble daughter is called Dolly, not only has pretty looks, but also intelligent, exactly her, if it's really her, then your father doesn't any intention to fight against your and Groote's daughter getting married! What about you?]

Aiwa assumed a distressed and passive appearance, not revealing even a least bit of happiness.

[Relying on my son, taking any kind of woman as a wife is just a small matter, only that thousand jin minister house girl can also be considered to be well matched with our family. Since this is the Queen's decree, I say, son are you going to the minister's house to propose marriage?]

Kyle thought of letting his son show off might at Groote's home, what he most wanted to see was the appearance of Groote having no choice let his daughter marry into his arch-enemies home. This could be considered to be a hidden victory.

[If father prepares a suitable gift, I will go to minister's house tomorrow to pay a formal visit to my father-in-law and mother-in-law.]

But before dealing with the marriage matter, Aiwa's mind suddenly recalled a person, a woman — — Young Lady Ruth.

Her that pretty and flirtatious physique, abundant sticking out breasts, her glance which could suck in a man's soul, Aiwa was unable to forget a single thing about her, that one time getting raped by Young Lady Ruth, Aiwa had sampled a woman's taste from her body, also she was his first woman. Using the energy absorbed from her body, Aiwa had already experienced a increase in his power in a very short time, perhaps at attack domain and defense domain his power still didn't make much headway, but in case of his Yin technique Aiwa felt completely different from before, at least he was now already capable of calling out his lewd serpents, the most important was, using his lewd serpent he could begin to follow his heart's desires. Regarding this matter; practising Yin technique was of highest importance for Aiwa.

He never had any expectations of becoming a General, his wish was to become a woman dominating expert, making woman crawl in front of him, hell bent on using their body to wait upon him; that was the happiest man in the world...

Naturally, Aiwa's was still young, he didn't understand that for a man to protect his woman, what was needed was strength, resembling him who couldn't protect a single woman, getting defeated by a women, it would be impossible for him to genuinely conquer a woman.

Holding one kind of grateful as well as revengeful mentality in his heart, Aiwa came to Montelago Military Hospital.

Even before Aiwa arrived at the hospital doorway, Ruth's large perception domain felt his arrival.

[Sally, Aiwa that youngster has come again, you stand in for me and stall him a moment.]

Ruth looked at Aiwa's carriage slowly stopping beside the lawn in front of her experiment floor through the window.

When Aiwa was about to enter the laboratory, Sally came out: [Young master Aiwa, do you have some matter?]

Sally asked with courtesy. First was because she had a good opinion of Aiwa, second was because Aiwa was General Kyle's son, although Ruth could still torment this indefensible child, Sally didn't dare to provoke Holtzer Clan's person, especially Aiwa this kind of first position heir.

[I have come to express my gratitude towards Young lady Ruth today.]

Compared with first time Aiwa came to see Young lady Ruth he had learned much, during these few days' time he had become more mature.

For a moment Sally didn't know how to respond. Because this matter happened very suddenly, she still didn't think of a good reason to execute Young lady Ruth's mission of stalling Aiwa.

[She — — isn't here.]

Without any better option Sally gave out the best possible answer. [Can I pass on your gratitude to her?]

[You?]

Aiwa once more sized Sally up, although Sally didn't have Ruth's skill, her physique was pretty good, however the energy obtained from her couldn't be

compared to Ruth's, therefore Aiwa hesitated a bit.

[Don't be concerned, I will help in passing on your gratitude.]

Sally spoke quite confidently.

Aiwa advanced forward, one hand pinching her flabby cheek, closely looking at her tender but pretty cheek: [I want to sleep with Young lady Ruth; will you be able to replace her?]

Aiwa spoke with a small voice, which only Sally would be capable of hearing.

Although Sally didn't resist, Ruth was still inside the room, how could she promise this kind of request?

Aiwa's hand didn't leave, after looking at her hesitating expression; he guessed Ruth was surely inside the lab; he slowly lowered his head and approaching towards Sally's red sexy lips..

When Aiwa was almost going to kiss Sally, Ruth came out from inside while laughing: [Aiwa, what do you want to thank me for??]

She wore a wholehearted smile suiting her graceful and beautiful physique; today she didn't wear a military uniform, instead wore a sexy alligator skin short skirt, with black net designed long stockings extending inside her short skirt. Her jacket zipper was pulled until the midriff of her breasts;, revealing a deep cleavage revealing a half naked appearance similar to a fully opened mouth, making a man quiver with zeal to do something.

As Aiwa sight met with the view inside Ruth's cleavage, he pulled away from Sally's face.

[Young lady Ruth!]

Since the first bout between them, Aiwa was attracted by this Young lady Ruth's radiance, his finger slowly slid off Young lady Sally's face.

[Your Majesty Queen has already seen your recommendation letter and plans to receive me to be her guard.]

Aiwa genuinely spoke about the outcome of his trip to see the Queen.

[Don't mention it; perhaps it's because of your father.]

Young lady Ruth eyes were quite charming, those deep blue eyes possessing a feel of autumn ripples moving in lake water.

[No, I feel it's because of your recommendation that Your Majesty Queen planned to hire me. I feel, no matter how illustrious my clan is, the Queen was unlikely to hire a useless person at her side. What do you say?]

Aiwa formlessly let Ruth think he not only is modest but also has a clear headed mind.

[Then in which aspect do you think you are useful?]

Ruth's deep gaze fell on Aiwa. If it wasn't for that first bout, Aiwa would have melted under her gaze.

[This is the question for which I want the guidance of Young lady Ruth.]

Aiwa seemed like a small adult, with that matured tone.

[Sally there isn't anything you are needed for here.]

Ruth glanced towards Sally and spoke, then Sally tactfully retreated.

Ruth turned towards Aiwa again and said:[You're really quite clever, then I shall teach you again. Only, today I won't bind you again, you can freely have a bout with me for a round, using your true ability!]

Saying thus, Ruth's hand reached out and kneaded between Aiwa's crotch. Her mere touch with one hand, caused Aiwa's male root to immediately react, making her laugh. Then, Ruth removed her clothes standing in front of Aiwa.

[I — — can I show you a small trick?]

Aiwa hesitated a bit and opened his mouth, but still he was confident in his heart, Ruth would surely like it, she was a very curious woman.

[Hah, you can — —]

During this time, Ruth had already pulled down the zipper on her skirt, exposing her flat and smooth underbelly, going down, revealing her pale yellow pubic hair, and those stocking hooks suspended at her waist, only, this wasn't going to hinder their next step — having sex.

When Ruth was stripping that short skirt, her sight attentively watched Aiwa's

face, she was quite fond of this boy, looking at the excited expression on his face at movement of her naked body, gave her a feel of victory. Aiwa concluded that was a common problem of all woman, but he was still unable to control his heart's excitation, Ruth's gradually revealing snow white skin, made him feel a fatal enticement, he involuntarily made some coarse and heavy gasps.

[Didn't you just speak of some small trick? Let me experience it a bit.]

As her two jade legs came out of the alligator skirt, since she hadn't worn any shelter inside; when she lifted her leg, Aiwa could clearly look at the location below her thick pubic hair, hiding a tender and lovely flesh hole.

Ruth hardly had any intention to cover herself in front of Aiwa. After removing her skirt, she pulled down the zipper on her upper body jacket half way down. Losing the shelter of that jacket, half of those two abundant snow white breasts emerged out. This almost naked bare woman's body covered by a little bit of leather clothing simply resembled a killing weapon. Aiwa stopped looking at that thick pubic hair attentively looking towards her snow white cleavage.

[Is it good looking?]

Ruth slightly pulled her jacket, causing all of the cleavage to be revealed, exposing her captivating red nipples, those nipples were already erect as if they were two pink mulberry tree fruits, Aiwa mouth salivated after looking, he exerted all of his strength to swallow down the saliva, and his penis immediately became erect. He felt even more captivated looking at Ruth's naked body today than the first time, emitting a lewd breath which was hard for any man to resist, her affectionate expression, burned the amorous feelings in Aiwa's heart as if it was a raging inferno.

[Good looking!]

Aiwa spoke with great effort; he felt his throat go dry, making it somewhat difficult to speak those two words. He had never experienced a woman using this kind of half covered half exposed kind of appearance to seduce a man.

Ruth didn't take off her jacket, moving towards Aiwa with that open wide half naked body.

[Is this look pretty good?]

Ruth's that limpid autumn waters sort of bright pupils looked at Aiwa, her body's aroma surrounded him, letting him feel her attractive body fragrance pervading inside his body with every breath, agitating his dragon blood. He even felt a trace of heat emitting from that exquisite snowy flesh of her body.

Ruth's hand slowly moved towards Aiwa's waist, removing his belt: [You are already so much hard, what are you doing still looking distracted?]

She removed his belt, one hand stretching inside towards his male root in his trousers.

Ruth took off Aiwa's trousers down from his waist, causing that big penis to immediately leap out. Ruth bowed down avariciously looking at that hyperaemic root, although she showed a peaceful look to Aiwa, her heart was very excited, especially after hearing Aiwa's coarse and heavy breaths, Ruth's heart was fulfilled.

[Dear Aiwa, help me lick at that place below once okay?]

Her hands climbed up placing them on top of Aiwa's shoulders. At the time of lifting these two hands, Ruth's chest clothes simply opened wide to either side exposing a fair and lovely wide region.

At his moment Aiwa thought to move forward and eat up those breasts of her, but Ruth asked him to lick her that place. Without any alternative, he squatted down placing his two hands on top on her sticking up butt while caressing her body, his mouth moved towards that piece of thicket covered underbelly, moving over to her vulva. Since last time's experience and those two rounds with Margaret, Aiwa's mouth skill was promoted by a large factor.

His lips and tongue slid on top of Ruth's vulva, his tongue explored out licking that rich tender vulva, Ruth's body couldn't help but tremble: [Oh — — Aiwa! Very comfortable — —]

After getting licked by Aiwa once, Ruth's body stiffened, her two hands couldn't help but grab Aiwa's soft long hair. At the same time her two legs also opened up a little, this made it a bit easy for Aiwa to lick. She made great effort to stick out her beautiful crotch, letting that rich tender vulva closely stick on top of Aiwa's mouth. Aiwa tried to use his tongue to roll up, opening Ruth's two thin tender fleshes entering inside her flesh hole.

[Oh — — *a good person* Aiwa! Really pleasurable — —]

TLN: Here 'a good person' is an idiom used to praise someone.

Although they started just a moment ago, Ruth was already invigorated by that soft and hard provocation of Aiwa's tongue, [Aiwa. This is the small trick you spoke of? Isn't his too fierce?]

Ruth's body contracted back, taking the initiative to bring around her snow white butt to rub towards Aiwa's lips.

[Then are you willing to use your mouth to serve me?]

Aiwa spoke with great courage.

[Barely licking me twice; and already desiring me to serve you! All right, who let you this person, be so much charming!]

Ruth let Aiwa stand up; while she squatted down, her two hands supporting that thick meat spear covered with popping veins and licked it.

That single lick on top of Aiwa's male root right away made him feel a burst of fresh and cool pleasure.

He stood there, two palms facing together, moving his dou qi, using his qi to operate the Yin technique.

Very quickly, around Ruth's surroundings a dense pink fog appeared, this pink color was proof that Aiwa's Yin technique had already reached the realm of 5th rank, using the Yin technique to call out lewd serpents also resulted in them becoming larger.

That pink fog pervaded Ruth's surroundings, in a moment; two lewd serpents suddenly appeared from within the mist. One lewd serpent followed Aiwa's will and reached Ruth's belly button, crawling inside her deep cleavage and the other one coiled around on her plump thigh, its head exploring towards the vulva licked by Aiwa, squeezing itself inside that pink tender flesh hole.

Suddenly feeling an ice cold thing drilling her lower body, Ruth couldn't help but give out a loud shout: [What is this?]

[Don't be afraid, they are my little lewd serpents!]

Aiwa proudly said.

Ruth couldn't help but use her hand to grab it, but she couldn't grab it, only if she used her dou qi could she struggle a bit, however after hearing this lewd serpent was let out by Aiwa, her heart calmed down a bit.

The serpent below continued to drill inside her flesh cave, sometimes still withdrawing, that kind of coming out and going forward made Ruth feel as if Aiwa's male root was sliding inside her flesh cave. Thereupon, she felt relieved and held Aiwa's thick rod inside her mouth, quite skilfully taking it in and out.

She followed by taking in Aiwa's male root step by step swallowing it to the deepest part, covering that hyperaemic male root with her saliva.

That lewd serpent entered and exited her flesh cave more and more quickly, making Ruth wriggle her butt around.

Another lewd serpent lied on her snow white chest, using its whole body to soothe her breasts, using the serpent's forked tongue to provoke her lovable erect nipples. Very quickly amorous feelings rippled inside Ruth, she was unable to continue servicing Aiwa's male root using her mouth and loudly shouted: [Ah — — Aiwa, I want you to pierce me — —]

She stood up, sexual secretions already flowing down through her snow white thighs.

Actually when that regiment of pink smoke rose up, it already invoked the passion inside Ruth, let alone right now those two lewd serpents were still operating over the sensitive positions of her body while teasing her! Right now she only wanted to be relieved of the itching inside her vagina, letting Aiwa use that big penis to thrust inside her.

Aiwa recalled his Yin technique, his two hands parting each other grabbing Ruth's fully rounded breasts and groped them; Ruth quickly gripped his thick crotch inside towards her flesh hole. These two person's had some height difference, Aiwa was a bit taller, even after Ruth tiptoed to stand up her two legs still hadn't reached high enough, therefore she held Aiwa's neck, placing her two long legs around Aiwa's waist, this let that thick rod slowly prod forward inside

her body.

When that thick rod was slowly progressing inside her, Ruth's lower body immediately gave off one kind of happy and rich feel, although Aiwa's male root was huge, her flesh hole was also extremely flexible, honey like love liquid once again flowed out of her flesh hole, Aiwa's thick rod effortlessly entered inside Ruth's body.

[Is this comfortable?]

Aiwa held Ruth's snow white butt, eyes looking at those pair of grand breasts on her chest. Along with her body wriggling and moving up and down, those two breasts similarly followed and trembled up and down.

[Today only if you are able to serve this young lady comfortably, I will deliver a portion of energy to you again, letting your defense domain promote two ranks!]

Ruth was interested in helping this youngster whom she was fond of, at present his defense domain was at 5th rank, if she let him rise two ranks, quickly raising it to 7th rank, this kind of talented youngster being recommend to the Queen's side, also wouldn't disgrace her reputation. Only she also wished for this talented youngster's Yin technique to be promoted a notch before serving at the Queen's side.

Looking at Ruth's amorous expression, Aiwa became more excited: [Ruth, we can still go on top of the bed, I surely can let you feel more pleasurable!]

Aiwa's mouth moved towards her fragrant lips.

[Follow your wishes.]

Inside Ruth's eyes rippled layer upon layer of love.

Aiwa held Ruth's body, kissing her fragrant lips, moving over to that metal bed. Their bodies didn't separate for a single moment until reaching the bed. Ruth spent great effort to raise her long legs above in the air. Aiwa's tongue dug inside her mouth twining with her sweet tongue, his two hands still grabbing her breasts groping them, then raising her butt he suddenly pierced her.

[En — — En — —]

Aiwa's each thrust, caused Ruth to give out a ravishing moan. His meat rod

ferociously stabbed towards her stamen, knocking against it making Ruth tremble all over.

In order to hear Ruth's moan, Aiwa loosened her mouth, grabbing her two abundant breasts with each hand, exerting more effort in stabbing her flower hole, causing the billowing flood inside her flower hole to immediately overflow and rush out.

[Ah — — stabbing me to death — — Oh — —]

Ruth happily yelled, at the same time her energy steadily flowed towards Aiwa delivering itself to him, breathing in the energy through his meat rod inside his body, he operated his dou qi to transform it into his energy, continuously operating his do qi, looking inside, Aiwa could make out to see his dou qi become more larger under the catalysis of Ruth's energy.

That increasing dou qi, suddenly sucked in a large energy from Ruth's body, that huge energy followed along her cervix and arrived spurting inside Aiwa's male stalk, Aiwa immediately felt one portion of burning hot stream of air wrapping up half his male root, that stream of air again followed that vigorous penis and entered inside his Dan Circle location, the dou qi instantly expanded, if it wasn't for Aiwa already grasping some ability in controlling dou qi, it was possible that he could have destroyed his body during this dou qi breakthrough.

Aiwa expended a lot of effort to settle his breath, concentrating his will to gather that dou qi together, it slowly travelled out of his body, moving around his and Ruth's naked bodies. Right now his dou qi had already reached a soccer ball's dimension, assuming a blue colour. This meant his dou qi energy had already reached the 6th rank realm. If he tempered it again it would change into a deep blue colour, making Aiwa's defense power successfully advance into 7th rank.

[Oh — — quickly pierce me — — it's itching inside — —]

Since Aiwa was controlling his dou qi he didn't dare to move, this made Ruth's body feel unwell. She couldn't help but take the initiative to ram his penis against her stamen, Aiwa tightly grabbed her two breasts groping them, if he wasn't anxious that her breasts would split open by his grabbing, Aiwa surely would have used his entire power, only he couldn't bear to exert his full force on

that tender part, waiting for that dou qi to settle and withdraw back within his body, he started to move again.

Right now Aiwa felt invigorated all over, his male root slightly expanded a bit, making Ruth's body convulse, Aiwa renounced her two lovely breasts, holding her slender waist and rammed inside her, his large male root spurted inside her uterus, that violent pain accompanied by intense pleasure made Ruth give out a loud shout, almost obstructing her breath. But Aiwa wasn't a single bit anxious about Ruth's safety and danger, because he knew a woman who comprehended Yin cultivation was fearless of getting rammed, he pulled out that meat rod out of her uterus and again ferociously lunged inside her, Ruth only felt her body hollow out for a moment, her body thereupon followed up, again moving down towards Aiwa, both sides pounded together, that convulsing meat wall quickly pressed down on both sides around Aiwa's thick meat rod.

Honey like liquid was already liberating from inside her vagina making her entire vagina slippery and pleasurable; Aiwa simply exerted a little bit of force, pulling that thick meat rod out. Repeating this movement several hundred times, Ruth felt her body twitching all over, breath becoming rushed, her flat and smooth underbelly also experiencing a sequence of protrusions and depressions. Right now Aiwa was already unclear how many times Ruth had climaxed, at her most highest orgasm he suddenly loosened his essence, letting that warm essence shoot out — —

Chapter 7: Taking liberties with sister-in-law

Book 1 Chapter 7: Taking liberties with sister-in-law

This time not only energy but furthermore a large amount of ling qi was transferred from Ruth to Aiwa. Having this ling qi, he could promote his defense by a large margin.

While returning home on the carriage, Aiwa was still soaked in the pleasure during the hand-to-hand combat with Ruth, at the same time he again once more tempered the ling qi and energy he absorbed from Ruth to promote his abilities. Right now if only he willed, that dou qi would immediately collect together, and that huge binding energy could be used for defending or attacking others, naturally, regarding Aiwa, promoting his Yin technique was most important for him, or to say, he didn't even think of holding power to withstand a man, and only thought of using his Yin technique to handle pretty woman.

Returning home, Aiwa slept for half a day, getting up in the evening, he continued to cultivate his dou qi, he sat in the lotus position on top of the bed, breathing out stale air and breathing fresh air in, then with rapt attention, he cultivated his dou qi until the point of perfection before stopping.

At this time, Margaret came in pushing the door, her attire was a very sexy pajamas, a low-cut half revealing her hidden and serene cleavage, her snow-white breasts swaying along with her body captivating the gaze of any male.

[Still haven't slept?]

Margaret coming in being concerned about her son was a normal affair; she didn't need to be anxious of Kyle feeling jealous of his son.

[Today I slept through the whole afternoon, how can I still feel sleepy?]

Aiwa saw that attractive and half-naked soft chest figure of Margaret and couldn't help but get hyperactive.

Margaret came and sat down at Aiwa's side, he merely looked at her, however

didn't set about. Today's flesh combat with Ruth had already used up a lot of his physical strength, he still had to exhibit his svelte tomorrow at his future wife's father house, he had no intention of indulging in debauchery today evening, or else going to other people's house with a weary spirit would leave a bad image.

Actually the reason why Margaret came wasn't to make love to him, merely came to look how his spirit was, after all tomorrow he was going to pay a visit to his future father-in-law, these two mother and child can be considered to have a common understanding,

[Today evening I haven't come to once again use up your physical strength, however, if you want there's no harm in feeling mother here for a little time using your hands.]

Margaret couldn't resist the temptation of Aiwa's lust filled eyes, she slightly pulled the ribbon on her pajamas, letting those two plentiful breasts to be revealed.

Aiwa reached out his hand towards that snow white breast on top pinching it twice, lowering his head, he held one of her nipple's inside his mouth and started sucking.

[You this youngster are really gluttonous.]

Margaret enjoyed getting sucked by Aiwa, when he was sucking her nipple, the tip of his tongue deftly teased her nipple, giving rise to a tickling sensation on her body, but she pretended laugh aloofly saying: [Even having two mouths to suck won't be able to satisfy you!]

However Aiwa was sucking her nipple at one side, while extending his one hand inside her pyjamas, groping about her crotch, when his finger entered inside her flesh hole, she gave out a lovable smile clamping her legs together.

[Margaret? Margaret?]

Old Kyle yelled inside the corridor.

[I'm at here.]

Margaret answered at one side, while hurriedly standing up from Aiwa's bed, quickly tying up her pajamas ribbon. She still hadn't gone to open the door, Kyle

at once pushed the door walking inside.

[Originally you're at here?]

Kyle looked towards Aiwa sitting on the bed, not even a single bit doubting his son and stepmother have what adultery going on.

[Father.]

Aiwa somewhat nervously straightened his body.

[Hehe, no need to stand up, I came over to find Margaret. Had a good rest? Tomorrow you have an important mission, you must hold that Dolly as wife and return to our home.]

Kyle quite confidently spoke towards his son.

[Feel relieved, I won't fail to live up to your expectations.]

Aiwa spoke expressing a stiff smile.

Margaret followed Kyle and went out, and going out time, Margaret still turned around stealthily sending a flying kiss towards Aiwa.

The reason Kyle was trying to find Margaret was to discuss about the gift his son was going to take to Groote's home tomorrow, although there has never been any relations between the two families before, but this time was different, after all is relatives by marriage, son going to pay a formal visit to wife's father, wife's mother was a serious matter, if not that old fox Groote would at once grab this matter as a weak point.

Aiwa was bored being by himself for a long time, and once again practiced his dou qi, before he slowly fell asleep while guiding his dou qi.

The next day was one beautiful early morning. Aiwa's spirit was pretty good, he received the gift Kyle and Margaret picked for him, got on top of the carriage, going towards the imperial palace to reach the avenue leading to Dolly's home.

At the moment Aiwa's carriage had hardly reached half li from the imperial palace, a luxurious carriage galloped over. Nearing it, Aiwa could see two persons on top of the carriage, one was his future brother-in-law Federer, the other one was a tall and sturdy male youth, mouth on top having a — shaped mustache. That person's appearance was fairer and clear than Federer by a bit,

however inside those eyes of him giving out an obscene feel.

[Youngster, where are you going?]

Federer let the coachman stop the carriage, blocking up Aiwa's path. Yesterday in front of his door he let this cheap youngster take small advantage, today he definitely have to make reprisals with him.

[I have never seen someone who calls his younger sister's husband as youngster, you being like this isn't highly humiliating you younger sister?]

Aiwa after hearing Federer call himself in this sort, not all was angry, he didn't think of calming Federer's anger but rather tried to infuriate him.

[Younger sister's husband? Aiwa, I'm telling you, keep on dreaming. At least my father is improbable to agree about you becoming his daughter's husband, you're not fit!]

Federer already came down the carriage, moving towards the back of Aiwa's carriage, looking inside the carriage have what thing, [Hehe, the gift's pretty good! It seems, that Kyle really has become a dotard, unexpectedly believes my father is going to agree regarding this marriage! Indeed what a joke! He still hasn't come to see his son hasn't any future prospects!]

TLN: Dotard: an old person, especially one who has become weak or senile.

Federer moved his hand to feel the gift case on top of Aiwa's carriage but again stopped his hands, as if the gift case on top has what dust spoil his gloves.

[Mine and Dolly's matrimony was from Your Majesty Queen's own mouth and arranged, don't tell me your family's old grandpa at once haven't loyalty towards Your Majesty Queen as her subject?]

Aiwa deliberately let that youth at Federer's side know, Dolly is already his, this is Queen's intention, who all unable to disobey.

[Yesterday I forgot to tell you, this Mr. Ryan is my younger sister's fiancé, Your Majesty Queen the reason why made you a couple, is because my father still hadn't reported to her that my younger sister is a girl already taken. Right, Brother Ryan?]

Federer patted that a head higher than him — mustached young person and

said.

[Right, I am Dolly's fiancé, you haven't power to take Dolly as wife!]

That called Ryan male from carriage on top walked down, to gazes filled with enmity shooting towards Aiwa.

[I how haven't heard? That day your younger sister in front of Your Majesty Queen from her own mouth said she hasn't engagement, you know deceiving the Queen is have what punishment.]

Aiwa arrived at the conclusion that this suddenly appearing Dolly's fiancé, surely is Groote in order to cancel Aiwa's and Dolly's wedding found last moment candidate.

[Why would we deceive the Queen? Our Herman Clan and Mofarre Clan however have been aristocrats for many generations holding a large power, our two clan's getting linked by marriage is also according to the norms, if only my father reports to the Queen, Your Majesty Queen is surely to recall her arrangement of being the matchmaker. Youngster, Queen isn't improbable for you think milk stinking youngster, offend our Herman Clan, What do you say, Ryan?]

Federer proudly spoke, he thought if in front of Aiwa came up with a flawless, invulnerable plan then it would be sufficient to let Aiwa shrink back.

[Then what if I want to absolutely take Young lady Dolly as my wife?]

Aiwa didn't show weakness, even if it wasn't for taking Dolly as wife in the future, he would still face these two arrogant guys for one breath. Aiwa although is only a youngster, however his that energy absorbed from Ruth had already become his dou qi, this let gave him a formless confidence in himself, if he defeated these two youngster's in front of him in a short period of time, then they how will be able to mingle around?

[Then your path will be cut off by me.]

That — mustached youth stood in front of Aiwa's carriage, Aiwa was sitting on top of the carriage, looking at the already swelling muscles on top of his body, it could be also concluded that he was in the process of gathering his dou qi together.

By the time Ryan amassed half his dou qi, Aiwa already willed his dou qi to come out of his body, the difference between these person's is, Ryan was actually practicing a Bright system dou qi while Aiwa was practicing a Dark system dou qi, the biggest difference between bright and dark system dou qi that dark system dou qi cannot be seen by others, only a high ranked Bright system dou qi expert, is capable of using his dou qi to probe about low-level dark system dou qi expert's power distribution. Clearly Ryan didn't possess this kind of strength.

Aiwa sitting on top of the carriage could already make out that even if his opponent's dou qi was amassed till the peak, that also wasn't his opponent, because the energy he absorbed from Ruth, already let him promote two ranks in a single day. In other words, right now Aiwa was already a Dark system defense and attack 7th rank expert. Naturally about the exact rank, even wasn't clear about it, he merely compared his and Ryan's dou qi dimension, and knew the clear difference between them,

However Ryan didn't know about this, he only thought of taking advantage of Aiwa and winning against him. Actually Federer say he is Dolly's fiancé also isn't empty talk, he tried to numerous times pursue Dolly, however she never looked upon this — associating with Federer kind of feeling he is an infallible guy.

Those obscene eyes of Ryan were quite disliked by Dolly. Every time he came to Herman Clan, Dolly was unwilling to look at him, although Groote also didn't look upon Ryan's this appearance, but his family was most suited to be Dolly's marriage match, therefore, Old Groote not at all was against Ryan pursuing his daughter stubbornly inside his home.

Ryan willed his dou qi to appear outside his body, suddenly one fire-ball came over shooting towards Aiwa. At the time that fire-ball almost fell on top of Aiwa's chest he returned fired, two fire balls knocked against each other, Ryan believed he hit Aiwa, but suddenly felt his two palms go numb, immediately a portion of large power shook him, he couldn't help but take a step back, in a daze looking towards Aiwa.

[You used what sorcery?]

Ryan stared blankly and asked.

[Hah, how can I use sorcery! This is called evil shall not prevail justice. This is God look upon you covered all over evil influence, helping me dispose you, How? Want to receive God's punishment?]

Aiwa proudly laughed.

[Aiwa, no need for acting, don't think I don't know you used Dark system dou qi? You think it's possible for this small trick of yours to be concealed from me?]

In between the speech, Federer already secretly operated his dou qi, he thought, a 17-year-old youngster's cultivation improbable to be how high? In his eyes, Ryan also is one useless man, unexpectedly unable to control a 17-year-old child, really is losing his face. At the moment his final words barely dropped, a cold light shot towards Aiwa.

While Federer's that group of dou qi was condensing, Aiwa already from his face on top could make out the development. Aiwa thought: [I already am a rogue, didn't expect Federer still at bit above me!] If before, Aiwa's power really would have been underwhelmed, but since he absorbed the essence qi during sex with Ruth, it was simply incomparable. Now whether it was his reaction speed or attack ability, all by a large margin exceeded compared to his previous self, at least he still possessed an abundant upper edge over Federer and Ryan these two guys.

While Federer that group of dou qi tossing out of his body time, Aiwa's figure still hadn't moved, but his body was already in an alerted state. Aiwa knew, under any circumstances, reacting prematurely was tantamount to revealing his next move and escape route to his enemy; therefore, he waited for Federer to attack and then make his move.

Federer's murderous spirit was very strong, although unlikely to kill Aiwa, if he let Federer hit him, then he definitely would suffer serious injuries. Aiwa thought: [Federer unexpectedly is thinking to conspire to murder his younger sister's husband, very vicious!] At this tune, that path of lightning already reached ahead of him, Aiwa suddenly soared and rose, at the same time transforming the dou qi previously stored in his right hand into a shield to resist Federer's approaching fierce attack, and the dou qi on his left hand transforming into a sharp sword, thrusting towards Federer's pit of the stomach.

Although Aiwa's Dark system dou qi is invisible to the naked eye, but his strength transmitted through the air already let Federer clearly feel the matter to be far from encouraging, he immediately dodged to the side hiding from that continuous hits from Aiwa.

[Aiwa, you have the nerve to attack your brother-in-law!]

Federer couldn't help but shout loudly after hiding from Aiwa's first hit, he didn't expect, Aiwa still like that be able to show offensive force, because although Aiwa's height was tall, he was a 17-year-old child with an obvious childish nature, but now Federer understood, Aiwa's that face full of childish nature was only one kind of fake appearance.

[Hehe, at last I am your younger sister's husband? Since you hold me as you younger's sister's husband, why you still tried to attack me?]

Aiwa spinning in the sky one circle again dropped down on top of his carriage with a calm expression.

[You — —]

Federer realized his slip of the tongue, but if he spoke again, the water would be spilt, he would be unable to withdraw and under Aiwa's compulsion, stuttered with anger. Most important is not only could Aiwa resist his attack force, but also still able to return that hit while simultaneously disposing his original attack, this let Federer in the capacity as a Junior Officer lose face repeatedly. Aiwa's reaction speed and power all made Federer have no choice to have somewhat misgivings in order to save his face, he had to find another high rank expert later, therefore he jumped on his carriage.

[Aiwa, today I have an important matter to attend, I will not lower myself to you, however, I will still advise you to think what is good for you, my younger sister is improbable to marry you.]

Aiwa's corner of the mouth slightly slanted, exposing a disdainful smile, letting the coachman overtake the appeared carriage galloping towards Prime Minister Groote's home.

Arriving at the entrance door, he let his accompanying attendant advance towards the errand runners at the doorway and inform them, General Kyle's son

Aiwa has come to pay a formal visit.

Prime Minister Groote office wasn't at his home, at home only had Madam and Young lady, hear Aiwa has come to greet Groote and Madam, Young lady Dolly hurriedly told them to let the visitor come in.

Fourth Young lady Sili but received no small amount of her father's influence, since Kyle's whole family haven't any good opinion, listen Kyle's official wife's son Aiwa came here, without any trace of politeness walked ahead and said: [No need to see!]

[Older sister, Young master Aiwa after all is visitor, how can it be right to lock our door and refuse to see him?]

Along with the errand runner's notification, Aiwa entered forward inside the gate. The attendant carried the gift down the cart, however Aiwa walked over facing towards the drawing-room.

[This is precisely Young master Aiwa?]

Beautiful but vitriolic Sili obstructed Aiwa's path.

[Who are you?]

Aiwa also stood in front of her.

[You have this right to ask me? First answer my question.]

Sili arrogantly stood in front of Aiwa, not letting him past.

[Older sister, this is my visitor.]

Dolly looked at her older sister in this was bothering her lover, felt unwell in her chest, she advanced towards Aiwa and pulled him, [Walk, follow me!]

Leaving Sili aside.

[Dolly, you have the nerve to ignore me for this stinky youngster!]

Sili turned her body and roared with anger and Aiwa turned around revealing a wry face.

While Dolly and Aiwa entered the drawing-room, Prime Minister's Madam Alice already came inside the drawing-room, after all are aristocrats, even if it's two feuding families, cannot ignore etiquette.

Although Alice was already 30 many years, but could be said to be equal to a worth seeing young beauty, moreover emitting a literary excellence, especially her two eyes inside those limpid autumn waters sort of clear lustre, completing her dignified appearance as the Prime Minister's Madam within that literary excellence.

[This is my mother.]

Dolly quickly introduced her.

[Aiwa pays respect to mother-in-law senior.]

TLN: This 'senior' bit here appears when a younger generation is addressing the older generation. (da ren à adult, grownup, title of respect towards superiors etc..)

Aiwa hurriedly saluted.

[You still haven't formally married, this kind of address I'm afraid isn't suitable?]

Alice's face on top appeared a shade of red, immediately calming her, counterpart this kid of addressing her, clearly had some overbearing flavour, this was somewhat hard for the Prime Minister's Madam to accept. However this marriage was decided by Your Majesty Queen, fear she cannot disobey, precisely Herman also cannot resist.

Yesterday after being informed about this matter by Federer, the couple consulted over the night, finally without any other option, today Groote prepared to dismiss this wedding by seeing the Queen. However, Prime Minister's Madam still didn't know the outcome, naturally in this kind of situation caused her to be very stiff.

[Since is Your Majesty Queen decided out wedding. We two familial relations are no good to refuse, let alone I very much adore Dolly, My wish, is for me and Young lady Dolly to be married imminently.]

Aiwa was hardly discouraged in front of Alice, he didn't believe Groote wouldn't give importance to the Queen, let alone pay attention to matrimonial freedom nowadays, since Dolly is fond of him, he at once had faith to settle this marriage.

[Young master Aiwa also isn't speaking without reason, however, today my body is feeling a bit unwell, there's no harm in Young master Aiwa chatting with my daughter?]

Alice knew her fourth daughter's mouth skill is how ferocious, she thought of withdrawing and letting her fourth daughter stand in for her and send off Aiwa.

Sili was worried about not having the opportunity to vent off her anger, hearing mother speak, she easily agreed.

[That at once good, today let me come to receive this important visitor,]

Sili's tone resembled her expression and same, not having single iota of tenderness, filled with arrogance. In front of Sili this kind of girl, a same city boy could only shrink back, but Aiwa improbable to back down. He had Dolly's support, behind furthermore Your Majesty Queen and Holtzer Clan huge power support, he didn't fear this silly little girl!

Dolly sat at Aiwa's side, and Sili sat opposite to Aiwa sticking one leg over the other, very arrogantly looking at Aiwa. Although she hasn't utilized what skill, however that cold expression of her was enough to kill a person's confidence.

[Dolly, aren't you ought to be sitting at older sisters side? Still haven't married, at once marrying family and sitting together?]

Sili looked at Dolly sitting like that near Aiwa, made her angry, she this kind of reprimanding Dolly, also was to make Aiwa feel embarrassed..

[Sili, we all are young people, what's up with sitting together?]

Dolly thought her older sister was being a bit excessive and sat there motionless.

[That also won't do, our Herman clan persons particularly pay attention to etiquette, Aiwa again is the noble son of a great family, how can we not treat him with respect?]

Sili looking at her younger sister haven't following her battlefield and act, her anger caused her chest to violently move up and down. If Sili was capable of exchange her temper to come out, perhaps Aiwa could fall in love with her, but she was very flamboyant, also excessively arrogant, Aiwa simple though of

planning to make her embarrass herself.

[Young lady Sili's looks are quite pretty, at our Hass Empire inside also could be considered to be an outstanding beauty? It's a pity, precisely mouth on top simply haven't spared person, I think Young lady Sili improbable is because your younger sister met with Your Majesty Queen's set marriage with me Aiwa giving rise to jealousy in the heart?]

Aiwa calm and slowly spoke, his sight fell on her exquisite body sizing her up. She really could be regarded as a beautiful woman, her arrogant expression inside appearing a portion of charm letting a man be filled with ecstasy, however she received her father Groote's influence, and always haven't any good opinion towards Holtzer Clan persons.

[I have seen many imagining one's love to be reciprocated men, but have never before seen resembling Young master Aiwa so much shameless man — — can you still be considered a man! Who can fall for you? My younger sister merely due to etiquette and giving respect for Your Majesty Queen haven't refused you that's all, you this kind of not cherishing a young lady kind of stinky man!]

Sili was infuriated by Aiwa, just now she was leisurely swaying those crossed legs, but now suddenly wanted to pick up the tea cup in front of her spill it on Aiwa's face.

[Hehe, Young lady Sili's angry expression is also very good-looking, making a man admire wholeheartedly!]

Aiwa continued to provoke Sili, but also hugged Dolly's body.

[This Young lady doesn't need you this kind of stinky youngster's praise. If haven't what matter. I say you can leave! Don't wait for me to show you the door.]

Sili really is because of looking at Aiwa and her younger sister being that affectionate not delightful in her heart, since she was very bossy and domineering, there wasn't a male who dared to set about and plan to be with her, she obviously was two years bigger than her younger sister, and her sister already has matchmaker, how could this matter make her body and mind feel comfortable?

Aiwa merely laughed, secretly reading the Yin technique incantation, stealthily call out two of his small lewd serpents inside of Sili's skirt letting those two small invisible serpents go and torment Sili.

Very quickly, Sili at once was unable to resist the provocation of the lewd serpents, she felt as if have what thing gently caressing and stoking her soft chest, and again at the same time have what thing drilling inside her flesh hole inside her skirt.

[If Young lady Sili really wished for me to leave, then at once accompany me for a quarter-hour time, let me finish this cup and tea, if you wish for me to stay behind and have lunch, then I at one request Young lady Sili to go out and prepare for the lunch banquet.]

Aiwa deliberately wanted Sili to make a fool of herself, he naturally thought of letting Sili leave drawing-room inside. He believed, relying on Sili's personality, after hearing these words, anyhow, she wouldn't be willing to depart half a step from inside the drawing-room.

[This Young lady will accompany you.]

Thus speaking, Sili pretended as if nothing had happened and rose the tea-cup to drink, however at this moment the two lewd serpents were under Aiwa's control, along with Aiwa's lust, those two lewd serpents did their utmost to drill at Sili's sensitive positions. One of them directly squeezed inside her flesh hole, pierced her hymen, stretching out its tongue and licking on top of her stamen.

How could a girl possibly receive this kind of disturbance easily, although Sili made utmost effort to control herself, her body couldn't help but twist around.

[Young lady Sili as if seems to have what obscene demonic thoughts? Otherwise, at once return to your room inside? Not so, I see you disgracing yourself in front of a visitor.]

Regarding this kind of strong-minded and arrogant girl, Aiwa at once thought of using this kind of method to handle her. Sili is one extremely caring about face girl, hear Aiwa this sort of speak about her, she naturally couldn't admit it, and in order to prove she haven't any wicked thoughts, she also couldn't return to her room, she still descended enduring her pain in front of Aiwa.

However, along with the reinforcement of Aiwa's thoughts, those two lewd serpents tossed around on Sili's body, that one serpent inside her flesh hole rapidly twitching its body, as if Aiwa's thick meat rod quickly sliding in and out of her and same, she wasn't able to resist anymore but again couldn't lose her face, not willing to depart.

[Sili, finally what's up with you?]

Dolly looked at her older sister that resisting appearance was unable to guess happened what matter and simply got up and asked.

[Oh — — I also don't know, my body's itching — —]

She really couldn't bear to resist that lustful feeling burning her body, that lewd serpent drilled inside her flesh hole making her wish to quickly pull out and have sex with Aiwa whom she just now humiliated, letting him use all of his force to stick it inside her one time. She at last stood up from the sofa.

[Dang! I'll go and call mother to come take a look.]

Dolly at once became anxious looking at her older sister like this.

[No need, I'll be able to manage.]

Saying thus, Aiwa advanced towards Sili holding her, obstructing her face, Sili pretended to slap down on Aiwa's body a few times. Aiwa then held her and took her inside a room beside the drawing-room.

[Where is it itching?]

Aiwa asked.

[Ahh — — below — —]

Sili shyly closed her eyes and spoke.

Aiwa controlled those two invisible lewd serpents using his thoughts and already held them to provoke Sili until she was mentally confused, right now no matter Aiwa asked what, she would at once genuinely speak.

Aiwa's hand stretched down towards her crotch, separating her skirt gently caressing and stroking her vulva, at the same asked: [Is this kind comfortable?]

[Oh — — comfortable — — very comfortable — —]

Sili's body twisted while speaking.

[Furthermore where else is itching?]

Aiwa again asked.

[Here — —]

Sili lead that hand to press on top her breasts, Aiwa substituted for her and grabbed those breasts, Sili's breasts as compared to Dolly's were more erect and also well-developed, giving a soft and flexible feeling when grabbed.

Dolly looking at Aiwa under her older sister's incitement gently caressing, kneading and pinching at her secret locations, doing unmentionable things, also didn't dare to let her mother come and look her older sister's this kind of embarrassing appearance, without any option she shut close the small door, letting Aiwa follow her older sister's will and act on her body.

Chapter 8: Ejaculating on Stepmother's face

Book 1 Chapter 8: Ejaculating on Stepmother's face

Sili and Dolly were after all blood sisters, Dolly couldn't bear to look at Sili's suffering appearance, she by no means could let any outsider look at the blunder of her older sister's lovable body getting kneaded and pinched by her fiancé causing her body to wriggle around, what she hadn't foreseen was , how was it that today her older sister suddenly caught this bewildering illness, Dolly had no choice but to shut close the door of the room lateral to the drawing room.

[Ahh — — it's itching! Press more strongly — —]

Sili's body wriggled, while yelling .

[Sili, lower your voice a bit all right? Take care to not let mother hear!]

Dolly anxiously stated, if her mother saw her fiancé groping about her older sister's body, what would that result be!

[Very I — itching— —]

Sili felt really unwell, resembling ten million small insects drilling inside her vagina, if it weren't for Aiwa's big hand kneading and pinching her vulva as well as on top of her breasts, she really would have gone insane.

[Aiwa, will your method work?]

Dolly looking at her older sister's body violently and incessantly wriggling about, she was anxious whether Aiwa really possessed the skill to cure her older sister.

[Feel relieved, soon all will be good.]

Aiwa shot a confident glance towards Dolly, after raising Sili's skirt, he stretched his hand forward, Sili's leg on top of which besides the virgin blood drilled by the lewd serpent were several secretions. He laughed in his heart — — this is precisely the outcome of you looking down on me!

Aiwa ruthlessly plugged his finger inside her vagina, right now due to the effect of promoting passion, the flower bud inside Sili's vagina at once leaped up to come out, Aiwa used his finger to smoothly touch it. When Aiwa's finger touched the summit of the flower bud, Sili's whole body trembled at the same time shooting out a portion of sex fluids!

Originally already filled with intense sexual desire, now meeting with Aiwa's finger caused her desire to flare up, Sili's body trembled and wriggled: [Uuu — — very pleasurable — —]

However, Aiwa recalled his hand back, at his hand drawing back time, Sili's flesh wall exerted all of its force to clamp on his finger unwilling to let that finger depart from inside her flesh hole.

Aiwa didn't want to let Dolly look at his violently ramming Sili's body scene, hence he nodded towards her and said: [Dolly, you go and prepare warm water and guard the door outside, do not let any person come inside.]

Right now to Dolly, Aiwa's order were absolute, she quickly went to go and prepare warm water, and wait outside the door not letting any person come inside. After Dolly went outside, Aiwa directly untied his trousers, fishing out his long ago unable to hold back huge penis, that thick and solid glans glittering resembling as if applied with oil and same, he lifted up Sili's leg, propped his meat rod pouncing over to advance inside her flesh hole.

[Ahh! Very pleasurable — —]

Experiencing that thick meat rod's one touch, at once gave Sili a rich feel, as if an extremely hungry child at last found his mommy's breast and same, her flesh hole inside that already burst forth that flower bud at this moment getting rubbed by Aiwa's thick and firm root made her very comfortable. Letting her refreshed is Aiwa at once going went out throbbing and once again using his complete physical power to closely rubbed against her flower bud, that flavour was indeed indescribable in words, feeling better, her honeydew once again spurted out of her.

[Ahh — — Aiwa — — once again a little deeper!]

Sili couldn't help but hold Aiwa's buttocks, thinking of letting him stab in a little deeper, she didn't know that until now Aiwa merely held his thick rod and

pricked 2-3 times, if he went forward to stab, still can't say it would at once directly reach inside her summit till the uterus and go! Aiwa didn't want to take her life, and only thought of letting her know how much pleasure this rod can give her, let her forever remember it.

Hearing Sili's shout, Aiwa led that pike towards the apex making it bump into a section, this let Sili's whole body's desire burst forth and come out, as if all the nerves were concentrated at that one place, a spell of pain accompanying a hard to resist pleasure let Sili loudly shout out.

[Sili, are you all right?]

Dolly was at outside the door hearing that heart tearing lung splitting kind of shouting sound, caused her to become more anxious. However Aiwa hadn't allowed her to come in, so she stood there guarding the door preventing any person from going inside, thereupon she merely pushed open a small part of the door to watch the circumstances inside, seeing Aiwa pulling Sili's two jade legs, her continuously moving buttocks, she still was able to hear the sounds of ramming and moving caused by the sexual secretions floating out from inside Sili's flesh hole.

[Ah — —unbearable la — — oh — —]

Aiwa's strong attacks at once made it unable for Sili to resist, she felt a huge power being pulled from her body time, as Aiwa suddenly pulled out his meat rod from inside her body.

After Sili once again spurted a portion of sex fluids, her body fell limp on top of the bed.

She felt her whole body lacking in strength, all of her bones becoming weak. Her skirt was lifted by Aiwa exposing her two snow white long legs and her that secret region, she didn't have the least bit of strength to tidy up.

Since Aiwa was good at promoting passion, naturally he was also good at restraining passion; he silently read a few incantations in his heart, putting an end to Sili's intense desire.

[All's good now?]

Looking at Sili relieved expression, Dolly cautiously entered inside, she gazed

towards Aiwa's face, resembling a patient's family member attentively watching the doctor wishing for hope and same.

[Ought to be safe!]

Aiwa's finger was covered with viscous things secreted from inside Sili's honey path, Dolly looked, and personally washed the hands of her this magical fiancé and wiped them, resembling serving a master and same.

[Furthermore here.]

Aiwa's finger pointed towards his blood sticking meat rod in his crotch region.

Although Dolly was shy, she had already reached this stage, having no time to take things into consideration, without any option she braced herself; to stand in for Aiwa and wash the thing in between his crotch.

After washing Aiwa clean, Dolly again held Sili's skirt and pulled it down her body.

Coming out of the adjacent room, Dolly didn't feel relieved and asked Aiwa: [My older sister whether or not she will suffer a recurrence in the future?]

She was sincerely concerned about her older sister.

[To speak, resembling her this kind of illness is called as sex maniac disease, at any time recurrence can occur, however, after the therapy I gave to her once, she ought to be improbable to again repeat the crime in the near future.]

Aiwa spoke resembling a veteran doctor and same apparently knowing all the knacks about this illness.

[Then if Sili once again repeats the crime then what's to be done?]

Dolly considered far ahead matters.

[At that time once again try to find me, I again am not someone else and can give her a free treatment.]

Aiwa spoke of it as a light matter, resembling belly hurts and on kneading to treat and same.

[Then if my older sister's recurrence time if you aren't present, then won't she make a fool of oneself?]

Dolly's nature was to precisely think far ahead, if Sili's this blunder went out, her face would naturally never see the light, this would also be for the purpose of protecting the Herman Clan's reputation .

[Then there's nothing I can do, I always cannot follow her everyday behind her buttocks right? You saw that revolting behaviour of your older sister, how can she consider me as her younger sister's husband.

Aiwa deliberately let Dolly make out that he was disgusted and resentful towards Sili. Even a man of character with a wide breadth of mind also cannot let a person humiliate him is it not? [Thus to say, you also saw, just now while treating your older sister I had to have sex with her, after your sister got's married, she at once wouldn't look upon me Aiwa this kind of beautiful youngster, not know trying to find what manner grownup thing, then would her husband agree to let his wife shed clothes in front of me?]

Dolly thought a bit, wrinkling her brows, without any strategy, she could in silence pray that her older sister ten million times must not provoke the recurrence for this kind of illness.

After resting for a good while Sili slowly rose up and started tidying up.

At this time a clamour of sounds came from the entrance, Dolly went to take and look and returned back to say to Aiwa that her older brother had returned.

Federer at an earlier time already looked at Aiwa's carriage outside the entrance, carriage on top that Holtzer Clan insignia pricking inside his eyes, he still hadn't returned back at once saw, Aiwa that youngster was still at the Herman Clan as a visitor?

Federer angrily came to the drawing room towards Aiwa who was sitting there.

[Aiwa why you still haven't left, the Herman clan doesn't welcome you!]

Federer already ate a deficit by Aiwa's hand on the road, his heart's anger still haven't leaked to come out, now he stretched his hand towards the exit, wishing for Aiwa to depart.

[Don't tell me your Herman clan at once treat you visitors like this?]

Aiwa calmly shot a glance towards the overbearing Federer, crossing his legs

and said.

[Who holds you as a visitor? Our Herman family doesn't welcome you this kind of visitor!]

Federer still difficulty calmed his anger; he wished to immediately hold this sticking up one leg over the other guy and throw him out of his family's sofa.

At this time, Sili already came out from the inside the adjacent small room, her clothes neat and orderly, merely face on top still blushing, she looked towards her older brother and loudly said: [Elder brother, I haven't allowed you to treat Aiwa this way, he not only is younger sister's visitor, but also is my Sili's friend, we should treat him properly with respect ok.]

[Treat with due respect? you're telling me to treat him with respect?]

Federer naturally was referring to the matter between Ryan and him and Aiwa that happened on the road. But he still couldn't speak out the details to come, that would be greatly losing his face, a 20 year old big man was defeated by a 17 year old youngster.

[Are you going to report this to one's master, Aiwa?]

Sili looked towards Aiwa and asked. Only she was nevertheless amazed, she didn't think Aiwa being so much young, unexpectedly dare to be rude towards the Herman family's young master, a grand Junior Officer.

[Hehe , nothing to worry, only is brother-in-law playing with me that's all, I also haven't dare to be rude towards brother-in-law!]

Aiwa sat there and spoke while laughing.

[Humph!]

Looking at Sili standing behind Aiwa's side, Federer felt himself to be isolated, groaning he went out of the drawing room.

[Young master Aiwa, today you are our important visitor, I can let the kitchen prepare a banquet to entertain you.]

Sili walked at Aiwa's side, her body approaching him and gently said. [Only naturally, I still want to thank you for saving me first!]

She breath and body fragrance all provoking him.

Aiwa still had Dolly at his side, therefore he naturally couldn't be too excessive, he had no alternative but to move his body backwards, so as to not come across her that abundant erect and fascinating breasts.

Dolly at once looking at her older sister Sili being like that intimate with Aiwa, made her chest somewhat felt unwell, but it wouldn't be proper for her to show jealousy , however she is one chest unable to conceal matter girl, her displeasure was at once clear on her face.

Sili sensing her younger sister's perception, again going over to Dolly's side and she said while laughing: [Dolly , feel relieved, older sister is improbable to fight over your beloved, he forever all is my good younger sister Dolly's.]

After Sili spoke, Mrs. Groote Alice at once accepted her proposition of Aiwa's staying to have a meal: Although Federer repeatedly fought against it, but again couldn't persuade his younger sister Sili possessing the right of speech.

During the Herman Clan's lunch banquet, Aiwa showed a fitting refined and courteous display, at once letting Alice who originally because of Groote's influence had prejudice towards Kyle's family this young master, now turning into an exception she had a good opinion regarding Aiwa, she decided to use her opinion to influence her husband Groote, holding her humble daughter Dolly to be married with this elegant youngster. And Federer left home in anger after finishing his meal.

At the time of departing from the Herman family, Sili felt somewhat reluctant to part with him, at the final leaving time, Sili advanced to grip Aiwa's hand, that finger scratching inside his palm all of a sudden, at the same time slipping an item to Aiwa.

What let Aiwa feel proud was, Sili still took the initiative to stand on tiptoe rising to the extremity of her foot and all of a sudden give Aiwa a kiss, her kiss however was very penetrating, her small lilac tongue explored forward inside Aiwa's mouth, interweaving together with his tongue, so much that even Aiwa felt his tongue go sore. This girl's kiss right now compared to that time when he on her body was more meaningful, because this prime minister house young lady's profound love, was something no boy was capable to obtain.

Dolly also advanced forward to come and kiss Aiwa goodbye, Dolly and Aiwa's kiss was more enthusiastic, after all the boy she was kissing is her fiancé , therefore her kiss was very brazen, crazy and fascinating.

Waiting until Aiwa reached on the carriage afterwards, he spread out his hand, and originally what Sili passed to him stealthily was one blood jade. At Hass Empire, blood jade is a priceless treasure, it can assist in practising dou qi and letting a person increase his fighting strength by one rank.

Aiwa heard Dolly altogether with her sister's are five individuals, he still hadn't seen the rest three but their mother Alice is also pretty attractive, if there's a suitable opportunity, he really thought of holding this Prime minister Madam and obtaining them all together!

When Aiwa returned home, Margaret was already waiting for him inside his room, her whole body wearing casual clothes, Margaret seemed to be even more fascinating than when he saw her in the morning, a skin tight skirt covering up her those exceptionally long and sexy jade legs, and chest on top those two tender jade peaks fascinating a person, her each movement, causing her chest on top those to jade peaks to tremble giving rise to an attractive rhythm.

[Dear Aiwa, I have already received Your Majesty Queen's decree, ordering you to report at the imperial palace tomorrow. The pitiable thing is, after this I cannot look at my Aiwa everyday anymore.]

Margaret half joking half seriously showed her true motive. Since at Aiwa's body on top experiencing his big male thing's ferociousness, she wished to everyday have sex with Aiwa, however Your Majesty Queen's order, separated her from Aiwa, this was what sort of cruelty!

Aiwa's finger pinched Margaret's beautiful chin, looking at her deep blue color pupils, pressing his lips on top of her sexy lips, her fragrant tongue light explored forward, and Aiwa's hand followed her neckline exploring forward to grip her plump breast. Besides that casual dress, she wasn't wearing anything inside to cover her body; Aiwa's hand straightforwardly went to hold it.

Under Aiwa's big hand gripping Margaret's breast, she also responded, her two hands frantically removed Aiwa's clothes, and she quickly at once removed his formal attire making him naked. She impatiently grabbed that coarse thing

between his crotch, wishing to immediately insert it inside her lower body.

Aiwa was not at all in a hurry, slowly kissed her, pinching on top of her breasts, pinching them flat and loosening up, again pinching, and then kneading causing Margaret to feel a spell of limp and numbness.

Aiwa's one hand stretched towards inside her skirt, Margaret haven't worn anything below her skirt, only one hairy underbrush, and below that underbrush was already somewhat moist.

[Hehe, so much quickly have reaction?]

Aiwa released her lips, at the same time sending his big hand to gently caress and stroke the area between her two legs.

[All is your done harm! I was already waiting at home for you, haven't you by that goblin Dolly fascinated? I still believed you will today evening sleep with that small beauty on her bed.

Margaret protested coquettishly.

[Hehe, I want to take you to bed, what do you say?]

Aiwa dug out her flesh hole, making an obscene demonic laugh, that obscene demonic look at once wasn't in harmony with his age.

[I — — already can't wait — —]

Since its a love affair between herself and her stepson, Margaret was very excited, especially thinking that from tomorrow, her fond of this boy would at once go to the Queen, she even more hungered for him.. If it wasn't for her stepmother identity obstructing her, she thought of overnight till daybreak making love to Aiwa.

Aiwa held Margaret bringing her on top of the bed, lifting her skirt, exposing her two snow white thighs, right now that the area between those two legs had already become muddy, almost resembling a streamlet. He stooped down his head, his mouth approaching her cave entrance, extending his tongue to lick at the already moist cave mouth.

[Oh— — Aiwa — — I love you — —]

Margaret gave out a lovable call. That pink cave mouth of her couldn't help but

contract a bit, Aiwa didn't stop, he used his tip of the tongue to thrust inside that small pink tender mouth inside: that small mouth exerted itself, pressing down and clamping on Aiwa's tongue.

[Oh — I want — your long thing — —]

Margaret was worried about when General Kyle would return and disturb her happy occasion, therefore she quickly wished for Aiwa to hold that big rod and thrust it inside her flesh hole.

However Aiwa was calm, unhurriedly licking, sometimes still licking twice on top of her that sticking up flesh stem, which was naturally a woman's most sensitive region, if only the tip of the tongue swept across the flesh stem once, a woman's body would thereupon tremble, also causing her small mouth to contract spouting sexual secretions from inside.

Those milky white sexual secretions quite let a man's nature rise up. Aiwa held those milky white secretions and took them inside his mouth, sucking on top of her tender flesh on top, letting Margaret private part experience a spell of refreshment, and then more intensely provoking her sexual desire [Oh — — Aiwa, can you be a bit more quicker? If your father returns, then we won't be able to continue.]

Margaret already pulled her skirt until her waist, making effort to open her legs, letting her private parts expose themselves as much as possible to Aiwa.

To handle Margaret Aiwa at once didn't need what Yin technique, only using common methods can at once let her become lascivious, now his lips and tongue covered on top of her vulva, moving about rubbing against her tender flesh, resulting in Margaret's body to shudder all over.

[Ahhh — — very itching — —]

Her two long legs crisscrossed intertwining against each other, that move was no doubt in order raise the friction, letting the pleasure be more intense, sexual secretions increased more and more, spraying out and come all inhaled by Aiwa's mouth. Aiwa naturally hadn't forgotten that fascinating place on her body, using his two big hands to grab her two big breasts and exerted to knead and pinch them.

[Ahh — Aiwa — you'll cause my death— itching to death— quickly pierce me ———]

Margaret was unable to bear that intense pleasure, her barely relieved legs couldn't help but experience another orgasm, met by Aiwa's licking, inside that flesh hole issued plop chi plop chi kind of noises, accompanied by a spurt of sexual secretions.

Looking at Margaret like that getting worried, body wriggling violently, Aiwa rose up , holding her legs around his waist, thrusting his erect pike inside her flesh hole —-

[Oh— — pleasurable to death — —]

At last Margaret was satisfied, giving out a comfortable moan, those two legs lifting high up, wishing for Aiwa's that thick root to ram deep inside her, and Aiwa's pike entering and ramming on top of her flower bud, that kind of pleasure couldn't be compared to barely using the tongue to lick. Aiwa drew out long and deeply pierced, his rod jabbing on top of her flower bud, this with regard to Margaret , not a single chink of her flesh hole was left untouched by Aiwa's that thick meat rod, sexual secretions still overflowing out while he was pounding her.

Following Aiwa's thrusting , Margaret also discharged out, Aiwa's that meat rod compared to other males, could let a woman climax several times, also with higher intensity, if with Old Kyle perhaps he would discharge out to come but Margaret wouldn't have what feel at all but now her son Aiwa's every attack simply let her bring about intense pleasure.

Margaret already didn't know she climaxed how many times, only since Old Kyle hadn't returned she still haven't resisted much and enjoyed the moment, even bracing herself by biting her teeth.

But finally she couldn't keep bracing herself, at the time she wanted to brace her body would at once twitch. In fact her two long legs were already lifted in the sky not receiving her control. At this time she was waiting for Aiwa to stop his attack , but his meat rod still was firm and erect covered in her sexual secretions, enjoying the contractions by her flesh wall.

[Ahhh —— you how still haven't ejaculated?]

Margaret evoked her body to come and see Aiwa's lower body, he was still thrusting inside her flesh but that guy was still like tat firm erect, however also from time to time still throbbed inside her meat cave, letting her feel a beautiful rhythm

[You want to help me ejaculate?]

Aiwa's two hand's gently caressed her two plump breasts, as if kneading and pinching two big steamed buns.

[This still isn't difficult?]

Margaret's two eyes blurred looking at the long thing between Aiwa's crotch, right now every nerve inside her body was already penetrated by pleasure, however she naturally wished to serve Aiwa. She reached out her hand towards Aiwa's thigh gripping that thick root, delivering itself to her mouth, extending her tongue to come out an lick on top of that popping veined hyperaemic meat rod, Aiwa looked down to see her soft tongue deftly lick his that meat rod, a wonderful feel spread out from that region to every part of his body. Her hand held that penis brining that glans towards her mouth lifting her head, lusciously looking at Aiwa she asked: [This kind is comfortable?]

Aiwa moved forwards a bit, his meat rod penetrating inside her, his whole male root delivering inside to go in and now thrusting inside Margaret's small mouth similar to before that flesh hole, her lips tightening, her mouth's and vagina's temperature at the same time increased, that tepid male root of Aiwa once more expanded, making it unable for Margaret to accept it.

Aiwa's crotch that thick meat rod entered and exited inside Margaret's small mouth, buthe didn't dare to insert very deep, after all she isn't Young Lady Ruth, doing do that could injure his stepmother, even can endanger her life, because his male root was very thick, it could block Margaret's throat and choke her, he hadn't thought of making his step mother take this kind of risk.

He wasn't much addicted to thrusting inside her mouth, simply thinking of his step mother's anus, his finger slid down from her underbelly, crossed over that muddy deep valley, jabbing at her anus on top :[Here can?]

Aiwa gave a obscene demonic laugh, he thought , most woman would not necessarily agree regarding that region, however Margaret frank and straight

forward gave her response, adjusting her body, bringing her anus towards Aiwa inviting his penis, carefully looking that chrysanthemum line between already was covered a milky white sticky thing, precisely from her main hall and flowed over. Aiwa's erect rod slowly pushed to enter, simply slipping inside her anus, unexpectedly swallowing whole of Aiwa's long thing.

At this kind of hidden flesh hole inside, Aiwa at once pierced very brazenly, he didn't need to worry anymore about injuring his step mother's body, what made him more refreshed was that Margaret's that chrysanthemum entrance unexpectedly offered a powerful contracting force, clamping around his meat rod ruggedly, if it weren't for Aiwa's strength being very large, then thinking to take out would still would need him to expend a little energy and Margaret to expand her whole energy, Aiwa pierced vigorously, also rubbing intensely bringing about pleasure to Margaret.

[Ah— very hot—]

Margaret met with that intense teasing couldn't help but shout out loudly, that meat rod rubbing against her resembled a small fire stick and same hot and pleasurable. Experiencing the most pleasure however was still Aiwa, that as much as one likes unconstrained feel really couldn't be matched, he bravely as if going to war, directly rammed at that Margaret's chrysanthemum entrance with an unable to grasp rhythm. After continuing the war for half an hour, Aiwa was still erect, simply haven't any omen of ejaculating and Margaret's anus already giving one kind of burning feel she really was unable to press on.

[Oh – Aiwa, unbearable —- very hot—]

Margaret as if staying away from his intense attack, also didn't let him pierce inside her.

[But I still haven't released!]

Aiwa felt unwell.

[How about using here?]

Margaret's two hands clasped her breasts, letting them stick together, Aiwa already understood the idea thinking to oneself : [This is one very good method] ,thereupon he from Margaret's anus pulled out his meat rod , again inserting

them between her soft breasts going inside those plump rich breasts, his rod was very long, inserted at one end and straightway coming out of the other end, that lustrous glans at once resembling one meat sewn drilled serpent and same.

Here although didn't Margaret's anus that kind of vigour, but instead soft and very flexible, rubbing a feel. That meat rod inserted between those breasts, at once let him immediately feel to move, precisely moving around several hundred times, that fast rubbing let him at last near his climax, he suddenly felt that essence going to twitch and spurt time, he immediately drew out that meat rod from Margaret's breasts, milk white semen ejaculating from that meat rod's crux layer by layer spurted out, shooting at all over Margaret's lovely face.

[Aiwa, are you also going to shoot like this all over the Queen's face?]

A little later, Margaret curiously asked.

TLN : With this Book 1 i.e Volume 1 Ends!! I shall start translating Book 2/Volume 2 in the next 2 days.

Chapter 1 : Entering the Imperial Palace

Volume 2 Chapter 1

Entering the Imperial Palace

TLN: Changes: Jance —→ Jancy

The sun rose up higher than a bamboo pole, similar to a large fire ball hanging in the East sky, and the sunlight like gilded steel wires running into Earth.

Queen Sofia sat upright inside a rattan weaved hundred year old rattan chair, with a huge parasol propped over the head, surrounded by a group of palace maids as well as a few personal imperial guards.

Those imperial guards wore a long sword at their waist, majestically standing around a radius of 10m from the Queen, their keen perception abilities observing the circumstances inside that perimeter. All possible dangerous elements were perfectly covered inside the perception of those imperial guards.

Following a palace maid, Aiwa walked over towards the Queen's resting area, passing through an artificial lake en route; a pool raised by the Queen, which was also her bathing and swimming region during summer. The lake water was crystal clear; even the fishes roaming inside were clearly visible.

[Walk this side.]

The maid pointed her finger towards the lake's narrow shore and said to Aiwa. Since it was his first time entering the imperial palace, Aiwa was still a bit nervous, whatever the palace maid said, he quickly followed up, not daring to make a slipup.

Aiwa walked forward, being careful of the lane under his foot, from time to time looking towards that huge parasol, measuring his distance from Her Majesty* Queen. His every step made Aiwa more nervous. This didn't resemble

their last meeting, because looking at the faraway Queen attended by a group of people made Aiwa feel, that when meeting the Queen alone, she would act kindly but in front of these many faces she would definitely be serious, this was the main reason for Aiwa's nervousness.

**TLN: From now on whenever someone is talking about the queen 'Her Majesty' would be used and when they are talking to the Queen and addressing her 'Your Majesty' would be used.*

When Aiwa was walking, he suddenly sensed a huge fireball arriving under his foot, only listening to the sound of explosion, that fireball had already exploded in front of him. Instinctively he moved away from the lake but before he even came to his senses, another fireball exploded to his left making his body fly in the sky.

But, when his body left the ground, Aiwa discovered his body was flying towards the lake. Aiwa didn't have the ability to move in the air, so he could only let his body freely fall into the lake. [Plop!]

Aiwa fell within the water.

Although the lake water wasn't deep, it was enough to drown Aiwa, that palace maid didn't think that this boy didn't know how to swim, she simply looked at him floating and sinking.

[Gurghhgh guh]

The palace maid who made Aiwa fly and fall into the water, found the appearance of Aiwa floating and sinking to be very amusing, she couldn't help but laugh standing at the shore.

[Seegle, stop standing there being silly and quickly go in and fish him up!]

Sitting in the rattan chair, the Queen could make out that Aiwa wasn't acting but rather really didn't know swimming; she quickly gave an order to that palace maid to quickly go into the water and save Aiwa.

Hearing the Queen's command, Seegle didn't dare to laugh anymore, quickly plunging into the water, trying to save him. But by this time Aiwa had already drank two mouthfuls of water, if anyone didn't come to save him, he would have definitely drowned. However Aiwa had already left the shore, Seegle quickly tried

to grab his arm; when Aiwa who was possessed by the will to survive saw a person coming to save him, he pulled the hand trying to grab him, hanging over Seegle's body.

[Don't grab me!]

Seegle was going to be hugged by Aiwa, with their bodies still submerged in the water, her body whirled, like a fish making her way from under Aiwa's arm holding him from behind.

At this moment Aiwa felt two soft meat orbs expanding on his back, but right now he was solely occupied with trying to survive, unable to cherish the palace maid's soft body embracing him from behind.

Although Seegle's figure was very small, it emitted a vigorous qi inside the water; she swam towards the shore dragging Aiwa's body. Reaching the shore, their two bodies were drenched all over, especially Seegle, her clothes sticking on that exquisite body, with two peaks standing erect on her breasts. After looking at Aiwa's blank eyes, she forgot all about the cold lake water.

[You two quickly go and change your clothes!]

The Queen was not all angry, rather looking at Aiwa's sorry appearance she almost laughed out. But due the Queen's dignity, she resisted it.

However the few imperial guards at the Queen's side laughed heartily, they all knew that Aiwa was going to hold the same position as them becoming the Queen's imperial guard, they didn't expect this small guy would already taste Seegle's teasing. Aiwa glanced at the maliciously laughing imperial guards but didn't flare out.

Seegle held Aiwa and went to the dressing room, simply shedding her clothes she wiped her body and changed her clothes. [What should I do?]

Aiwa's whole body felt cold, it was already late autumn, with his clothes drenched, his body trembled due to the chillness.

[Take off your clothes!]

After Seegle exchanged her clothes, she was worried about Aiwa.

[Can't you bring me some clothes first?]

After suffering Seegle's teasing, Aiwa's heart wasn't reconciled, but he couldn't seize her, after all she was the Queen's chamberlain, he couldn't afford to offend her.

[I said take off then at once take off, if you don't dislike the cold then keep wearing them. I'll go.] Saying thus, Seegle turned around to leave.

[Don't I'm requesting you, bring me clothes to change, I'm freezing to death!]

Aiwa's teeth were trembling due to the cold, when Seegle was about to leave, he quickly grabbed her hand.

[Then quickly take off your clothes!]

Seegle's voice wasn't like an order, she wasn't thinking off seeing Aiwa's body, rather wanted to give a go at experiencing the wonderful feeling of being a supervisor on Aiwa, because normally she's the one obeying orders.

Aiwa had no other choice but to obey her orders and take off his clothes, anyway he was fearless of being watched by a woman, Seegle only gave a glance towards Aiwa's well-built body, taking Aiwa's clothes. Aiwa was trying to find a cloth to dry his body, but looked at the clothes in Seegle's hands becoming piping hot. Very quickly, Aiwa's clothes dried out, all this happened in a blink.

[So fierce?]

Aiwa had never before seen such a magical skill and couldn't help but exclaim in astonishment. Seegle proudly laughed, throwing Aiwa's clothes back to him, she turned around to leave the room.

Aiwa followed behind her returning in front of the Queen.

Looking at them, the imperial guard captain walked from the behind the Queen, he sized up Aiwa, asking: [Since you are thinking of becoming Her Majesty's imperial guard, what ability do you have?]

From those words, Aiwa could already feel a cold air coming over from the counterpart's body, without enough time to evade, he could only meet with that force, that huge force attacked towards Aiwa's navel. Aiwa had no choice but to disregard using his body's power and used his dou qi to resist. The two portions

of power knocked against each other, giving rise to an explosion, Aiwa was knocked back four-five steps by that path of cold air before settling his footsteps, if it weren't for him already preparing to retreat, he would definitely been injured by that force.

[Haha Haha, — — — — You this youngster aren't able to withstand even 30% of my strength, and still think to protect Her Majesty Queen? Are you even able to protect yourself?]

The imperial guard captain burst out with laughter, however the Queen merely smiled at Aiwa, she knew, being able to resist her imperial guard captain's this one hit, that was what kind of thing, and Aiwa was still a child that's all.

[Rudolph, if a 17 year old youngster is able to receive your hit, then will you still be able to remain as captain?]

The Queen sneered towards Rudolph and said. In her heart, Aiwa was far more adorable than this competitive imperial guard captain, if it wasn't for her safety, she absolutely didn't want this uncommon man waiting at her side! Although his image wasn't ugly, but Queen Sofia wasn't fond of his character at all.

[Your Majesty, that doesn't mean you must let a useless man be at your side? Furthermore, what I did was for his own good, if a person knew General Kyle's son was like a dog in a manger, isn't that losing General Kyle's face?]

Rudolph thought of shaming Aiwa, and also showing off his virtue in front of the Queen.

[I think you have already spoken enough, Rudolph.]

The Queen impatiently interrupted Rudolph, just now Seegle teasing Aiwa was still acceptable, as it was only a joke, but Rudolph's attitude was far from a joke. The Queen's heart was very clear; Rudolph was from the Herman faction, Prime Minister Groote's person. Being her Imperial guard captain, he frequently overstepped his authority making dealings for Prime Minister Groote; this made the Queen be disgusted with him.

Hearing the Queen berate him, Rudolph still wasn't reconciled and simply asked Aiwa: [Then what special ability do you have?]

Looking at Rudolph still bothering him, even after the Queen spoke in behalf of

him, Aiwa also understood that this imperial guard captain wasn't a troop from his father's faction, therefore he simply laughed: [I naturally have my special abilities.]

[Then quickly speak; I'll also listen?]

Rudolph didn't think this 17 year old youngster could have what special ability, crossing his hands; he waited for Aiwa's performance.

[I can only let Her Majesty Queen listen,]

An arrogant expression couldn't help but appear on Aiwa's face. And it was this expression that was admired by Queen Sofia. A few days ago, when Aiwa was embarrassing Federer, he was precisely making this expression. Looking at Aiwa's expression, Queen Sofia's heart couldn't help but be moved. Because in front of her, there were very few, even almost none who could be so confident and show off an arrogant expression like Aiwa; furthermore this expression was directed against her imperial guard captain, if it weren't for being born in the illustrious Mitchell family, Queen Sofia would have already expelled Rudolph from the imperial palace. But in capacity as the Queen she had to balance each and every clan's power, but what at least made the Queen satisfied was his emotionless loyalty and devotion towards her.

Aiwa's these words, made it difficult for Rudolph to retort, because this matter involved the Queen's dignity. Who would dare to challenge the Queen's dignity?

Queen Sofia finished laughing and waved her hand calling Aiwa over. He quickly stepped over towards her, moving his mouth near her ear, he said in a small voice: [I can make this arrogant chief guard take off his trousers in public, does Your Majesty believe or not?]

The Queen laughed looking towards the chief guard, not at all convinced, but this matter aroused her complete interest: [Really?]

[If only this chief guard's body isn't very ugly, then I can make him reveal his body in public.]

Aiwa confidently said.

[Good, let me take a look at what you learned from your 2 years study at the East Empire!]

The Queen made a beautiful smile, revealing anticipation inside her bright pupils.

Aiwa retreated two steps, gathering his dou qi at his palms. Soon a mild red color fog enveloped the 4-5 Zhang* empty space in front of him. And that chief guard Rudolph was in the middle of that fog.

**TLN: 1 Zhang = 10 Chinese feet length = 3.3m*

Due to the stimulating passion effect of this fog, all person's present here naturally felt an urge, however since Aiwa was concentrating his thoughts on Rudolph's body, other's didn't have a big reaction, but Rudolph was somewhat confused and disoriented.

Using that screen of fog, Aiwa made his lewd serpents appear, quietly flying inside Rudolph's clothes, those two lewd serpents not only worked on woman but also had the same result regarding a man's sexual desire. Meeting with the attack of the two lewd serpents simultaneously, in that distracted feeling; Rudolph saw his admired woman showing off her flirtatious behavior in front of him, making him follow up with joy.

Rudolph liked Queen Sofia in his heart, but afraid of her prestige, he never dared to hold an improper image of Her Majesty Queen in his thoughts; merely his heart coveted a maid at her side. Aiwa had already noticed which palace maid was coveted by Rudolph and synthesized that palace maid's figure in front of him. Rudolph mind was already muddled by this time; his body threw itself over and over again towards that inexistent palace maid's image, completely forgetting he was in front of the dignified inviolable Queen.

Under Aiwa's control, Rudolph performed a sumo wrestling technique, leaving the imperial guards and palace maids in an uproar, but they also didn't expect he would start taking his clothes off in front of the Queen.

When the imperial guard captain was almost going to take off his trousers, the Queen quickly ordered a person to stop him. Aiwa also withdrew his yin technique.

The Queen naturally knew Rudolph was manipulated under Aiwa's strange technique, therefore she didn't think of blaming this loyal and devoted imperial guard captain; however his public disgrace, made her even more disgusted with

him.

After being stopped by a person, Rudolph felt like he woke up from a dream, seeing the surrounding palace maids and imperial guards all cover their mouths and laugh, he didn't know what kind of blunder he had committed just now, seeming like an unfathomable mystery to him.

Finally, Her Majesty Queen was able to experience the reason for Dragon Blood Evaluation Committee Member – Ruth's recommendation; it was due to Aiwa's sorcery. She had merely heard about this sorcery before, but never seen it with her own eyes; today she had widened her scope. However, having this sorcerer at her side, she felt really afraid, she was nervous thinking what if there's a day he set about on her, using the same method to order her this Queen to disgrace herself in public, if so, then wouldn't those people who were coveting the Kingship use this as a pretext to incite trouble?

[Apparently making you my imperial guard would be greatly wronging you, why don't you become my masseur?]

Her Majesty Queen had consulted with a newcomer for the first time, as for the other imperial guards, they were simply jealous to death. Becoming Her Majesty Queen's masseur, this was what kind of honorable position! Which one of those imperial guards at her side didn't wish to fish up this assignment? Unfortunately a newcomer youngster had fished it up today! Alas! It seems that, Her Majesty Queen was still partial towards the Holtzer family.

Hearing the Queen's order, Aiwa was happy, although his proud moment flashed past in a moment, but even if it was so, it inevitably made those people who hate the Holtzer Clan jealous in their heart.

[I wish to obey all the arrangement of Your Majesty Queen's, Your Majesty's needs is Aiwa's mission in life!]

This bureaucratic line was taught to him by his father, as soon as he opened his mouth, it already came out.

A 17 year old youngster speaking such a pleasant thing in this situation, made Sofia feel the deep veneration Old General Kyle had. She thought, he really is a General's house tiger cub, even obeying orders resembled like this!

[Good, from today onwards, you're going to follow me at my side. I'm going to rest now!]

The Queen seemed as if she had finished some amazing event, but Aiwa knew, this was only the ceremony for a small attendant entering the castle, was there a need for mustering such large forces? If he was being conferred an official title, then it wasn't known it would have been how grand!

Actually what Aiwa didn't know was, that the biggest reason the Queen held such a grand ceremony, was that he was an important member of the Holtzer Clan, this showed how much value Her Majesty Queen attached to the Holtzer Clan, therefore she let the palace maids and imperial guards at her side look, as among them, there were many members from different clans of Hass empire, they added interest to everything they saw at the Queen's side and reported back to their clans, which would then disseminate out through their family members mouths.

Currently, there wasn't much difference between the strength of the Holtzer Clan and other clans, the Queen needed this clan to expand more, so as to not let his family encounter any resistance, this kind of talent guaranteed her empire's safety and stability. If she let a clan's power become too large, then it would threaten her position. The Queen relied upon her balancing ability to make a threat drop until it was minuscule.

The sun blazed more fiercely, the huge umbrella over the Queen's head shielded her from the sun covering her side in a relaxing coolness. Besides a few imperial guards and person palace maids, with Rudolph and head palace maid Jancy tightly guarding the Queen, all the others returned to their posts. If only the Queen had these two at her side, any situation could be easily dealt with, even if the opponent was the empire's first class expert.

But Aiwa was clueless; he didn't know his specific work. Looking at him standing there foolishly, Seegle who teased him before stealthily laughed. Although before he came, she had teased him after consulting with the palace maids, she was a bit fond of this youngster; however she was still unclear whether the Queen did or didn't like this Aiwa, if the Queen received Aiwa because of male love, then they could only helplessly watch.

[Don't stand there confused, follow me.]

Saying thus, Seegle pulled the corner of Aiwa's jacket and lead him, she very much regretted not carefully enjoying his healthy and beautiful figure inside the changing room.

Jancy accompanied the Queen entering her lounge, and Rudolph went outside to guard the main hall. There was his duty range, if someone burst inside the main hall, then that would make it difficult for Rudolph to escape this guilt. And if anything happened inside, then it was Jancy's responsibility, therefore, Jancy and Rudolph's responsibilities were clear cut.

Aiwa wasn't clear where was he stationed, and could only obey this teasing palace maid following behind her. Aiwa was curious about this maid who could use her hands to dry off his clothes; he really didn't expect that this seemingly ordinary palace maid had this kind of skill. At last he could enjoy the beauty and charm of her body from her back.

[Where am I stationed?]

Aiwa couldn't help but ask, anyway he knew, without the Queen's order; he couldn't enter her lounge as he wished.

[You're stationed here.]

Seegle's finger pointed towards the lounge door and said. Aiwa obediently stood there. [Stand properly there, you must not indulge in fantasy about the Queen!]

Seegle advanced forward, revising Aiwa's stance, but her small hand very deftly held the male thing at Aiwa's crotch once. She face became red, supplementing the loveliness of her bashful appearance.

Being held by Seegle like that, Aiwa's thing between his crotch, in a flash made a conditional reflex springing up, frightening Seegle who was taking liberties with Aiwa, she jumped to the other side of the door.

[Hehe, if you like playing like this, when we are alone I can let you play as much as you want!]

Aiwa lecherously laughed towards Seegle.

Seegle's expression seemed to say: [You'll keep your promise?]

But thinking of this humble child Aiwa holding her, she thought: [See if I don't play you to death!]

Facts were the proof, as the Queen's chamberlains, Aiwa and Seegle didn't have any private time to play together, beside the early rush hour these two people were always guarding outside the door, and couldn't meet alone at any other time.

Almost a week went past after Aiwa and Seegle were stationed outside the door.

Inside this corridor, there weren't any other people, only they two, and Jancy always accompanied Her Majesty Queen inside, she was also the person who transmitted the Queen's orders, whatever the Queen had to speak was passed through Jancy's mouth.

[Aiwa, you come in.]

When Aiwa and Seegle were standing outside the door sending flirting glances at each other, the lounge's door suddenly opened, Jancy came out walking.

Aiwa pointed his finger at his nose somewhat unconvinced and asked: [Me?]

After coming for one week, he still wasn't summoned by the Queen, this sudden summon, made him felt somewhat out of the norm.

Jance coldly looked towards Aiwa and said. She didn't like to talk much with other people, she wished for a person to immediately set about after hearing her orders, seeing Aiwa so much dillydallying, she had experienced this for the first time.

Looking at Jancy's cold face, Aiwa as somewhat afraid, he obediently followed her inside, during that moment, Seegle made a wry face towards Aiwa.

[Your Majesty has what command?]

Aiwa saw the Queen lying back inside her chair. [A week has passed since you arrived right?]

[Answering Your Majesty, a week has passed.]

Aiwa didn't know the Queen's intentions, making his heart restless. His eyes scanned around, fearing he did what rude thing to this beautiful Queen.

[In the capacity of my masseur, you still haven't massaged me, today I was thinking of testing you skill, how?]

The Queen's bright eyes fell on Aiwa's body sizing him up, making him even more uneasy.

[I wish to serve Your Majesty!]

Aiwa's heart throbbed, thinking: [I can at last approach Her Majesty Queen's jade body!] What was regretful is, Jancy this 10th rank ability maid was standing opposite to the Queen with no intention of leaving.

[You this maid, what are you doing still standing at there? In any case this is massage time, cant you withdraw?] But this was only thought in Aiwa's heart, not daring to speak out, merely crossing her sight made him more terrified.

[Come over to this side.]

The Queen's words were full of languid enticement. Aiwa bypassed the huge office table, standing behind the Queen, [Your Majesty, can I begin now?]

The Queen didn't speak, rather shut her eyes, slightly raising her head, hinting to begin, this sort seemed as if she just had the strength to move that head.

Aiwa cautiously held his two hands on Her Majesty Queen's shoulder, his 10 fingers kneading the Queen's smooth and fragrant flesh, lightly pressing them.

[Oh — —]

The Queen moaned softly, clearly Aiwa's hands made her very comfortable. Aiwa's baseless worry also came down.

The Queen wore one loose pajama, since she was lying inside the chair, Aiwa could look at the scene near the Queen's navel from the neckline, although he couldn't see the whole scene, but the half hills revealing inside from the Queen's silky bosom were already enough enticement for Aiwa, making his body excited.

[You didn't only learn how to massage shoulders right?]

The Queen was a bit discontent. Aiwa's heart became nervous once more. His

heart spoke — — [I am thinking of kneading your breasts twice, can I dare?]
Aiwa looked towards Jancy; she was standing at a distance of 1 Zhang from the Queen, although she wasn't looking this side, Aiwa could feel her complete attention was on top of his body as if he was a spy conspiring to murder the Queen, making him feel humiliated.

Since the Queen spoke, that moving on her fragrant shoulders wasn't enough to satisfy her. He didn't have any other option but to move towards her arms.

Separated by the thin pajamas, Aiwa felt the exquisite skin of Her Majesty Queen, was similar to smooth silk, whenever his hand massaged and kneaded on her two hands, it made her pajamas pull to either side, oppressing her chest, making those two peaks on her breasts even more tall, he could clearly see the two plump erect nipples on top of Her Majesty Queen's breasts. When the pajamas returned by sliding, it naturally rubbed against her pointed nipples, this provocation quickly made the Queen's nipple stand erect.

Aiwa could not only enjoy the Queen's elegant moving chest, the Queen's body also distributed a enticing and fascinating body fragrance, this spell of fragrant flesh drilled inside Aiwa's nostrils, seeping inside his lungs, making his beast blood boil. He thanked the huge chair screening him, not so, his male root would have firmly risen against the Queen's back.

Aiwa strived to stabilize his breathing, after his hands kneaded those two lotus arms, they quickly moved towards the Queen's face. He massaged her earlobes, kneaded her chin, again lightly caressed her cheeks, this massage method can not only loosen a person's muscles, it actually also had a beautifying effect.

When Aiwa was massaging her face, he took note of her two thin fragrant lips, her lips were more erotic than any woman, if she wasn't the Queen, Aiwa would have already raised her face and kissed her fragrant lips.

P.S : If any of the readers are interested, please visit this blog link made by my colleague regarding one of the most outdated system that still exists in this modern era — Caste System — So here's the link :

Chapter 2: The Queen's Trap!

Volume 2 Chapter 2

The Queen's Trap

Aiwa caressed Queen Sofia's cheeks, his sight moving over her tender swollen breasts from time to time, her breath followed the up and down movement of those elegant peaks, those sexy and enticing breasts brought ripples inside his heart, making his beast blood boil, but he made great effort to restrain himself, actually his rushed breath had already exposed his uneven mood.

The Queen was not at all interested regarding a 17 year old youngster's excitement; she even turned her body, letting her head directly stick on Aiwa's chest, that soft erect chest pressing towards him.

Aiwa was attracted by the Queen's alluring breast peaks, his hand moved along her arms, during the massage, accidentally touching her breasts, but that affair was also done in a split moment, he didn't dare to put his hand on the Queen's breasts; that would be being rude to her, clearly asking to be punished.

The Queen didn't care at all about Aiwa's accidental touch; she merely closed her eyes enjoying Aiwa's massage.

Aiwa massaged the Queen's body for an hour; his hands were already sour due to exhaustion, at this time the Queen made him stop. When he was leaving the Queen's lounge, Aiwa quite difficulty pressed his legs together and left. He was anxious that the rising tent caused by his penis would be seen by Jancy.

Standing outside the door, Aiwa's mood didn't settle, he had seen many woman and even abused a beautiful woman like Ruth, however the Queen was no ordinary woman, although he drooled with desire for the Queen, he didn't dare to take small advantages of her. This was the most painful thing for a man.

[What happened?]

Seegle sized up Aiwa, seeing him take deep breaths, and seeing the risen tent in his crotch region, she was puzzled and asked.

[No, nothing -- --]

Aiwa nervously swiped the sweat on his forehead. On such a cold day he was unexpectedly sweating, looking at this Seegle couldn't help but laugh.

[In a while our work will be done, you come to my room, I have a good thing for you to eat!]

Seegle sent a charming glance towards Aiwa. She could see that just now Aiwa went in and received the Queen's charm and enticement but he couldn't release it out. Seegle quickly thought of getting this handsome 17 year old youngster's love, she thought: [At least have to give my first kiss to him.] Hearing Seegle's vague provocative invitation, Aiwa's heart started to throb, thinking to himself: [Unable to release my beastly desires on the Queen's body, if able to release them on Seegle's body; that is also quite good!] Thereupon Aiwa vaguely responded to Seegle's invitation.

One quarter hour later, these two finished their work, the other shift palace maid replaced them. Taking advantage of the situation, Aiwa quickly followed behind Seegle into her room. As soon as he entered he quickly held Seegle's fine waist, that hard penis pressing closely against her underbelly.

There were no need for words anymore, Seegle was also impatient, their two mouths pressed together intensely sucking each other.

Aiwa kissed her fragrant lips, kneading and pinching her petite but stylish breasts. Seegle had never before experienced being kneaded by a man, not know much, her body quickly became weak due to Aiwa's actions.

[En -- -- Oh -- --]

Seegle was unable to restrain her emotions and moaned, being careful that her moan wasn't transmitted outside. The patrolling palace maids heard the strange sounds from Seegle's room and quickly gathered outside the door listening carefully. They suddenly pushed open the door of Seegle's room, what reflected inside the patrolling palace maid's two eyes was the scene of Aiwa and Seegle

embracing each other and kissing.

Seegle and Aiwa were delivered in front of the Queen, according to rules, those doing promiscuous things inside the imperial palace were met with a severe punishment, and Aiwa never thought that he had only hugged and kissed Seegle but still had to accept this punishment, however what he didn't know was those who were caught doing adulterous behavior inside the imperial palace were met with what sort of punishment.

The Queen's face was expressionless, Aiwa guessed, the Queen was surely going to accept his excuse of the first awakening of love and pardon him, perhaps give some face for the sake of his father. Therefore, when he stood in front of the Queen, Aiwa wasn't nervous, rather thought the Queen would give a favor outside the rules, making him feel guilt.

[Jancy, tell him, what punishment is given to those who conduct such a taboo.]

The Queen said with a calm and kind tone.

[Carrying a promiscuous love affair inside the imperial palace is met with a punishment.]

Jancy said with a serious expression, coldly looking towards Aiwa and Seegle.

Seegle lifted her head towards the Queen and Jancy making a puzzled expression.

Seegle was common born, and also had recently entered the imperial palace, she had only heard that one couldn't act recklessly inside the imperial palace, but she didn't know this punishment was what, also the seriousness of the punishment. But hearing 'punish' that word, quickly made her body tremble, assuming it had to be a very fierce punishment.

[You wish to accept the penalty or wish to be under room arrest?]

Jancy asked the two individuals.

[Penalty is what? Room arrest is what?]

Aiwa opened his mouth and asked. He was a knowing the in's and out's guy, if he didn't think there was any problem, then he would at once accept it.

[Penalty is accepting cat punishment, letting my small adorable cat inside the

crotch region of your trousers for a quarter hour time. As for room arrest – one month!]

Jancy bluntly said.

Aiwa and Seegle looked at each other, he thought: [If it's room arrest, then 1 month time, still can choke to death, and isn't accepting cat punishment only for a quarter hour time? Even if it was difficult, it wouldn't kill a person right?]

Although Aiwa was young, he understood some worldly matters, for the sake of his father's face; the Queen wouldn't be likely to kill them while they were alive.

[I wish to accept cat punishment!]

Aiwa said raising his hand, looking towards Seegle. [I also wish to accept cat punishment.]

Seegle also didn't wish to lose a whole month's freedom. To say the outside world was a very beautiful thing for a youthful girl going through her prime, if she was shut inside a room, then it would be a great injustice. However she also didn't know this cat punishment would be how fierce. She had never seen a kitten, very adorable! Isn't just letting a kitten stay at the crotch region inside the trousers for a quarter hour time? How could it be that fierce.

[You two follow me.]

Jancy shot a cold and detached expression towards Aiwa, turning around to leave the Queen's lounge.

Aiwa and Seegle glanced at each other, following Jancy they reached a special room, there were all kind of torture instruments here, after looking once, Aiwa was frightened. Don't tell me they were going to use iron chains to bind him? Which country's punishment have not excused a senior official, although Aiwa couldn't be considered as a senior official, no matter what he was his family's only son, after looking at the monk faces and Buddha faces, also if they used that red hot flatiron to brand him, that would be his Holtzer family's disgrace.

[Feel relieved, these equipment aren't going to be used on you, inside the imperial palace the penalty for promiscuous activities is accepting cat punishment.]

Jancy went to the corner of the reception room, Aiwa and Seegle followed

Jancy to that dark nook, only to see inside that dark nook there were two bright eyes looking at them.

[Jesse, come over!]

After Jancy gave out a shout, a cat suddenly appeared from within the darkness, it's height nearing 2 chi*, a huge plump figure, set its sights on Aiwa and Seegle.

TLN: 1 chi = 1 Chinese foot = 0.33m.

[Chi -- --]

That cat's yell didn't resemble [Meow meow] that kind of cry, that [Chi] seemed like it was protesting towards these two persons.

Jancy gripped the claw of the cat named Jessie, those claws were extending out as if they were sharp fishhooks, if grabbed by them, blood was sure to flow, inevitably leaving a deep pitch on the skin, maybe they could even tear down their flesh. Especially seeing the cat's expression, hiding a ferocious qi inside, could let a man shudder after their sights met.

[Aiwa, you are General Kyle's son, I'm going to give another opportunity to you, are you going to accept the cat punishment or the 1 month room arrest?]

Jancy coldly looked towards Aiwa, after all Aiwa came from a special background, she also didn't want to offend this general house's sole son, someday he was sure to have many achievements, if she did a small favor for him using her power, after his meteoric success, it would be easy to let him to buy her own veil.

[Then can she also have another chance?]

Aiwa pointed his finger towards Seegle and spoke, because of the love affair with him Seegle also had to receive punishment, if he abandoned Seegle this pitiful girl, then that would not be proper, making him feel guilty; accepting difficult things were the ability of a genuine man.

[She may not, she is of common birth, and can only receive the punishment.]

Jancy harshly said. This also wasn't strange, Aiwa would leave the Queen in the future, becoming a high-ranking military officer leading a party of troops,

but Seegle could only be a maid her whole lifetime, only if she is demanded by a noble birth person, she could at most become a small concubine.

[Then I wish to accept the same punishment as her.]

Aiwa firmly spoke. His bravery was out of Jancy's expectation; she believed he would surely use this chance. [You'll not regret it?]

Jancy once more reminded Aiwa.

[I only want to know, your cat is a male cat or a mother cat?]

Aiwa slyly asked, his face didn't show the fear he had before.

Jancy strangely asked: [It is a mother cat, why do you want to know?]

Jancy thought in her heart: [Don't tell me you are going to rape it after it gets into your trousers?] [Hehe. I prefer a mother cat.] Aiwa laughed and glanced towards the nervous Seegle. After Seegle looked at those sharp claws, she was dazed, and Aiwa was still cheerful and witty, she couldn't understand. [Aiwa, this is my mistake, you by all means must not suffer with me, can you accept the room arrest?]

Seegle grabbed Aiwa's arm and implored. Right now she felt a deep guilty conscience towards seducing Aiwa. If it weren't for her taking the initiative to tease Aiwa, he also was improbable to receive this kind of implication.

[Seegle, since this a matter between us, how can I run away alone? Let's get punished together!]

Aiwa acted like a hero who was unafraid of death, neither shivering nor having fear.

[That's good, come, receive the cat punishment!]

Jancy gave a lovable shout, two palace maids came in, they separated stopping near Seegle's skirt and Aiwa's trousers, afterwards stood aside waiting for the next order.

[Who's going to come first?]

Jancy looked towards Aiwa who was showing a fearless of death appearance thinking of letting him eat some sufferings; apparently this youngster still didn't

know the cat punishment's fierceness. Merely she was a bit anxious, if she let her cat defame this guy, then someday she wouldn't get the opportunity to torment this youngster. Because from the external point of view, she knew Aiwa was an unusual guy, merely even the Queen hadn't eaten, she could only look. Right now she still couldn't penetrate the Queen's thoughts, therefore she didn't dare to very fiercely torment Aiwa, she merely thought of letting him taste the flavor of this cat punishment.

[I'll come first!]

One maid came over and untied Aiwa's belt, although the palace maid was one year older than Aiwa, taking off the waistband for a young boy made her blush warming her heart, when she was untying that belt, this palace maid still exploited her authority, looking towards the crotch inside the trousers, looking at Aiwa's big penis inside that faint darkness, this was it still in its primitive state, without an erection, if it became hyperemic, it would be a wonder if it didn't frighten her to confusion.

At this moment another palace maid had already held the cat in her embrace. That cat which appeared very ferocious, was obediently curling up in the maid's embrace, that soft and plump body pressing against the region between the palace maid's breasts; looking towards the palace maids well developed bosom, Aiwa's that below region thing at once soared high. Actually Jancy was prettier, and also sexy, merely that cold expression of hers made her appear cool and elegant, unable to make Aiwa's nature rise.

As soon as the palace maid held the cat in her embrace, Aiwa had already started reciting the incantation in silence, going along the course to use his yin technique. Not matter it was a mother cat, Aiwa thought of using the yin technique to make it more docile when it was inside the crotch region in his trousers, if it didn't scratch his chap then all was good.

After Aiwa moved his dou qi, he secretly covered only the cat using his yin technique, after a second, the cat didn't know what to do, under the provocation of Aiwa's yin technique, it's passion quickly appeared out, Aiwa perfectly controlled the provocation, not letting the cat show excess sexual desire, simply making it more docile. However Jancy didn't notice this change. Under her order, the palace maid hugging the cat arrived in front of Aiwa.

This palace maid also seemed to have a generous heart, not at all letting the cat injure Aiwa, therefore, she slowly released the mother cat inside Aiwa's trousers, she was anxious that the cat would suddenly flare up, As a result, she also thought of using her power to help Aiwa, she cautiously dropped the cat inside that region, her two caressing the cat's body, so as to not let it get irritated, she had personally seen the tragic sight of a maid who accepted the cat punishment. After the event, that palace maid's lower body was dripping with blood all over.

During the time she was caressing the cat, her small hand inadvertently came across Aiwa's big male root, when she lifted her hand, she furthermore held his thick male root lightly holding it once, after she raised her head, blushing all over, an impulse started to jump around her navel.

[Why haven't you still started?]

Jancy stood there seeing that palace maid's petty maneuver, one first awakening of love palace maid was at this time taking small advantages of an individual, feeling a man with her hands, this also isn't an irregular affair, therefore, Jancy acted like she didn't see, merely urging her to finish quickly.

[Everything's prepared good!]

The palace maid hurriedly took her hand out, standing to the side. She silently prayed in her heart, mother cat oh mother cat, you by no means must move around, express desire at once can! She even shut her eyes bringing her hands together to pray.

[Why are you being so concerned?]

Jancy didn't understand the reason for the palace maid's closed eyes and praying appearance. [No -- — It's nothing -- —]

The palace maid was scared as she quickly put down her hands, opening her eyes. The cat mother inside Aiwa's trousers at last began to move, however it wasn't the same movement as the time others received the cat punishment, rather it withdrew its claws, turning over, rubbing its hairy body over Aiwa's that region made it feel comfortable, even more comfortable than a woman's hand caress, at this time the hourglass to the side started measuring the time.

Aiwa couldn't help but shut his eyes.

Jancy, Seegle and all other person's anxiously looked at him, thinking: [If that cat flares up and hurts Aiwa, then he was sure to give out a heart tearing lung splitting yell], but Aiwa only shut his eyes, however he also didn't reveal an infatuated or easy look on his face, so as to not receive another penalty. He closed his eyes, putting out his neck in pain, sometimes still gritting his teeth, mouth issuing a zi zi noise.

The palace maids and Jancy knew of the cat punishments fierceness, thinking to themselves: [This Aiwa was really from the General's house, receiving such a big punishment but still not issuing a sound from his throat!] [Aaah — — —] Aiwa happily moaned, but he showed a painful expression on his face. [Aiwa, if you can't bear it, you can shout in a loud voice, no one will laugh at you.]

Seegle was already feeling sorry; she couldn't help but repeatedly remind Aiwa.

[Oh — — — Aah — —]

At the time that cat mother was turning over in his trousers, Aiwa's moans incessantly came out, even the stone-hearted Jancy was unable to bear it, but after is her carried out affair, she couldn't give in to personal considerations, therefore, although her heart sympathized for Aiwa, she could only stand there not saying a word.

The sand in the hourglass lessened little by little, to conform the curtail of Aiwa's punishment time, Seegle and Jancy from time to time looked over to that hourglass, silently looking forward to the sand inside the hourglass quickly finish falling.

One quarter time at last passed by, however, when almost a handful of sand still hadn't fallen from the hourglass, everyone clearly saw Aiwa's body tremble, it seemed as if he was a chick being teared down by a cat, Jancy immediately made a palace maid take out that cat from inside Aiwa's trousers. That palace maid believed that Aiwa was already drenched with blood being clawed by that cat's claws, but when her hand stretched inside, feeling Aiwa's leg once, she didn't find even a single scratch or injury!

That thick male root was the region the palace maid was most worried about;

her small hand brazenly felt it up, that hyperemic root again swelled up in her small hand. However, that root was nevertheless smooth, completely scar less!

The palace maid's hand continued to inspect that thick male root, but at the same time a doubtful look appeared on her face looking at Aiwa. That face was asking: [What is with this matter?] [What happened?] Jancy seeing the palace maid haven't taken her hand out of Aiwa's trousers, quickly urged her. The palace maid foolishly looked at Jancy, not knowing how to reply.

Jancy walked past, her hand stretching inside Aiwa's trouser, she was very concerned whether her cat was still alive, what she didn't expect was, that cat was obediently lying there on its stomach as if it hadn't received any order! When her hand felt another thing near the cat, she couldn't help but blush. She very strangely brought out the cat, avoiding the ears and eyes of all persons, Jancy directly tucked that cat inside Seegle's skirt.

Seegle was immediately frightened and made a big leap; she saw that cat extend its sharp claws, pressing them against her smooth skin, still not ready to let that cat tear her flesh into tatters!

The strange thing was, that cat merely wriggled inside her skirt, still extending her small tongue licking at the region from where her liquid flowed.

Seegle felt ashamed; apparently this was more difficult to bear than getting clawed by the cat.

However, gradually, that feeling became more and more pleasurable, she unceasingly moaned, she feared she would be seen through by Jancy, and put out the painful appearance she learned from watching Aiwa.

Looking at the sand inside the hourglass had almost finished falling, Jancy simply ordered the palace maid to bring out the cat. When the palace maid held the cat, she found Seegle's body also didn't have any injuries. But she didn't make a fuss about this, rather seemed very calm. After all she was also a girl, also didn't have any hatred towards her, naturally she didn't wish for the counterpart to suffer any pain.

Actually the Queen's also didn't want to let Aiwa receive many sufferings, not so, that cat punishment also wouldn't have been only for a quarter hour. Furthermore, all others didn't know, Jancy raised two cats, one was a

specialized cat which only punished bad people, resembling Aiwa this kind of child who had done his first offense, if only it was going to show a attacking nature, it could be easily handled, even if Aiwa didn't adopt that live saving yin technique, he also wouldn't have suffered a huge deficit, Jancy possessed propriety, she couldn't offend Old General Kyle's military.

[Bear in mind, your 1 month's official salary is going to be penalized!]

Looking at these two haven't suffered any injuries, Jancy's original anxiousness quickly changed into one kind of anger, adding one additional penalty. Regarding this bit, Jancy really had the authority, if she said it then she would surely do it, haven't any person who dared to negotiate with her.

[Miss Jancy — —]*

**TLN : Young lady ———> Miss*

Seegle was thinking of speaking something but looking at Jancy's excessively severe appearance, simply frightened her making her shut up.

Jancy followed the two executing punishment palace maids and went out, leaving only Aiwa and Seegle inside the room. But they didn't have the mood to carry out a love affair again, the cat punishment just now had already frightened them covering their whole body in cold sweat, although Aiwa was good at using the yin technique, that didn't guarantee its effect on the cat's body, therefore he was sweating, and speaking of Seegle, a girl's most treasured object was precisely her body, if her that smooth and tender body was clawed, what face would she have left to show to a person!

[You haven't sustained injuries right?]

Seegle naturally didn't know the reason she didn't sustain injuries was due to Aiwa's yin technique, therefore she was concerned about Aiwa's situation. She even thought of overcoming her shyness as a girl, untying Aiwa's belt and having a look inside.

[I — — It's not important.]

Aiwa also didn't dare to let Seegle have improper thoughts about him again, if again dared to let Seegle look over shedding his trousers, in this a man and a woman together situation, if he is again punished, then his luck wouldn't be this

good. However, he could also make out, Jancy tried to protect him, not so, how could it be that she didn't discover his small conspiracy?

After the two persons came out, they continued to be stationed outside the Queen's lobby not daring to neglect their work. The Queen had the power over life, killing, giving and taking, if really someone offended her, could they still happily eat fruits?

After Aiwa continued to stand guard for several days, the Queen once again called him inside. Actually this was both the lounge and work region of the Queen. Only, when receiving a chancellor, then it would have been changed to a different region. This time he was again called for a massage.

Aiwa didn't hear anything regarding the cat punishment from the Queen and he also didn't speak about it, it was as if this matter never happened at all, the Queen simply lied on the spacious chair enjoying Aiwa's meticulous massage.

Although Aiwa was bewitched several times by the turbulently moving up and down silky chest of the Queen, he didn't dare to have the intention of making a move, last time he had merely kissed Seegle, still didn't enter into the essential stage, he at once met with cat punishment, if he made a move on the Queen's body, his life was still not enough to pay for it! Thinking of here, Aiwa's original intense sexual desire quickly lowered down, even that small chap became soft, not standing up even after supporting with his hand.

Right now Aiwa was anxious about only one thing — if he continued to wait at the Queen's side, wouldn't he become a handicapped person! Because he didn't have any other choice but to make great effort to repress his emotions not letting his thoughts go towards that respect, the Queen's body had that kind of enticing power, at the time he used his power to overcome that urge, he needed to expend a large amount of essence qi.

[Aiwa, you like waiting at my side?]

The Queen asked while still keeping her beautiful eyes closed. Because she hadn't spoken for a long time, these sudden words immediately made Aiwa's heart didn't fully understand these words had appeared from where. [Like.]

By the time Aiwa understood the reason for the Queen's words, he thought of replying in a rush. [Then if you are dispatched to go the border to assume a

minor functionary, you wish to go?]

The Queen asked again. This made Aiwa really baffled.

Considering his intentions, fawning on the Queen was precisely for getting an official post, if he spoke he wished to go; then wouldn't it contradict with him just now saying he liked serving the queen at her side? If he said he wasn't willing, then that would be losing his first opportunity to go outside! Until the next time the Queen spoke again, God knows when would that time come again? Thereupon Aiwa cleverly thought and asked: [Why does Your Majesty want me to go?]

[It isn't me who wants you to go; right now I also don't have any means. Your matter from a few days ago has already spread, if I don't show a play to them, then what's the need for rules?]

The Queen meaningfully spoke her heartfelt words, as if she was completely giving thought for Aiwa.

[I thank for the Queen's beautiful thoughts. Letting me go to which border garrison?]

Aiwa didn't dare to delay, if he accepted this, then it was better for both the parties involved.

[The southern Tanzya tribes often disturb my southern frontier, needing one capable general cadre; I don't expect you to have a heroic battle with the Tanzya people, if you are able to keep the law and order of the military there that would at once be good.]

Aiwa had already heard about the southern Tanzya tribes, furthermore they followed matriarchy, each woman was bold and powerful being able to give a good fight, Federer had precisely lost several battles against them.

Although Aiwa had never treated himself as a general, but thinking of the mediocre Federer, eating defeat several times was also not a strange affair. If a person like him was able to gain victory that could be explained by one thing — the enemy was very weak! Aiwa thought of making Federer go again to that region, after he settled the law and order of his men there, he would humiliate that conceited Federer! At the same time winning the affection of those two

Herman clan thousand jin individuals, wouldn't it be hitting two birds with a single stone?

*Thinking of here, Aiwa became smug, lowering his body he asked the Queen:
[When can I set out?]*

[Unexpectedly you're in such a hurry to leave, didn't you say you like waiting at my side?]

The Queen turned her body, looking at Aiwa she laughed and said.

Chapter 3: Meeting the Tanzya Tribe

Volume 2 Chapter 3

Meeting the Tanzya Tribe

Favargo, it was a small garrison to the South.

TLN: fá bā gòng —> Favargo

In the local dialect ‘*bā gong*’ meant pointing towards the mountains. Here the rivers criss-crossed with each other, the mountains extending forever into the distance, Favargo was situated on plain within these mountains, it’s area covering less than a 100 li.

Hearing someone was coming to replace him, the local official was a bit wild with joy, he was afraid after Aiwa entered here, he would change his plan of remaining here; therefore he quickly packed his luggage to leave this ghost region he had overseen for 5 years. During this 5 years time, he had never spent a single peaceful day here.

He had requested the Queen for troops to attack the Tanzya tribe two times, however the result was that the Queen had sent Federer this incompetent generation, resulting in reprisals from the Tanzya tribe, if it weren’t for the sturdy city wall’s protection, both the young and old of his family would have already been dealt with by the Tanzyanians.

Aiwa along with a few soldiers came to the southern city walls, going towards the Tanzya tribe’s direction. Shrouded by the bloody sunshine of the setting sun, dust rose till the sky, inside the dust, there was a squadron of troops slowly moving towards the South.

A few of those chamberlains were left behind by the old general, they were very familiar with this region, in order to thank Aiwa for replacing him, the old

general specially chose a few able assistants as a present to Aiwa. Aiwa didn't refuse, this was an unfamiliar region to him, this kind of manpower was quite essential.

[Those Tanzanians are again fighting over our frontier people's property!]

A chamberlain sighed with regret and said. Aiwa could barely see using his naked eyes, most of those mounted soldiers were women, and their strong and healthy bodies were clearly distinguishable under the setting sun.

[Don't we also have cavalry?]

Aiwa turned and asked the chamberlain at his side. [They are a nomadic tribe, living their daily lives on horseback, very swift and fierce, our so called cavalry have only ridden a horse during their training time, which could also be treated as having fun, and how can they overcome them?]

The chamberlain said. This chamberlain was the one who held the highest expectation in the ex-senior officer's eyes, however, after the attacks by the Tanzanians intensified, those cruel reprisals made the Hass Empire's frontier people not able to speak of their sufferings. Therefore, he also didn't fantasize about this Aiwa who came from a General's house in being able to change anything; if only he didn't provoke anything, and then steadily lived his life it was good enough for him.

[Does our cavalry train regularly?]

Aiwa's sight watched the backs of those victors, although they didn't have eyes on their backs, from their leisurely appearance Aiwa could make out that they loathed and made fun with regard to Hass Empire's defenders.

A kind of rage rose within Aiwa's mind.

Aiwa's sight moved away from their backs, looking at the mountains all around, after seeing the valley between these extending mountains, Aiwa concluded that these Tanzanians were surely infiltrating from within this valley.

[Every path inside the valley could be their attack route, our numbers are also limited, making it is impossible to cover each and every mountain pass, moreover our fighting strength is unable to compare to our enemy. Must not see that they are mostly woman, their fighting strength doesn't differ even a bit when

compared to a man.]

The chamberlain wanted to warn Aiwa: Guarding inside the city walls is the safest, if are overconfident of our cavalry, then that would be delivering their small life to its end.

[What you want to say is, we can only get plundered by those Tanzyanians?]

Aiwa could make out the actual meaning of his words. His sharp gaze attentively watched the chamberlain at his side.

[Answering the Chief, What I want say is, if we don't want the Tanzyanians to harass us, then it wouldn't be possible by just relying on our current army.]

The chamberlain quickly explained.

[Then do you have any good ideas?]

Aiwa kept asking questions. Actually he didn't have hope that this chamberlain would be able to propose a good idea, if not, the ex-senior officer would have already recommended him to the Hass Empire making his name famous.

[No.]

That chamberlain had already realized the general idea; he quickly retreated to the back.

[Transmit an order down, during this 1 month, nobody is allowed to act blindly without thinking, carefully train their troops, after a month I'm going to conduct a big martial arts competition, giving a heavy reward to the victor!]

A grand plan was brewing inside Aiwa's mind.

At this border town small garrison, an army of almost 2000 men were stationed, among them one-third consisted of the infantry, and cavalry another one-third. The remaining portions of soldiers were those who were banished here after violated orders. In an average persons eyes, these soldiers were only criminals, therefore, the senior officer never looked at them as humans, to fight a battle it was necessary to charge and breakthrough the enemy lines, but to speak of it there had never been any kind of reward for it. Thus, when that chamberlain heard the victor would be bestowed a heavy reward by Aiwa, he didn't dare to believe what his ears had heard.

But from Aiwa's tone of speaking, he could feel this was a man who kept his promises! The contempt he held previously lessened a bit.

Aiwa made some persons plant many scarecrows, to be used as an imaginary enemy to train the soldiers. The cavalry was trained twice every day, those who had experience were made as the senior officer's trainers, once during the day, once during the night, due to Aiwa's promise, the soldiers put out all their energy into training, some soldiers still intensely trained while the others rested, because they were thinking of standing out during the competition.

When the soldiers were intensely training, Aiwa often sent a group of soldiers to inspect the situation at every mountain pass.

By a week, he already knew all the regions around Favargo from the inside out, especially the southern mountain pass terrain near Tanzya.

After a week, Aiwa took half of his infantry visiting every mountain pass, making them make grotesquely shaped things from the trees and mountain rocks. The soldiers all didn't mind this, believing this newly appointed senior officer was an immature child, merely wanted to have fun, however as Aiwa was a swift and decisive man, no one dared to disobey his order.

During the time the soldiers were undergoing every kind of training at Favargo city walls, the Tanzyanians once again plundered the Hass Empire's frontier population, those frontier people could only organize a self-defense organization and resist the Tanzyanians, however they could only run away while fighting the Tanzyanians, without having any other choice.

The reason why the Tanzyanians only fought over their things and never injured a person was that they had strict discipline, during the course of plundering; they only took what was absolutely essential, not allowing anyone to injure a Favargo person's life. Therefore, each plunder didn't cause any casualties to the staff of Favargo. This was also the reason Hass Empire hadn't sent troops to attack Tanzya.

After half a month of training had passed, the skill of many officers and men made a quantitative leap forwards, their hands started to itch, because the ex-commander was afraid of the soldier's casualties and was met by the Queen's blame, he didn't dare to send troops out, making the soldiers fighting strength

decline. And after Aiwa took the commander post, he began to bitterly train them, making the soldier's secretly scold Aiwa in their hearts, but gradually, after they found their fighting strength increase, their hearts admired this newly appointed senior officer.

As a result of their confidence increasing due to Aiwa, some officer's thought of striving for Aiwa's first class merit, hence a hundred man general called Samo led a squadron of troops to loot a Tanzanian stronghold. However, they suffered an ambush by Tanzanians on their way back; Aiwa led some troops to save Samo still suffering more than half casualties and returned. Aiwa had previously sent an order, without his order, no one was allowed to act blindly without thinking; violators would receive a heavy punishment. The officer Samo thought this time's attack would increase his deeds, but he didn't expect Aiwa to make him get hit by a rod hundred times, those hits made his flesh lacerated. Since then, the discipline within the army became more firm, no one dared to hold Aiwa's order as a joke.

After a training of 1 month finished, the competition also began. Aiwa personally looked at the fights. Majority of them were sporting events, cavalry had equestrian archery, waiting to assassinate on horseback, the infantry compared their sword teachings and marksmanship, doing battle with the assassination pike was also popular becoming the infantry's main sporting event.

Especially within the equestrian archery, a large number of experts who could shoot with great precision were fished up. Aiwa asked the chamberlain at his side: [When compared to before, haven't they made progress?]

The reply was: [Not at all the same! They cannot be compared!]

[If this army fights again with the Tanzanians, what are the odds of success?]

Aiwa proudly asked.

[If we use our current military strength to attack Tanzanians, then it was sure to be like passing a hot knife through butter, sweeping everything before us!]

That chamberlain wasn't speaking senselessly; rather he was shocked seeing the martial arts competition before his eyes. Those soldiers' each had their own abilities, relying on their current fighting strength beheading those Tanzanians was like a small appetizer. Aiwa made a slight smile, he had seen the strength of

those Tanzyanians with his own eyes, when he rescued Samo, the opponent was merely the rank of a chieftain, those roundabout spears and rain of wooden arrows had already made Aiwa extend his scope. According to his judgment, these soldiers current fighting strength was still insufficient to contend against the Tanzyanians. Because he knew, Tanzyanians only killed as a last resort, only if to guard a life would they openly kill. If the counterpart didn't have the skill, this bit was impossible to do. During that first fight, even disregarding their lives the Favargo soldier's couldn't even injure a single Tanzyanian. This point was most clear in Aiwa's heart. Therefore, he once again transmitted the order that without his order no one was allowed to go out to fight.

However, the troops garrisoned at Favargo weren't like soft mud anymore, if a Tanzyanian saw them, they would surely be surprised.

Aiwa didn't think of immediately going out to fight, rather requested the Queen to dispatch troops as reinforcement, also specially mentioning to send Junior Officer Federer who was very familiar with this region. He had to let that youngster Federer get humiliated again, tear down his overweening attitude.

After a week, Federer really arrived at Favargo town under the Queen's orders carrying 2000 troops with him. In the capacity as the supreme commander of 2000 troops, it was inevitable for Federer to act high and mighty in front of Aiwa. [Aiwa, don't you have any abilities? How? Just arrived at Favargo and so quickly asking for the Queen's help? The counterpart are only a few women, at once making you so much frightened, hehe, this really is not worthy of a General's later generation!"]

Federer looked at everyone here condescendingly, after suffering two continuous defeats at the Tanzyanians, he still wasn't ashamed standing in front of Aiwa, making Aiwa baffled. After so long, he had found such a scapegoat like Aiwa, at long last he could recover a little face, therefore, he wasn't going to miss this opportunity.

[Junior Officer Federer, my hopes rest on you, I have suffered the harassment of those Tanzyanians here every day, especially I heard that their soldier hoot that if they could boil and eat my good friend Federer, it would increase their vitality, they are very aggressive, therefore I specially requested the Queen to send your group to humiliate those Tanzyanians!]

Aiwa knew that what Federer most disliked were negative remarks about him, if he shifted the thoughts Federer had in his heart towards the Tanzyanians, which would provoke Federer. As soon as those words were finished, Federer's face became completely red.

[Aiwa, don't worry, I don't need even the least bit of your soldiers assistance, I'll make those group of Tanzya sex slaves obediently lick you foot, wait and see!]

Federer said fuming with rage.

[You've come to help Favargo, in the capacity as this region's senior officer, how can I not help you? If the Queen knew that I was watching with folded hands, then isn't it asking me to get punished?]

Aiwa intended to make Federer think that he himself refused Aiwa's assistance, and take a good look at the moment he is humiliated, therefore Aiwa deliberately incited him.

[There's no need for you to get involved in this matter, I can go by myself, naturally, if my boy wants to contribute a bit, you can come outside the city walls to meet me as I bring back the enemy's head. Hehe, it isn't that I Federer am not convinced of your soldiers, they can toy with women or play cards, as for fighting a battle, it's best for them to wait inside safely.]

Federer looked at Aiwa and spoke with contempt.

According to what Aiwa had found out, Tanzyanians had an unwritten rule, every time they plundered, they never murdered, but if someone dared to take the initiative to attack them, then they would openly slaughter. It was because of this reason, Aiwa's subordinate who had disobeyed his orders and attacked them suffered cruel reprisals, resulting in more than half casualties. Federer also suffered their cruel reprisals because he came to Favargo and took the initiative to attack them, resulting in a disastrous loss. Federer was after all the prime minister's son, he couldn't bear to lose this face, therefore his belly was filled with fire looking for an opportunity to make reprisals towards those Tanzyanians, but he didn't know where was his weak point, he only knew how to take revenge, and gladly came here after receiving the Queen's order. All of this was within Aiwa's prediction.

Federer rested at Favargo for 2 days, his investigators informed him that there

were some Tanzyanians plundering at the East, but their encampment didn't have anyone at guard there.

This news made Federer very excited, but he didn't tell this news to Aiwa, he thought of alone possessing this service, and request a good reward from Her Majesty Queen. Aiwa had already heard about this news from his scouts, but he knew, those Tanzyanians operated very quickly, never spending the night at the place they plundered, they quickly returned to their stations, protecting their home.

When Federer's army was setting off early in the morning, Aiwa was standing on top of the city walls as if he was sending some one off. Federer showed a certain victory attitude.

[Junior Officer Federer, I'll arrange a victory feast for you by the time you get back!]

Aiwa said with a loud voice standing on top of the city walls. Federer turned around and laughed, whipping his horse, a cloud of dust rising behind his back.

After the army entered the valley, they advanced towards the Tanzyanians current residence. The whole journey, the scouts returned back to inform about the Tanzyanians situation, seeing that those Tanzyanians didn't dispatch their troops, also had not gone out to plunder and return.

Federer's heart was secretly delighted, thinking to himself: [This time have to destroy the Tanzyanians old nest, giving a heavy hit to them, spitting out the resentment in his heart. Because of the fear of getting their army found out by the left over Tanzyanians, when they were still 2 li away from Tanzyanians living area, Federer who was eager to seek victory quickly ordered to charge fiercely, the attack noise shaking the sky.

At the time they hadn't appeared at the distance of several hundred meters from the Tanzyanians living area, several squadrons of Tanzya cavalry surrounded them, Tanzyanians didn't have an official professional army, but they always brought the entire nation to arms, even slightly older 10 years children would go to do war, including those who were just 10.

Originally Federer was afraid of being killed by Tanzyanians and merely showed a brave face, looking at the coming to kill Tanzyanians from all directions he was

immediately defeated.

Federer have a loud shout, using that horsewhip and battle cutlass to drive those soldiers to rush forward, but those soldiers quickly left his side and escaped, making the yelling from his worn out throat be of no use. Soon his 2000 men army was split up after fighting with the Tanzyanians, Federer didn;t have any option but to personally accompany them guiding them to kill the Tanzyanians.

A girl wearing the Tanzya attire rushed over, her hand holding a long sword, wearing a military officer rank officer clothes; she stabbed towards Federer! Federer's dou qi was no match for the girl's sword qi, the battle cutlass in his hand flew out, Federer hastily took out a dagger from his waist to welcome the enemy, but how could it handle the long sword in the enemy's small female hand. That girl's body was strong and healthy, looking pretty, turning over on horseback, her sword cut the reins of Federer's horse.

Federer lost his balance for a moment, and tumbled down the horse. Some of his imperial guards were killed by that pretty girl, and the others escaped out, Federer still hadn't gotten up, and was quickly subdued and bound by a few Tanzya girls. The conceited Federer had become the Tanzyanians captive!

The soldiers under Federer's control quickly returned to Favargo city walls, but Aiwa didn't appear to personally meet them, merely letting the city wall guard let them come in, letting them gather again at a region.

Dusk.

In a region almost 10m away from the Tanzya encampment, there was a small enclosure used for surrounding the horses. Federer was stripped, leaving him with nothing but his small trouser, confined to a stake, although he hadn't suffered beatings, the cold wind was already enough suffering for him.

[Kayseri, this time's yield was due to my first class merit. He was the one who had attacked my encampment last time, this time I have to make him taste our ferociousness!]

An individual 17,8 year old girl, her long and elegant golden hair tied into a ponytail, a mature individual, who resembled a woman chief said.

[Wuya, then this Federer is yours, you can handle him. If you want him to lick your foot in the evening, this gigolo ought to be pretty good.]

After Kayseri shot a glance towards the bitter and exhausted Federer, she changed direction towards a thin, whole body supporting a deputy soldier's armor girl and said.

Wuya held a horsewhip in her hand came over in front of Federer, she used to handle to twist around his ribs, making Federer give out a blood-curdling scream, his rib region had already caved in due to Wuya's this one twist. When Wuya took out the horsewhip, Federer's skin and flesh immediately spun around coming out, beads of sweat appearing on his face.

[Dog shit!* I still thought you were some kind of hero, not even able to bear this amount of pain!]

**TLN: Saying 'Dog shit' is cursing the other person here.*

Wuya swung the horsewhip in her hands however she wished, leaving scarlet moldings all over Federer's face.

[You carefully watch him, don't let this youngster escape, let him nicely taste the flavor of our Tanzya's cold nights!]

Saying thus, Wuya turned around to leave with her attendant.

After sundown, the curtain of night enveloped all over Tanzya's sky, making those tents disappear in the darkness, only their outlines could be faintly seen.

Aiwa sent four elite troops under the night's screen, quietly approaching the enclosure where Federer was tied up. There were Tanzya soldiers all around the enclosure in 2's and 3's, after all Federer could be considered as one of Hass Empire's military leader, although he was only a school ranked officer, nevertheless he was also the supreme commander who attacked Tanzya, therefore the reason for the strict guard.

But those Tanzyanians were soaking in victory and glee, although the chief had warned them, but those who were guarding Federer couldn't have ample rest post-war, however even they didn't predict that someone would come to rescue him during the night on the same day he was captured.

The soldiers stationed at the front were shot to death by the poison arrows of two Favargo elite troops, collapsing silently; the other two Favargo elite troops continued to go near Federer.

At Federer's side, there were two Tanzya soldiers who were holding pikes and incessantly stamped their foot to warm themselves, it was late autumn at Tanzya right now, the nights became very cold.

Federer had long ago started to freeze and tremble, in the beginning he used his dou qi to resist the cold, but it was also limited, very quickly he exhausted his dou qi, clenching his teeth to endure.

The two Tanzya soldiers holding the pikes could apparently heard some sounds, and suddenly turned their bodies, they didn't have time to even see clearly, however a poison arrow had already pierced their throats. When the distance is less, those arrow was enough to be fatal when penetrating a throat, moreover the poison would quickly act in a second, letting them meet a violent death.

By the time Federer could even understand what had happened, one of the elite troops had already cut open the ropes binding him with a dagger.

[You must not speak, follow behind us, we were sent by Aiwa to come rescue the General!]

That elite troop said in a low voice, hear Aiwa had sent them to save him, Federer was incessantly excited but at the same time he was also felt hate and shame simultaneously, if changed with another person, he surely would have had a feeling of gratitude, but unfortunately it was that damned Aiwa!

But in order to live, he had no choice but to follows these elite troops and escape the enclosure. He had already forgot about the chilling night, unable to feel the thistles and thorns under his foot, he ran the whole journey, going beyond the fence.

There was another squadron standing at a distant place to provide support. A soldier draped a cloak over Federer's shoulders, supporting him with one hand. These party of troops moved towards Favargo under the night's guise.

The tired Federer had already fallen asleep on the horse, if it weren't for the

two elite guards protecting him, he would have already fallen down.

The Favargo elite troops carried the battered and exhausted Federer and directly came to the Aiwa's headquarters. Aiwa was sitting upright inside a chair, just like a talented and dignified high ranking military official, the military management this past month was not only to train his soldiers, but also to train himself; making his open and childish face appear a bit more experienced, especially his two eyes became more keen and sharp, giving him more self-confidence.

And Federer also didn't think he would be brought here, as matters were wouldn't he be humiliating himself in front of Aiwa? When he looked at Aiwa sitting upright inside the chair, he turned his sorry figure around and immediately tried to leave.

[Commander Federer, why are you in such a hurry to return? It can't be that you don't even have the strength to wait for 5 minutes right?]

Aiwa stood up from the chair, implying that he wanted Federer to go up to the chair to his right side.

[Don't you just want me to say 'Thanks' this word? Aiwa your courage and wisdom are both large, saving me from inside the enemy camp; I Federer can't thank you enough for it. However, if you are thinking of using this to threaten me, making me promise something; then you are wasting your energy!]

Federer's nerves were already tense, he quickly thought about this question on the road. Since is Aiwa dispatched the persons to save his life, he naturally had a grateful feeling, but he could in no way promise the condition of marrying his sister to Aiwa.

[Haha, Junior Officer Federer, I in the capacity as Favargo's highest senior officer, being a soldier of Hass Empire like you, when you were trapped in the enemy camp, I naturally have the duty and responsibility to rescue you, I am here at the Queen's command, how can you speak of such selfish motives? If I Aiwa am trapped at the enemy border, don't tell me Junior Officer Federer won't dispatch men to rescue? Therefore, regarding this rescue matter, you can be completely carefree, because this is a public matter, and isn't due to selfishness, within my memory, relying on our personal relations, it seems Junior Officer

Federer still haven't what achievement and virtue to be capable of letting me go take risks right?]

Aiwa attentively watched Federer whose face had already become pale. There was another idea behind his words, that was, if isn't because of the devotion and loyalty towards the Queen, Aiwa wouldn't have sent someone to save him.

Federer's face became blue. Then white. Originally he was ashamed and unable to show his face due to suffering a crushing defeat, now he had again appeared in front of Aiwa in such a sorry state, he really thought of finding a hole to bury himself in.

[Come person, still haven't exchanged a tidy military uniform for Junior Officer Federer?]

Aiwa yelled towards a imperial guard. A chamberlain immediately left, after some time bringing back a whole body army clothes. [Junior Officer Federer, You'll accept to wear right? In my barracks there aren't any specially allocated Junior Officer clothes like yours, but it's more important to stop your body from freezing!]

Aiwa's concerning words were like daggers thrown towards Federer's body. But he could only bear getting humiliated by Aiwa right now, because this first class soldier's dress was also offered by Aiwa, he couldn't refuse.

Under the soldiers lead, Federer went to a changing room, completely discarding the shameful emotions; he threw away the cloak on his body and changed into the soldiers dress.

When Federer came out of the changing room obeying the soldier, Aiwa humorlessly said: [Still have to say, the appearance of Junior Officer Federer wearing these soldier clothes is very fitting!]

What he actually meant was, Federer shouldn't be the commander, and be a small soldier. This was no doubt a humiliation for a arrogant officer like Federer, he was left speechless for a moment, his complexion changing to a purple color.

And Aiwa continued to say: [Although you were captured by the enemy this time, however, I don't think this is a bad thing, at least we could rescue you from under their eyes, this was a major hit towards the counterparts confidence, only

after this time's lesson, Tanzyanians would surely become angry, I suggest you to not have any military operation in the meantime, if next time you again fall into Tanzyanians hands, then the would certainly not be this comfortable!]

Aiwa's this kind of psuedo-kindness and warning while teasing Federer, made that arrogant commander's eyes pop out

TLN: Oops! Forgot to TL the last line Fixed!

Chapter 4: Planning to take a female General as prisoner

Volume 2 Chapter 4

Planning to take a female General as prisoner

Aiwa already knew Federer's nature from the inside out, Federer had already eaten two defeats, but he still dared to come to Tanzya and fight again, this showed how high the discrepancy between what he estimated his capability to be and his real strength was. Therefore, Aiwa concluded that getting captured by Tanzyanians this time, he would definitely look for an opportunity to come take revenge. But regarding this point, Aiwa didn't point it out bluntly to Federer, he knew, even if he clearly said it to Federer, he was improbable to obey his advice, his most biggest merit was his dogmatism.

After Federer reorganized his soldiers inside Favargo city walls, he again conducted a drill. Although their morale was high, from what Aiwa could see it was no more than putting up empty airs that's all, they absolutely couldn't compare to the fighting strength of the Favargo soldiers who had trained for 2 months. However this confirmed Aiwa's guess, he believed, after a few days, Federer was sure to once more send troops towards Tanzya.

Looking at those practicing soldiers, Aiwa secretly laughed. After two days, Federer came to Aiwa's office.

[My boy, I want to battle that Tanzya woman again!]

TLN: lão dì – my boy or old pal/chap... was used as my boy in last chapter... I'll be varying it according to the situation whenever it appears.

Federer said brimming with confidence. He had already changed into another Junior Officer's military uniform, he believed his talent could only be shown by

wearing that dignified Junior Officer clothes. However after all he was saved from the enemy rank by Aiwa's men. Although his chest couldn't cast out the loath towards Aiwa, but on the surface he also had to show a little etiquette.

Really, relying on Federer's grand appearance and his whole body army clothes, an individual serviceman's form was distinct, only it's a pity, from his rude and impetuous expression, Aiwa couldn't see an individual commander's wisdom and murderous spirit — He was certainly going to lose the next battle without doubt!

[Very wondrous! I don't know calling me this small local official as 'old chap' is what business?]

Aiwa knew Federer's character, he was improbable to let at any person get involved in the matter he was determined to do. Let alone his aspirations were very high, he couldn't let Aiwa fight over his merit, unwilling to let Aiwa get a little bit of contribution. [Granted if have manpower, after all is your troops, I don't dare to command them without authority, however, at military supplies respect old pal has much support to rely on, after I return, I will surely report old pal's real contribution to Queen Sofia!]

Federer knew Aiwa was improbable to refuse his this small request, because they served the Queen, if he didn't correspond with the local official and fight himself, then when he reported to the Queen, the Queen was sure to rule him as guilty.

[Since is this kind, I'll also not refuse. Many supplies are needed, and since you have used 'old chap' this call, you by no means must say to the Queen that this 'old chap' didn't support you during the fight!]

Aiwa was still sitting in his chair, appearing as if he was doing a charity, [I prefer to let my soldiers go hungry, also improbable to let you have foodstuffs under your control. So when do we set out for the journey 'old chap'?]

Aiwa's bright eyes looked towards Federer. He was already used to talking to Federer using this kind of business and again having a slightly personal friend look. It was already apparent to Aiwa, that he was insufficient to become his enemy, and can become a stone under his foot; Federer was improbable to form any obstruction to his official career, only becoming his stepping stone.

[I was thinking of setting off tonight!]

Federer had long ago done good preparation for the war, only waited for Aiwa's military supplies. [This time I thought of a blitzkrieg strategy, directly taking the Tanzyanians old nest. I request old pal to arrange a breakfast for my brethren, I cannot let my brothers be hungry and fight with an empty belly!]

[Not a problem!]

Aiwa transmitted an order down; let the persons in the kitchen arrange food for Federer's expeditionary force. During midnight, Federer's army finished their breakfast, ready for the journey.

After a quarter hour, Favargo city gate slowly opened, Federer's army mightily went out, disappearing into the late night from Favargo in a long line.

Federer was stationed at the end of the troops, he urged his horse to turn around, waving his hand towards Aiwa, said in a confident and clear voice: [My boy, wait at here for my good news!]

Afterwards, a horsewhip echoed, resolutely slapping on top of the horse's hind thigh, that warhorse exerted its hoof and jumped, rushing to the front of the troops. After approximately three quarter hour since Federer set off, Aiwa transmitted the order to fight to all of his hundred man chiefs.

Although many people had doubts, didn't Federer go to fight the battle? He also said he didn't need the help of Favargo's soldiers, how can there be a combat mission? It wasn't that the Favargo city walls guard and soldiers didn't want to battle, ever since the big martial arts competition, they were already itching to fight but didn't have the opportunity, after Federer's army had pissed in their pants in terror after fighting and getting defeated by the Tanzyanians, these city wall guards and soldiers were already stifled, one after one requesting to go out to fight. But due to someone disobeying the order and going out to fight resulting in getting punished by Aiwa, without Aiwa's order, no one dared to go out and fight without permission.

Regarding the topography around Favargo, it could be said that Aiwa knew it like the back of his hand; he could close his eyes and easily recall which region

had which brook and which region had an obstruction, even recall which region had unusual big trees accurately to perfection. In other words, Favargo's entire topographic map was within Aiwa's mind. Furthermore he had already assigned each mountain top and gorge a code name, these code names were to be remembered by the hundred man chiefs, without a single mistake.

While releasing the order, Aiwa didn't announce it, rather issued a small order tablet to every hundred man chief, the words of their move were on top of them, and those numbers represented their guarding position. Resembling this kind of arrangement, Aiwa had already conducted countless drills, already learned accurately to perfection. An each hundred man chief was not only in charge of leading their soldiers, but it was also them who carried out the troop disposition methods Aiwa learned from the East Empire. Which region had how many soldiers, these hundred man chiefs could already make out the exquisite details within it. Therefore at the time of combat, they didn't need Aiwa to speak; one order tablet was already enough.

Taking the elites, Aiwa only left behind a few veteran city wall guards behind, properly guarding the city gate. Due to many disturbances to the Favargo locals by the Tanzyanians, Favargo's city walls were also made more stable. Could be said that it was invulnerable to attacks, unable to be damaged.

Three quarters of an hour after Federer's expeditionary set out, 2000 elite troops also set out from the Favargo city walls, very quickly disappearing within the night scene.

However Aiwa returned back to his bedroom. Before going back to bed he told his city wall guards that, without his order, no one was allowed to open the gate. Violators would be beheaded without pardon! Furthermore he specially added a sentence, [When I'm sleeping, no one is allowed to disturb me, violators, would be beheaded without pardon!]

Favargo's East sank into the darkness before dawn, right now Federer's army had already left the Favargo valley, entering into Tanzya territory.

This land solidified his hate and humiliation as a man, arousing his anger. He hardly considered the safety and danger and directly guided his soldiers rushing towards the Tanzya encampment.

Dusk filling the sky very quickly covered the dull gray sky, making it darker. However the dang dang sound of the horse's hoofs roused the vigilant Tanzyanians from their dreams.

Since a 1000 centuries, Tanzyanians relied on their vigilance to exist here, their combat was fierce and crafty resembling a wolf, like how a wolf would perceive an attack while it was sleeping, there wasn't a single sound which could be hidden from their keen hearing senses during the night -- letting Federer run away was perhaps also the display of Tanzyanians unwillingness to take the life of a living creature.

At the time Federer's army was rushing into the Tanzya encampments similar to bursting river water, those tents were hacked into strips of clothes by blades, floating in the wind like a wine shop's banner.

Hass Empire's soldiers rushed ahead making a sky shaking killing sound, those excited warhorses powerful hoofs hitting on top of Tanzya land, as if they were going to raze the whole Tanzya tribe to the ground!

However, at the moment when Federer thought everything was going smoothly, the soldier's one after one informed him that there wasn't a single Tanzyanian here — Right now Federer's mood couldn't be described as bad, he immediately understood that he had once again been played by the Tanzyanians.

At the moment he was strenuously thinking how the news leaked; his army was immediately surrounded by cavalry.

Hass Empire's soldiers all became still, the scene of being surrounded the last time they invaded Tanzya was still fresh in their memories, their comrade-in-arms being hacked to death by Tanzya woman's blades, they escaped to Favargo with great difficulty, but this time it wouldn't be that easy, because this time the number of Tanzyanians surrounding them seemed to have been more than last time.

At the time the Hass Empire's soldiers were still, a big horse left from within the Tanzya troops, a woman with a sweet, fair and graceful figure sitting on top of it, although it was already daybreak, but under the dark light, the Hass Empire soldiers as well as Federer's hundred men chiefs could feel the svelte of this high ranking military officer Tanzya woman from the posture on her horseback.

But relying on his dou qi, Federer could make his sight pass through the dull gray dawn, clearly looking at this high ranking Tanzya female military officers appearance, her head having a shoulder length maroon loosely draping over her shoulders, making it look like a falling waterfall behind her head due to the morning wind. Her bright and limpid autumn waters like pupils even separated by a distance of 50 yards could make Federer, this 7th rank attack ability Junior Officer tremble intensely.

At the moment Federer's and her sight met, his heart couldn't help but feel the murderous spirit from the counterparts eyes making him feel cold to his hearts depths! His breath became unnaturally cold, tightly pressing from either side on the horses belly with his legs made it tremble.

[Federer, you this reckless guy, last time we thought letting you off will make you remember Tanzyanians benevolence, didn't expect you didn't want to treasure your dog life, then don't blame us! Wuya, grab this guy alive, send him to Tanzya's most ugly woman!]

That graceful woman riding on horseback whipped the horsewhip forward, speaking to a girl at her side.

As soon as her words fell, a squadron of troops rushed forward, rushing towards Federer's saddle mount. Without fighting the soldiers at Federer's side quickly dispersed and escaped, After looking at not even a single guard remaining at his side, Federer knew he wasn't his called Wuya girl's opponent, he quickly escaped on horse. However that Tanzya woman closely pursued him. After his first lesson, Federer didn't want to fall into this woman's hand again, not speaking of the humiliation, he was still tied to a stake to suffer and freeze, what kind of person would be able to receive it? If he was caught once again, he was sure to die without a burial just like how Aiwa had mentioned. Although he was unwilling to listen to that youngster Aiwa's babbling nonsense, what he said was after all the truth, feeling last time was just luck, will the Tanzyanians give him another opportunity?

In order to not let a Tanzyanian overtake, Federer disregarded the life and death of his soldiers fleeing from within the soldiers, some soldiers were stepped to death or injured by his warhorse, but he didn't even give a glance, patting the horse's hind thigh to seize the escape path.

Whenever a Tanzanian almost overtook him, he quickly used his dou qi to resist, still not to say, Federer saddle horse was also working hard, especially during this large run; moreover it wasn't Federer's first time coming for a local campaign to Tanzya, he was very familiar with the topography around here, he didn't need to urge his war horse, it already followed the best route madly rushing the whole journey.

However, it seemed that this time the Tanzanians were determined to win, absolutely wanting to grab this criminal ringleader, not agreeing to loosen even a bit, the distance between the two didn't surpass 50-60 meters.

Since Federer had escaped their besiege, they were reluctant to part and pursued relentlessly, therefore they didn't expect Hass Empire army to have any ambush, bent on pursuing Federer.

At the time Federer's warhorse had already fled towards the territory classified as Favargo's valley, he only heard a pu pu ji sound, suddenly a horse tripping rope appeared in front of Wuya's horse, she already didn't have enough time to receive her horse, that horse tripping rope already covered her horse's forelegs, causing her horse to fall over.

But Wuya wasn't a normal person; she understood her horse had suffered an ambush, simply stood on her two legs, her whole body flying forward flipping over in the sky.

Unfortunately, when she again flipped over falling on the ground. At that instant, a few Favargo experts quickly arrived in front of her overpowering her to the ground and bound her up.

However the wearily escaping Federer didn't notice the things happening behind him, although he couldn't hear the voice of soldiers chasing behind him, he didn't dare to stop for a moment, rather slapped his warhorse escaping towards the siege city Favargo, the only safe region was inside the Favargo city walls.

Federer from the start till escape time, his horse hadn't rested for a moment, it was already exhausted, by the time he reached the outskirts of Favargo, it was already mid noon; however the city gate was still closely secured.

Riding on horseback, looking at the high city walls, he didn't have the strength

left to shout, he said using his dried throat. [For — — me once — — open — — gate — —]

After Federer used his hoarse throat to speak a few words, he lied on his stomach on the horse's back. If a Tanzya foot soldier overtook him now, he was also with his hands tied ready to get captured. Aiwa had already ordered, besides his command, no one dared to personally open the city gate. When a squadron of elite troops carrying a few women along with Wuya came to the city gate, Federer had already fallen asleep under the city gate, that burning hot sun's painful heat shining on his beaten body.

[How have not opened the door for commander Federer?]

An individual hundred man chief substituted for this rich born commander and outraged.

[Senior Aiwa said, without his order, no one was allowed to open the city gate — —]

The guard on top of the city gate tower yelled with a loud voice.

[Quickly inform Senior Aiwa, we grabbed an individual high-ranking military official for him, very pretty!]

One hundred man chief proudly yelled towards the city wall. Setting this first class merit for Senior Aiwa was an honor, in the history with the fight with the Tanzyanians, there was never a case where they had grabbed the counterpart as hostage. Can say, this hundred man chief was the first to initiate it, how couldn't he exert himself?

[Grabbed a Tanzyanian high-ranking military officer? I'll quickly go to inform senior!]

The guard on top of the city wall was also excited, immediately withdrawing to inform.

After a moment the city gate opened, a group of soldiers surrounding the trussed up Wuya entered the city gate, Federer also went inside the city walls being supported by a soldier.

Wuya was directly taken to Aiwa's office area.

Wuya's elegant hair was already disheveled, but that waterfall like golden elegance was unable to conceal the youthful refined appearance on top of her face. Her bright gaze looked over towards Aiwa through those elegant hair threads.

Because Tanzyanians frequently had dealings with the local residents of Favargo, they were not unfamiliar with Hass Empire's language, even more fluent than their own native language, Wuya simply asked: [You are Favargo's newly arrived senior officer?]

Wuya doubtfully looked towards the young Aiwa, the childish nature on his face was unable let a person believe this battle was conducted by him. The most important thing was that she had fallen in the hands of Favargo army due to this demonic man from Favargo; she was quite reconciled.

[How, I don't resemble one?]

Aiwa walked down from the chair, coming in front of Aiwa, he lifted his hand, pinching Wuya's sharp chin, lifting her head.

That elegant head had already guess some things about this high-ranking military officer, furthermore imagining her appearance, however, when her long hair parted to the sides, letting Aiwa see her whole face, he couldn't help but get frightened.

He didn't think, a this kind o common land there could be such a pretty woman! Aiwa sight moved away from her face which was able to make a man crazy towards her well developed chest, seeing two peaks standing tall on her breasts, a distinct ravine, because she was bound and her clothes were disheveled, that kind immediately aroused Aiwa's desire.

[Pretty good!]

Aiwa's finger loosened from Wuya's sharp chin, and then at last fell on top of her twin peaks. Wuya loath fully turned her body; her twin peaks also accordingly trembled.

She wasn't a girl any man could touch. Even those very handsome men inside the Tanzya tribe couldn't even glance at her. If it wasn't for her being caught by the opponent, it would have been dangerous for Aiwa's obscene sight to even

fall on her body.

[Hehe, girl's temper is still very fierce.]

He waved his hand, letting all the persons at his side retreat. One hundred man chief didn't feel relieved and came forward to say in a low voice and warned: [Senior, Tanzya women are very ferocious, be careful.]

Aiwa declined to comment and laughed, he waved his hand. That hundred man chief simply retired.

After everyone retired, there were only Aiwa and Wuya two persons remaining inside the whole office, Aiwa moved his dou qi, and silently read the incantation, initiating the yin technique. To handle this unyielding girl, there was no need for fear, or else she could take contrarily take over control.

Soon, a portion of faint pink smoke pervaded inside the whole room, that pink smoke very quickly enveloped the young pretty Wuya.

Young Wuya also didn't have any guard, let alone there wasn't a single person in the entire Hass Empire who was capable of protecting against Aiwa's yin technique. Therefore, before long, Wuya's body started to react. Her eyes became misty, turning her body over due to uneasiness. She naturally knew where she was uneasy, but how could she know it was due to Aiwa's yin technique — —

He was going to take her chastity inside this office!

After some time, Aiwa picked up the subtle reactions on top of Wuya's body, although her reaction was not that intense, but reaction was under a very short time, he was convinced, she was improbable to be like those beautiful woman of Hass empire, for example persevere as long as Dolly.

[You haven't told me your name?]

Aiwa carried out the yin technique, while advancing forward, placing his hands on her fragrant shoulders, that avaricious sight gazed towards Aiwa's pretty face.

[Why should I tell you?]

Wuya still didn't fight back at this time. She was accustomed to being

arrogant, how could she agree to speak out her name to this childish youngster?

[Ordinarily whomever I believe to be a beautiful woman, I think of wanting to know her name, furthermore, I can return her freedom, because in my eyes, only those who are free are beautiful. Isn't that so? If made into a slave, everyday being bound and kneeling down, furthermore what could be said to be beautiful?]

Aiwa's finger went down from Wuya's fragrant shoulders, that finger approaching the cleave region under her fair jade neck.

Hardly exaggerating, an individual 17, 18 year old girl to be capable of developing this appearance could already be considered to be pretty good, but if Aiwa dared to brazenly pull open Wuya's clothes exposing her whole chest, he surely would have been more amazed, this kind of individual can't be picky woman, how did the heavens model to come out?

In capacity as a middle level high-ranking military officer Wuya had never experienced what was called as not being free, now after being tied by man from the enemy, she for the first time understood the importance of freedom, she thirsted to see her older and younger sister, thirsted to see her father and mother, however, from the circumstances, if she thought of Tanzyanians coming to rescue her in a short time inside, she feared it would be harder than reaching the sky.

[I'm called Wuya.]

For the first time, the willful Wuya had surrendered in front of the enemy, she knew in her heart, right now she had to cooperate, if not, perhaps she would be unable to forever see her close relatives.

[Wuya, a pleasant to hear name! Most important is that the persons looks are also very pretty, resembling such a pretty Tanzyanian woman if fell within my troops hands, then I would become really anxious that the girl would suffer losses! Therefore, if Wuya obediently listens to me, I won't send you to those barbarous troops, I'm however a quite understanding and tender man. If Wuya girl wants to go for a bath right now, I also won't mind about it.]

During his speech, his finger had already moved away from her glossy skin, but at the second it was moving away, his finger conveniently raised open the

clothing near her navel, exposing more of her skin.

When Aiwa put his hand on Wuya's shoulders, was precisely the moment his yin technique was most efficient, Wuya could naturally feel but she hadn't thought much, still believing this youngster fell in love at first sight with her magnificent appearance.

Her lower body started to gradually itch, however her skin also thirsted for the counterpart's gentle caress. But resembling her who had never directly faced a boy a girl person, how could she act servile and go beseech other people.

Hear Aiwa say she could have a bath; her heart couldn't help but feel happy. Although trapped in the enemy camp, Wuya still couldn't forget her habit of liking cleanliness.

[Can you guarantee no one will disturb me?]

Wuya wished for this benevolent and righteousness appearing regional senior officer to do as he had explained, not using dirty methods to handle her, at least id she wasn't sent to those dirty and unbearable soldiers to get insulted wantonly it was at once good.

[Wuya girl, you feel relieved, if haven't your order, even I myself won't enter your bathroom. Of course is one individual sealed small room, you can feel relieved and take a bath. You can imagine, if I thought of using violence against you this girl, would you be able to resist?]

Right now Aiwa's expression wasn't vulgar anymore, rather resembled an individual upright gentleman, this was sufficient for Wuya to be convinced, using his hinged bathroom door, he was also improbable to assault her!

[I don't need any person to attend to me, I'll go by myself!]

Wuya again raised another request. Aiwa didn't reply, but suddenly not known from where fished out a dagger, after looking at Aiwa holding a dagger in his hand, Wuya still didn't understand for a bit of time, she thought that due to her request being too excessive she had angered this enigmatic natured high-ranking military officer.

At the time of her doubt, the dagger in Aiwa's hand suddenly stabbed towards Wuya, Wuya thought in her mind: [This in this way broke his promise, just now

he said he was going to return my freedom, again said he was going to let myself take a bath, apparently the rule of not wantonly killing a person in my tribe is not used at Hass Empire. If I had known it was going to be this way earlier, then she would have killed the Favargo region men she had captured, if so, today's disaster was also improbable to occur.] At the time Aiwa's dagger almost stabbed towards Wuya, Wuya closed her eyes shut, she was still excessively bound, powerless to resist, could only get trampled on. Apparently her beautiful life was already on the eve of ending! She made a long sigh.

But that cold light didn't come across Wuya's skin, only lightly brushed past, the ropes tied on top of Wuya's body completely broke apart.

Wuya shut her eyes but didn't feel the pain she had imagined she would feel when the dagger pierced her body. She doubtfully opened her eyes, looking at Aiwa smilingly standing in front of her, that dagger revolving at lightning speed in Aiwa's hand. Again bowing her head to look, the ropes on her body had already fallen down to her foot, each cord cut off.

This was sort of blade teaching? She didn't even feel anything, but so many ropes on her body had already been cut off? She roughly counted, ought to be improbable is less than 30 pieces! What made her amazed was, although the rope was cut into fragments, but also hadn't injured even half a root of her hair.

[This is you cut open?]

Wuya right now could only use a [very amazing] these words to describe it. [Besides you and I two individuals, you see any other person inside the room?]

Aiwa's eyes also searched all around the room. His expression was very relaxed, unexpectedly making Wuya forget that the youngster in front of her was her enemy.

[You can really guarantee no one will enter the bathroom?]

At the most crucial time Wuya was still not very convinced. It was after all Tanzya's foundation.

[If you don't want to bath, the let it be. I also don't like to force people, especially when dealing with beautiful woman.]

Aiwa's sight never separated from Wuya's pretty face, furthermore her that

towering chest. Because her clothes were not proper, she seemed lovelier.

Wuya half doubting, walked facing towards the bathroom and went in.

Chapter 5: Captive Bath

Volume 2 Chapter 5

Captive Bath

A scented joss stick was emitting a fragrance with the bathroom, which had a huge bathtub in the middle. Everything was prepared; piping hot water was already filled in the bathtub.

Wuya thought no more, trudging the whole journey, had already made her exhausted, right now she wanted to take a hot bath immediately, eliminating the body's fatigue. She slowly took off her clothes, exposing her sweet, fair and graceful figure, especially her exquisite tall twin peaks, which expressed her girlish charms. Perhaps due to a girl's shyness and anxiousness, she undressed one side, while looking around the room to check whether or not there was any mechanism here which could let a person peek at her when she was bathing.

After determining that there wasn't any mechanism, she removed her final layer of protection, curly pubic hair under her smooth underbelly was guarding her vulva, between that lavish fragrant grass was the human world's daoist immortal cave, because of Aiwa's yin technique, slight dewdrops had already begun to seep out of that place. She carefully wiped it once, causing her face to warm up.

She lifted her slender beautiful legs, one leg going inside the steaming bathtub, causing the dew to fall down from the shining moistened red mouth hidden under the curly pubic hair between her two legs.

Her whole body went inside the bathtub, with her upper body still above the water's surface, the two captivating red nipples on her breasts had already become tall and straight due to Aiwa's yin technique, and they began to blush as if they were alluring mulberry fruits.

That hot water's temperature was moderate, relaxing her tensed muscles. Her both hands fondled the tall and straight peaks on her breasts, as if she was rubbing them clean. Whenever her finger caressed her breasts, those beautiful breasts form would change, but no matter what change, they still transmitted a radiance which could captivate a man.

And she didn't know, until the moment her body was immersed within the bathtub, Aiwa still hadn't withdrawn his yin technique. Therefore, When Wuya was bathing, her two hands couldn't help but go and fondle the sensitive locations on her body, the more she fondled, the more vigorous her libido would become, and once her libido became vigorous, she would think of fondling more.

Her two hands slid down from between her breasts, touching the two thin flesh flowers concealed between her two legs. When her slim finger caressed on top of her tender and lovely flesh flower, one kind of subtle, and acute pleasure made her intoxicated making her close her eyes.

And when she closed her eyes, it seemed to her as if Aiwa came walking in front of her, using his big masculine hands to knead her soft bosom. [Oh—] She moaned softly.

Actually Aiwa didn't enter the bathroom, rather he sent his two lewd serpents inside, crawling inside her bathtub, teasing her body's sensitive areas. Aiwa's lewd serpents were capable of following Aiwa's will, caressing like a human hand, that feel was as if a man was personally caressing, very easily producing the illusion of a man's caress to a woman.

Those two lewd serpents along with Aiwa's thoughts each moved back and forth around the twin peaks on her chest as well as on top of her sensitive vulva. Not to say she was a sexually inexperienced girl, even a cooked woman was unable to endure the teasing of Aiwa's lewd serpents.

Standing outside the door, listening to Wuya's more and more licentious moans, Aiwa wanted to quickly go in and finish holding her. However, he didn't do it this time, rather thought of a plan. When Aiwa had heard that Tanzya had a pretty and wise high-ranking military officer, he already thought of riding that officer down his crotch, merely he didn't get a chance, today was precisely a chance bestowed by heaven.

The lewd serpent inside the water had already squeezed inside Wuya's vagina, that feeling couldn't be expressed by a girl. Wuya who had never experienced the matter between a man and a woman, quickly felt her lower body's feeling become more intense, making her think of letting Aiwa this outside clan man relieve the pain of her body.

[Oh— Wu —]

Wuya's moans became louder; the intoxication of her body began to change into a kind of pain. She already jumped out of the bathtub, disorderly lying down on the wooden floor. If Aiwa barged in at this time, Wuya wouldn't refuse Aiwa. That already wasn't rape, rather one kind of proposition to a woman.

[Ahh — — I can't bear it — — someone come — —]

Wuya naturally knew, inside the office, besides her, only Aiwa was there, she in this sort calling for a person to come could only mean letting Aiwa come in.

When she was rolling around in pain, Aiwa really came in. After entering the bathroom, Wuya carefully inspected the door and fastened it firmly, however Aiwa came in effortlessly, actually right now Wuya wasn't in the mood to be able to think why Aiwa could barge in so effortlessly.

[Miss Wuya, do you need any help?]

Aiwa squatted down at her side looking towards Wuya who was enduring unbearable pain and asked. Wuya completely forgot that she was completely naked, after hearing Aiwa's voice, Wuya opened her beautiful eyes, looking at him with a craving gaze — — [Save me — — my — — body feels unwell — —]

[I can — — but I don't know how should I help you?]

Aiwa pretended to be silly spreading his hands out and said. [Me — — make me — — your — — woman — —]

[What?]

Aiwa asked once again. He still stooped down to her ear pressing close to her naked body. [Let me — — become your woman okay? — —]

Under the torment of Aiwa's mystical yin technique, Wuya completely forgot what was being shy, what was called honour, she even spread open her two long

legs letting Aiwa clearly look at a woman's most secret region, she wished to be able to make his male desire rise after he saw her alluring place.

[How can I do that? You are our captive, I cannot mistreat our captive, you are very pretty, but that doesn't mean that if the captive was pretty I can take her as my wife and let her become my woman, I still don't know whether or not you can serve me like our Hass Empire's women. Can you?]

Although the penis between his crotch had already become hard, he still persisted with his mouth.

[I'm willing to serve you like your Hass Empire women! I'll do whatever you want me to do!]

Wuya implored him, anxiously looking towards Aiwa. Wishing for him to be a little benevolent, immediately hold and rape her. Because right now she felt as if there were 10 million small insects crawling inside her vagina.

[Before going to bed Hass Empire help their men undress.]

Aiwa very proudly said. He could already determine that, even without using force, this pretty small girl desired the thing at his crotch, right now he was imagining when his thick meat rod would penetrate inside this lovely girl's body, it would give what kind of feeling!

[I'm willing to — —]

Still not waiting for Aiwa to speak, Wuya crawled up from the floor impatiently, recklessly tearing apart his clothes.

[Wuya, I haven't forced you, you are really doing this voluntarily?]

When he was getting his clothes torn apart by Wuya, Aiwa still didn't forget to take liberties with this girl whose mind had already been tormented until her will was confused.

[I'm doing this voluntarily!]

A puff of raging lust could be seen in her eyes, in this panic, the breasts on her chest also trembled restlessly, especially her two alluring red nipples, becoming ever more attractive. Aiwa's penis down at his crotch resembled an iron pestle, making it stand up high inside his trousers making a tent.

Wuya knelt down on her knees, her slim fingers unfastening the knot on Aiwa's belt, using all of her strength to take off his trousers down to the heel.

A hyperaemic meat rod resembling a crawling earthworm sprung out, almost hitting on top of Wuya's face. Wuya had never seen a man's penis, she only knew that whenever those women discussed about a man's thing they always compared the genuine goods to that of a horse. But she knew, this was only a woman's dream or to say is a woman's description of it, it was impossible for a man's genuine goods to be able to compare with a horse's long thing.

But seeing the excited long thing between this man's two legs, it was still more thick and solid than a oxen's thing she had seen before making Wuya really frightened, she foolishly looked towards the long thing completely perpendicular to Aiwa's boy, stupefied.

[So much long?]

Wuya's complexion became pale; she also didn't expect a man's toy could be as big as oxen's! Her hand unconsciously stretched towards her crotch, one finger stretching inside her itching cave entrance. [Won't I die?]

Pitiful Wuya opened her eyes wide imploringly looking towards Aiwa, wishing for him to be able make that root smaller.

[You're joking, I still haven't heard of a woman dying due to being drilled by a man. Come, use your small mouth to kiss my thing, I will be a little gentle with you.]

Aiwa clasped Wuya's frightened face, bringing it closer to his long thing, that long thing resembled a hungry beast, waiting there for the prey to step by step come in front of it.

[I'm — — afraid — —]

Wuya's beautiful eyes were filled with fear. But she slowly brought it near her mouth, although she had never used it to attend to a man, just like how Aiwa had just said, she used her mouth to kiss it. She used her warm lips to kiss his burning hot meat rod. His meat rods foreskin had already been rolled up; exposing that glossy round glans outside, When Wuya's moistened lips came across his cock, Aiwa's cock uncontrollably pricked around. This Wuya was really

pretty, very tempting, just looking at her charming eyes, could make a man ejaculate.

[Wuya, learn to use your tongue, just like licking an ice cube — —]

Aiwa intentionally moved his crotch forward, letting his glans near Wuya's sexy lips.

[Can — My lower body is still itching — —]

It had already come to this extent, Wuya had already forgotten a girl's shyness, and she directly spoke about her body's feeling to Aiwa.

[Rest Assured, If only you properly serve me, everything will be well.]

Aiwa stood there, appearing masculine, bowing down looking at Wuya's tempting face, her long hair was sticking on top of her face due to the bath, but it still couldn't hide her charming face, unable to hide her craving sight, looking down from her chin, that deep gorge between a girl's two breasts were luring a man.

Under Aiwa's encouragement, she used both of her hands to hold his pike, delivering it to her mouth, compared to that thick penis, her mouth was really small, but Aiwa was convinced, her small mouth was capable of swallowing his pike throbbing with desire!

The blooming lust made Wuya bring out her small lilac tongue, softly pressing it towards the crux of Aiwa's penis, a spell of soft feeling extended towards Aiwa's whole body from there.

[Oh — — very pleasurable — —]

Aiwa couldn't help but close his eyes, [Use force to grab it — —]

Following his order, he only felt Wuya's small hand gradually use force, gripping that meat rod covered in blue veins, and due to this stimulation, it seems as if the meat rod was filled with qi, swelling once again, simultaneously feeling her most fragrant tongue, revolving around his glossy glans penis, licking everywhere.

Compared to Ruth, Wuya was no doubt similar to a newly hatched chick, however getting licked by her small fragrant tongue gave him an unusual feeling.

Perhaps due to curiosity, Wuya this clueless girl crazily used her soft and burning hot tongue wrapping around that hyperaemic penis. He felt his thick meat rod enter into an empty space, getting surrounded by a happy atmosphere, Wuya started to suck without being taught! This made Aiwa very excited. [Oh — — Right! Precisely like this! Aiwa, extremely comfortable!]

Aiwa had no choice but to open his eyes to once again admire Wuya's face, right now Wuya was already completely immersed, her long eyelashes covered her misty gaze, slowly swallowing Aiwa's thick meat rod, going inside, again going inside, until it couldn't be swallowed any more, she again slowly brought it out. That vein covered meat rod was covered in her saliva; she repeatedly took it in and out, making saliva flow down, dripping on top of her breasts.

Aiwa enjoyed her taking in and out at one side, and silently read the incantation, continuing with his yin technique, making the desire inside Wuya's body become more intense. She felt as if there were many countless insects crawling inside her vagina, liquid secretions flowed out of her vagina. When she was taking Aiwa's thick meat rod in and out, her beautiful body couldn't help but writhe, her nose humming incessantly, giving out alluring moans.

[Ah — — Ah — —]

Although Wuya didn't know about the sexual intercourse matter done by a man and a woman, but she had already seen animals copulating, she thought, humans ought to be also the same, so when she was vigorously licking Aiwa's meat rod, she excitedly imagined her and Aiwa copulating like animals within her mind.

[Ah — —]

Her body twisted more and more fiercely, it was already at the stage where she was unable to control herself. After Aiwa used her small mouth a few times, then he pushed her upper body onto the floor, Aiwa saw that the it had already become clearly moist between her legs; this was the best time to pierce her.

Aiwa kneeled down on his knees, kneeling between Wuya's two long legs, pushing them to either side using his body. Wuya knew, the moment of happiness was going to come, the pain was going to stop, she looked towards Aiwa kneeling between her two legs, wishing for him to quickly insert his long

thing inside her flesh hole. She once saw an ox inserting its long thing inside its partner. She secretly saw that scene, looking at that scene made her heartbeat accelerate. And right now, a man was going to insert his long thing inside her body, how could she not be excited?

Aiwa stooped down his body, but not to pierce her, rather to use his mouth to suck that erect nipple on her breast. Her nipples were very big, very erect, and very plump, in a breath; Wuya's whole body went limp, her desire becoming more intense. Unable to restrain her emotions, she used her two hands to caress Aiwa's naked body.

Aiwa's two hands caressed her body on both sides, single mindedly devoting them to her two breasts, a girl's breast wasn't different from a mature woman's breast, merely not dominant in size, but they could still easily arouse a man's libido. Whenever Aiwa sucked once, Wuya felt comfortable. She wished Aiwa could take all of her lovely breasts inside his mouth, again wished for Aiwa to use his tongue to deftly arouse her merry nipples.

But this good situation didn't last long; Aiwa very quickly renounced her two breasts, shifting his position to the region between her two legs.

He held her butt, extending his long tongue to lick her clitoris once. This one lick, made Wuya's sensitive nerves quickly tighten.

[Oh — —]

Her naked body violently trembled, that originally erect clitoris immediately became hyperaemic due to Aiwa's soft teasing, becoming abnormally bright. Aiwa held her fragrant butt, seriously looking towards Wuya's small scarlet clitoris, very lovely, from that erect appearance, Aiwa could already guess, how much vigorous this girl's libido was.

Right now, at the cave mouth between her tender flesh flowers, milky white dew was falling down. Aiwa naturally knew, this was due to the promoting passion effect of his yin technique, if not, how could an arrogant Tanzya high ranking military officer like her easily let a outer clan man violate her?

He stooped down his head once more, pressing his lips and tongue on top of that cave mouth flowing with milky white dewdrops, those tender flesh flowers receiving the repeated provocation of the opposite sex body's rubbing, were

unable to bear the rubbing of Aiwa's lips and tongue, after all it was a region which wasn't touched by anything, naturally becoming sensitive!

Aiwa's lips and tongue pressed on her vulva, his lips didn't move, but his tongue moved, like a snake rapidly teasing her tender inner lips. It was only a light tease that's all, and Wuya's body intensely reacted. Especially when Aiwa's tongue tip stretched inside her small cave, quickly making that small cave incessantly clamp on to his tongue from either sides, her cave was slippery. Of course, his tongue was also slippery, two kinds of satiny things interweaving with each other, either unable to control themselves.

However, Aiwa's comparison had already come out, the contraction speed of Wuya's small cave didn't differ much from Ruth's, even winning by a small margin, every time entering inside her cave, his tongue was quickly clamped on either sides by her, however due to the high slipperiness, his tongue resembled a loach escaping her small cave's grip. But she didn't give up, every time she used even more force to clutch him, soon Aiwa understood, originally Wuya was clamping his tongue on either sides in order to let her small meat cave receive his tongue's provocation, not all thinking of gripping him. Because even a foolish person knows that it was impossible to grip a slippery thing by clamping on either side with another slippery thing!

After the playing this loach catching game with Wuya, he was also unable to resist anymore. Wuya's body emitted an unusual attraction, let alone under that complete concentration, that blatant intense desire was like deathly provocation to Aiwa, when Aiwa held her fragrant butt licking her vulva, her body writhed not stopping even for a second, not to mention Aiwa's tongue was still pressing against her vulva, looking at the appearance of her naked body writhing, could make a man crazy. Can't say for sure some persons may faint on the spot.

[A-ah I'm begging you — — quickly pierce me!]

Although she didn't have the experience of sleeping with a man, some things were innate, from the experience of contact between their bodies, Wuya could already conclude, if she wanted happiness then she had to hold Aiwa's large meat rod and pierce it inside her meat cave! This was certain!

[Perverted person! So quickly want me to pierce you?]

Aiwa at last moved his lips and tongue away from her vulva, his two hands gripping her breasts. A teenage girl's breasts were very charming, letting a man fondle admirably, Aiwa crazily played with her breasts pressing them flat and again fondling them round, her captivating red nipples seemed out of proportion when compared to her breasts, in other words, when considering the nipples size, her breasts also ought to be bigger.

The intelligent Aiwa already thought, right now she was still small, not maturing completely, after she matures completely, perhaps her breasts would also become bigger. Even if they didn't grow bigger, their shape was enough to let him become frantic.

Aiwa for the first time went forward to kiss Wuya, his lips still hadn't touched her, but Wuya had already extended her fragrant tongue out, at the same time her two hands stopping at Aiwa's waist, those hands moved down his waist, gripping his meat rod, after stroking it twice she pulled it in front of her cave and squeezed that thick penis forward inside her narrow meat cave!

If it wasn't for Aiwa corresponding with his strength, relying on Wuya herself that thick meat rod was unable to squeeze inside because compared to his meat rod, her flesh cave was really very narrow, but the specialty of a girl's flesh cave was its extreme flexibility, when Wuya's two hands held Aiwa's meat rod allowing them to squeeze inside her flesh cave, Aiwa's body only needed to lightly push down, and that burning hot, slippery penis was quickly swallowed inside her flesh cave!

[Aaah — —]

Because of that burning hot spear head thrusting inside her body Wuya gave out an excited yell, it really wasn't because Aiwa pierced her hymen; she still didn't know that when the hymen is pierced it would be accompanied by pain.

Aiwa's lips pressed down, extending his tongue out, winding around Wuya's hungry fragrant tongue, even though she didn't have experience in kissing, but her innate nature dictated, just now when Aiwa was using his deft tongue to lick her private parts, that subtle feel, made her heart curious about Aiwa's tongue, moreover, her heart also had one kind of thirst, precisely wishing for Aiwa to use his tongue and similarly lick her fragrant tongue.

Aiwa's tongue didn't move, merely passively responding to her licking, she was already intoxicated, using the same method Aiwa had used to lick her private parts she licked Aiwa's tongue, but didn't expect she herself would feel pleasure. After licking once, she became addicted, she suddenly held Aiwa's head, using her lips to closely press on top of Aiwa's lips, letting her fragrant tongue get inside Aiwa's mouth, while madly stirring, although her skill was clumsy, she made Aiwa feel happy. Because even though she hadn't practiced this skill it didn't let her passion decline, contrarily, arousing Aiwa passion. He gently hooked on to her fragrant tongue, with a neither fast nor slow speed turning over her, sucking her, letting that tongue revolve and slide around her small mouth.

Aiwa at once side kissed Wuya's small mouth, while gently lifting her butt, letting that penis slide over a small width on her vagina, although is a small distance, but the rhythm was very quick, plus her whole vagina was already slippery inside, therefore this movement didn't hinder the inside action.

That sliding and rubbing let Wuya taste for the first time feel a woman's flavour. Right now she didn't feel disgrace for getting captured by Hass Empire's servicemen, contrarily, she rejoiced for falling in the enemy's ambush. If not, perhaps she would have never known about a woman's happiness for a few more years!

When the two persons were soaked in the passion of their warm kisses, Aiwa's buttocks suddenly pushed down, making that meat rod which had long ago entered her meat cave thrust towards her abyss.

[Oh — —]

After Wuya suddenly received this strike, she became clear-headed; she really didn't expect this kind of violent pain would once again appear when her lower body was pierced.

This originally considered to be a legend feeling was at last personally experienced by her, but at the time she was experiencing a ripping apart sort of pain, the flower stamen which had long ago come out her meat cave's depth was knocked head on by Aiwa's pike!

A spell of violent trembling conveyed pleasure to Wuya's naked body, after this

sensitive region was met by Aiwa's thick rod's apex, one kind of more intense pleasure rose spreading inside her whole body.

[Wu —]

Aiwa let go of her small mouth after her loud yell, conveniently hearing her rapid beautiful moans. Aiwa's meat rod also felt the resistance, relying on his experience; this ought to be a girl's stamen when she reached her orgasm for the first time. Each and every time a girl approached her orgasm, that deeply hiding flower bud would come out along with the increasing libido, at this time, merely letting a man's genitals hit that flower bud, can bring extremely intense reactions inside a girl, if a man held his genitals and closely pressed it against the woman's flower bud grinding it, a woman would continuously get excited, causing sex fluids to come out at the time of orgasm.

Not waiting for Wuya to release, Aiwa already pulled out his meat rod sticking to her flower bud, although it was bit painful, it nevertheless made Wuya feel pleasure at the same time. Compared to the feeling inside the bathtub, this was more invigorating.

She didn't yell anymore, rather endured in silence, fearing Aiwa would stop his movement on her body due to her yelling. Right now Aiwa didn't kiss her anymore, rather supported half of her body, at one appreciating Aiwa's beautiful face and her twin peaks on her chest, and throbbing on the other side.

Whenever his thick meat rod entered or exited her unruly naked body, a tempting expression would appear on Wuya's face, even her mere knitting her brows, made Aiwa's passion surge up even more.

Wuya's flesh hole clamped very tightly, that clamping restricted Aiwa's thick meat rod, but he relied on her first-rate flexibility to enter and exit, the more she clamped tightly, the more intense pleasure was obtained by both persons, every time Aiwa's meat rod penetrated deep inside, it simply touched her hyperaemic flower bud once, not grinding it anymore, he knew, resembling her this kind of tender flower bud not grinding it could also lead to a fast ejaculation, he thought of letting her feel this pleasure for a longer time, right now the leading role was completely within Aiwa's hand, if he didn't completely bring out all of this perverted person's strength out, she was improbable to accept.

He slowly moved his body, delivering his firm meat rod down inside her flexible meat cave, the speed was not at all fast, but that friction nevertheless was quite powerful, he made every square mm of her vagina walls produce an intense pleasure out.

Chapter 6: How to handle

Volume 2 Chapter 6

How to Handle

Although the pumping rhythm was slow from the beginning, since Aiwa's thing was very thick, its will wasn't reduced even one fold under the support of General Wuya's tight flesh wall, there wasn't a single place left where his meat rod hadn't rubbed around, therefore, Wuya very quickly welcomed her first climax.

She used all of her might to clamp on him, a burst of jade liquid spraying out from the abyss, that unrestrained spurt not only raised General Wuya's pleasure to its extremity, it also increased Aiwa's libido, the female hormones inside those sex fluids seemed somewhat unusual, in a flash provoking Aiwa adding onto to his libido, that originally long and large meat spear suddenly extended another section, its thickness almost making it unable to pump anymore.

[Ahh — I'm so comfortable — — pierce me more quickly — —]

Right now Wuya had already tasted the wonderful feeling of getting rammed by a man, she was quite unwilling for Aiwa to stop, actually it wasn't that Aiwa wanted to stop, rather her pussy had already bound his meat rod unable to let him budge, neither able to go forward, nor come out.

[Baby, you're clamping very tightly, I'm unable to move it!]

Aiwa stooped down his lower body kissing her fragrant neck, thinking of letting her relax a bit. However, the situation originally wasn't on her body, rather at his Aiwa's, and he was unable to will his meat rod to return, it was only possible if was able to feel loath towards Wuya, but this was an impossible affair, a girl could only become more pleasant at this time, let alone Wuya's original beauty was enough to let a man's imagination run wild.

Right now her nude body lied down under Aiwa, every tiny reaction of her beautiful nude body made Aiwa endlessly excited.

There was only one way, that was for Aiwa to use his [Reverse Yin Technique] to break his desire. The problem was, Aiwa had only learned about this mind cultivation method, and never used it, he didn't know whether after using this mind cultivation method, it will or not make his penis unable to rise, unable to show a man's might. The big thing down at his crotch was his biggest pride, without it, he didn't know whether he would have the confidence to follow his future path.

But right now his meat rod was stuck inside Wuya's body, neither able to go forward, nor able to come out, very painful, and Wuya needed him to thrust.

Wuya was already anxious, she with great effort moved her body, thinking of approaching Aiwa's thick meat spear, but whenever her body moved, Aiwa's meat rod followed behind, not at all going up to pierce her flower bud. [What's up with you?]

After Wuya saw Aiwa sweating all across his face, she was a bit anxious. [It's nothing, you — — are very tight, I'm unable to move it.]

He struggled to say.

[It's itching to death inside me, quickly pierce my pussy — —]

Wuya wasn't convinced, two person's goods were long pieces of flesh that's all, how could they not move?

Aiwa no longer listened to Wuya's nagging; he closed his eyes, silently reading the reverse yin technique mind cultivation method. After some time, his yang root really shrank a lot.

But the regretful thing was, the shrunken yang root immediately softened, and Wuya's pussy tightened more, he couldn't insert it inside!

If just now not being able to come out was Aiwa's worry, then now not being able to insert it made the two persons anxious. Even trying several times didn't work. Apparently this time it was going to be bit difficult.

[Wuya, why don't you use your mouth and try?]

Aiwa sat on the floor while sighing. [How?]

Wuya looked puzzled and asked Aiwa.

[Like in the beginning, use your mouth to lick it, suck it; see whether it can get hard again.]

Aiwa didn't wish to use his dou qi, naturally also use his physical strength or zhen yuan, right now he wasn't sure whether Wuya was going to meekly obey him, god knows whether or not she was planning to use a honey trap and escape? If it was like that, then the consequences could be disastrous, it would be throwing away his life. Because there wasn't a single person who would knowingly be willing to become a captive.

Hearing Aiwa's request, Wuya instantly agreed without hesitation, she had already used her small mouth to eat Aiwa's banana, it wasn't her first time again? Let alone her lower body was still itching, she needed Aiwa to continuously thrust inside her.

Aiwa sat down on the floor, separating his two legs, allowing Wuya to lean forward between his legs, stooping towards his genitalia, those snow white breasts pressed against his thigh, red lips slightly opened, taking in the soft willed meat rod inside the mouth, and slowly taking it in and out.

She swallowed Aiwa's meat rod, lifting he head, using her beautiful eyes to look at Aiwa. Aiwa liked her current appearance, along with her small mouth taking it in and out and using her creamy small tongue to lick it, Aiwa's meat rod gradually became hard again. A surprised expression also appeared on Wuya's face, she didn't expect her small mouth to have this kind of ability, immediately making the already soft meat rod erect.

[Wuya you're really a pro!]

Aiwa cheerfully pushed his buttocks, letting that meat rod reach the depths of Wuya's small mouth. [Now you can pierce me right?]

Wuya already took out the moist and dripping meat rod, holding it in her hand and asked. [Can.]

Aiwa once more pushed Wuya to the floor, splitting open her snow white beautiful legs, inserting his thick and hard meat rod inside her flesh hole dripping

with sexual secretions.

[Oh — really comfortable —]

Wuya closed her eyes happily, and raised her two legs, letting Aiwa pierce more deeply, and pound above her tender flower bud.

Aiwa one side kneaded this Tanzya girl's breasts, while thrusting inside her pussy, that pleasure couldn't be explained in words. Wuya was also lost inside the happiness, her lovely body writhing, moaning unceasingly.

Wuya's flesh hole constantly contracted, Aiwa's meat rod became more firm. Aiwa neither slowly nor quickly, pounded her pussy, very quickly making her pussy release her nectar.

[Oh — — faster — — deeper — — it's itching inside ah — —]

Wuya happily moved her beautiful body, her two hands feeling Aiwa's body disorderly.

Soon the moment was going to come, Aiwa thought of letting Wuya match with him. So, silently read the mind cultivation method, moving his dou qi, passing half of it to Wuya.

Aiwa was going to transmit the energy to Wuya by ejaculation. A small mouth had already bloomed in front of Wuya's flower bud; Aiwa madly rammed his meat rod towards the flower bud, shooting his semen inside her uterus.

Wuya's cervix violently pulled back, immediately feeling her strength increase all over. At this time she suddenly thought of escaping.

Any captive remained quiet when they didn't have the power to escape; however, when she found she was able to use her strength once more, her heart began to stir restlessly.

Due to Aiwa sending his energy, Wuya and Aiwa fought fiercely for another two hours.

Aiwa liked this girl very much, he really thought of having another round with her.

[Wuya, why don't I pierce you again in a moment?]

Aiwa stopped his lower body, pressing against her enticing naked body, fondling her well developed breasts. [I'm willing, I'm willing to let you pierce me again, and it's very pleasurable! Merely I don't know whether my physical strength will be able to match you? Right! Just now I was already drained, why did my power increase suddenly?]

[Of course it's because I sent my energy inside your body.]

Aiwa said. [Can you send it to me again? I want to continue having sex with you!]

Her face revealed a lovely and tempting expression. [Isn't that simple? I have the final say on this!]

Aiwa once more sent a portion of energy by ejaculating inside Wuya's body.

However, When Aiwa sent his energy inside Wuya's body, he clearly felt a bit exhausted, and at the time of sending it again, even Wuya also felt that he looked like his strength couldn't bear it anymore.

[What's up? Weren't you powerful just now! I want you to ruthlessly pierce me!]

Wuya thought of sounding out whether or not Aiwa's physical strength really overdraft.

[No — — It's nothing — —]

Aiwa covered up his weakness, exposing his complete strength, would be really dangerous. At this moment if he wanted to bind Wuya again, it would be very difficult.

[The let me ride you, can I?]

She heard that when a man and woman had sex, women would also be on top, although she hadn't seen it, but she could try.

Aiwa really thought of resting on the floor. So he quickly lied on the ground, letting Wuya ride on top of him, he saw Wuya earnestly kneading his meat rod and then insert it inside her pussy, slowly encasing it.

[Oh — — this kind is also pretty good — —]

Wuya went up and down, her two swinging breasts appearing very charming.

Aiwa's eyes attentively watched Wuya's snow white chest, his two hands caressed her underbelly, sometimes using his finger to roll the pubic hair under her underbelly; it was very pleasing.

Wuya one side encased Aiwa's meat rod, while looking all around, she was looking for an escape route.

Her eyes suddenly became bright; on top of the wall was a common Tanzya plant, black aromatic herb. It could be used as an anaesthetic medicinal herb, when someone sustained injuries, chewing this thin grass inside their mouth could make all their pain disappear. If taken too much, this thing could cause a person to lose consciousness. [What's on the wall?]

Wuya attentively watched the black aromatic herb on the wall. Aiwa followed her sight looking towards the small grass of a plant on the wall. [I don't know.]

Aiwa really didn't know what it was, because he wasn't familiar with the local conditions and customs of Favargo, he naturally didn't know the medicinal use of the plant's here.

[Right! that thing seems to be an aphrodisiac grass, in our Tanzya tribe, someone used this thing to seduce an aunt, a young married woman. Let's eat it together; I want to have another round with you.]

[You pick them up.]

Aiwa's spirit was already down, right now he didn't even have the strength to crawl up, he regretted sending his energy to Wuya twice. Right now he wanted to use the aphrodisiac grass on the wall to freshen up; so as to not become this girl's captive.

Wuya lifted her buttocks, letting Aiwa's long thing come out of her pussy. Standing from on top of Aiwa's body, Wuya pulled out three thin pieces of black aromatic herb chewing them inside her mouth.

She once again came down, continuously chewing, waiting until the black aromatic herb leafs became soft inside her mouth, then she kissed Aiwa, letting the juice from that grass completely enter Aiwa's mouth. And Aiwa thinking of recovering his physical strength simply swallowed that grass juice.

What Aiwa didn't expect was, his mind began to become dizzy, his body unable to move. Gradually, he lost consciousness.

After Aiwa woke up, it was already the time of sunset. He was on the slippery floor by himself, with no trace of Wuya! Aiwa carelessly wore his clothes, rushing out of the bathroom, he grabbed a soldier, showing him the black aromatic grass he plucked from the bathroom and asked the soldier: [What is this?]

That soldier couldn't understand why the senior officer was so angry, stammering he said: [Black — black aromatic herb.]

[What's its use?]

[Ane — — Anaesthetic use!]

Favargo's soldiers all recognized this grass, because whenever they sustained injuries in battle, when getting treated by the doctor for treatment of fractures, they had no choice but to use this thin grass to lighten their pain.

[Fuck! This small woman dared to cheat daddy!]

TLN: Laozi —-> daddy

[Senior officer, who cheated you?]

The soldier thought that Aiwa was cursing at him, because of his explanation. Aiwa also didn't speak, pushing the soldier away, he searched everywhere, but he knew, this Tanzya woman must have escaped at dawn, impossible to again fall under his clutches.

The few squads which went out to ambush didn't receive Aiwa's order to retreat; they were at their original position. It seems that, before Wuya escaped, those Tanzyanians didn't come to Favargo to save her. This made Aiwa very disheartened, he believed that by capturing the counterparts high-ranking officer, they would come to rescue, he didn't expect that Tanzyanians didn't have even this little bit of conscience!

These Tanzyanians were wise. Since Wuya this kind of high-ranking military officer met with an ambush, it was possible that if Kayseri set out, she could also fall for a trap. Therefore, the Tanzyanians were unwilling to take this risk. Aiwa transmitted the retreat order.

During the evening, all squads returned back. They all reported that no Tanzanian tried to invade Favargo.

When the enemy was met with an ambush, they would definitely have the mind to make reprisals; however, after meeting with an ambush, they were more on guard, thinking it would be very problematic if they fell into a trap once again.

Aiwa thought of offering Wuya to the Queen and getting promoted, but he didn't expect Wuya would run away, although he almost threw away his life, it was fortunate that he was still alive.

According to Aiwa's arrangement, all the mountain passes were filled with traps, if the enemy invaded, although they would lose their lives, during the confusion they could escape, reducing the danger to Favargo.

[Today evening everyone take a good rest. Take note to conserve your physical strength, after two days we'll again fight with the Tanzanians!]

Aiwa was unwilling to give up, even if the counterpart didn't come to challenge, he would take the initiative to take the fight to them, he didn't believe, those trouble loving Tanzanians would be willing to take things lying down, not coming to plunder Favargo?

The following day, under Aiwa's order, Favargo civilians all took rest. The business with those outside the village also became a bit friendly.

An individual charming youngster, walked towards Favargo's city gate.

His calm and elegance made the few city guards think he was younger brother of some Favargo's rich family and didn't inspect him, letting him easily enter the city walls.

This handsome youngster roved around many regions inside the city walls.

After he walked around a few times, he asked someone: [What's the name of our current magistrate?]

Everyone looked at the handsome youngster, taking the initiative to surround him. [They say it's a youngster from Montelago City, General Kyle's son, has courage and schemes, yesterday his plan grabbed one high-ranking female general, however it's a pity she ran away.]

[What is he called? Who is Kyle again?]

The handsome youngster made a solemn expression, however everyone argued to chat with him. Because they knew from his adornments that he was a rich and powerful family's son.

[General Kyle is Montelago City's Supreme Military Senior Officer, is the Queen's subordinate, Crimson Man! Clearly this Senior Aiwa has boundless prospects!]

Everyone tried to fawn over the handsome youngster, while trying to show off the power behind their senior officer.

[Does senior Aiwa often come outside to experience the circumstances of the people?]

The youngster asked. That tone was as cold as an icy night; merely that voice was soft, resembling a woman.

[Look, isn't that Senior Aiwa? He came!]

Everyone excitedly stood up. That youngster raised his head, looking at Aiwa walking to this side accompanied by two attendants.

The youngster's heart couldn't help but feel ecstasy.

Only the youngster didn't advance forward to greet, during the brief encounter between him and Aiwa, their sights met for a moment, the youngster's sight quickly avoided his sight.

Regarding a man, Aiwa never had any interest, let alone his looks almost resembled a woman. Aiwa walked outside the city gate accompanied by the attendants. The youngster soon caught up with them.

It was afternoon; the sun was inclining to the west, almost touching the hilltop. There were mountains all around here, every day the sun was visible for less than 8 hours, therefore, coming to the countryside at this time, enjoying the warm sunshine, was a satisfying affair.

Having confidence in his traps, Aiwa concluded that Tanzyanians wouldn't try to invade Favargo inside a short term, therefore whenever he went outside he was at ease, like he was leisurely strolling around his courtyard, and didn't have

even the least bit of mental precaution, the reason why he was accompanied by two attendants, was just in order to show his extravagance that's all, to explain the misunderstanding when someone doesn't believe he is Favargo's senior officer.

[Such a beautiful sun!]

When Aiwa was approximately 1 li outside the city, appreciating the sun, he suddenly heard a voice from behind.

Aiwa turned around to look, he saw a youngster standing not far from him, looking at the sun in the sky with fascination, that look seemed very devoted. Right now this youngster gave off a Daoist Immortal kind of graceful feel to others.

[Who are you?]

Aiwa asked. The youngster's appearance felt somewhat familiar to him, but he couldn't remember where he had seen this youngster.

[Grand and supreme Regional Senior Officer naturally won't be able to recognize this small civilian. I am Tule family's first son, Senior Officer knows or not?]

That youngster payed his respects to Aiwa and confidently looked towards him.

[We're acquainted?]

Aiwa asked. He again recovered his regional senior officer's dignity. [What Tule, how would I know. Favargo has a population of more than 20,000, will I be able to recognize everyone?] But Aiwa knew, taking a local post, he had to rely on the power of the local rich families. Without their support, many things couldn't be done; therefore, just now he was a little bit gentle.

[If senior Aiwa isn't in a hurry tonight, little brother wishes to accompany you to drink a cup of wine in that small store, afterwards wouldn't we become acquainted?]

That calling himself as Tule family's first son youngster pointed towards a nearby small family store and said. [Excuse me; can your senior officer drink?]

Aiwa asked the two attendants accompanying him.

Those attendants didn't dare to restrict the senior officer's freedom, even if there was any rule, they were improbable to speak, anyway Aiwa had the final say here, whatever he says was what will happen. So the two attendants tactfully laughed saying: [It seems there isn't any such rule.]

Actually they also thought of going inside the wine shop, even if they could sniff the flavour inside it was also good. Since there wasn't any need to pay from their pockets for that.

[That's good, since this Tule's noble son is giving a dinner party, I'll be impolite. Let's go.]

Aiwa without a least bit of vigilance followed that elegant youngster inside the family wine shop.

Tule's noble son acted as the host, immediately arranging food and drinks, after the two individuals ate together. The two attendants also sat at another table to eat.

After drinking three rounds of wine, Aiwa suddenly felt dizzy. His consciousness was hazy, thinking of moving his dou qi, he heard that elegant youngster say [Fall] Aiwa stood up swaying like a paper doll.

Aiwa knew he was duped, he assembled all the strength of his body, thinking of attacking the counterpart, however, the amount of dou qi he could use now couldn't even compare to a tenth of his usual strength, the counterpart didn't even receive a least bit of injury.

All the persons inside the inn stood up, frightened hiding in a corner, and those two attendants had long ago fallen under the table.

At this time, a few pretty women came inside, flocking, they stiffly lifted Aiwa's tall figure, carrying him on top of a horse's back.

That elegant youngster pulled down the turban over the head, revealing a head full of golden hair; originally she was Favargo's captive from yesterday Wuya!

Wuya quickly mounted the horse, one hand holding the reins, and the other

embracing the unconscious Aiwa, urging the horse, the other few women also mounted their warhorses, following behind, disappearing within the dense mountain forest.

Aiwa was tied on the horse's back, although he was unable to move, his mind was still clear, he knew, this move, was surely done by Tanzyanians. He raped the captive Tanzya high-ranking female general Wuya, how could they leave the matter at that? Their plan to capture him this time; could still have what good fruit to eat? If they didn't peel his skin then that would be a fortunate thing. Tanzyanian warhorses run very fast, Aiwa's body lied on the horseback, that shaking made him feel unwell, but he only thirsted to have his life, making him unable to speak.

According to what he knew, counterpart only knocked him out inside the wine shop, and didn't take his life, if they let him live, he had a chance to escape. But when he was thinking of this, he felt dazed and lost consciousness.

When Aiwa was in a daze, someone lifted him from the horseback, Bang! He was thrown on to the ground from the horseback. Fortunately, he had anti-fall training from when he was small, this physical pain was nothing.

[Kayseri, this is precisely Favargo's highest official, I have captured him, how are going to handle this?]

Wuya strong and healthily jumped from the horseback, apparently, Aiwa's thick meat rod hadn't injured her body, she stood there, showing a victorious appearance, to say, even Tanzyanians were on the rise, there was never the precedent of someone capturing Favargo's highest officer, it could be said Wuya was the first to set up this merit.

[First tie him up; we'll have an open assembly over there.]

The beautiful Kayseri merely glanced towards Aiwa, turning around to the meeting over there. For any major event, the leader assembled a meeting to discuss it. Even if it was Kayseri who had supreme command and power, she was improbable to make an arbitrary decision; it was only done under an emergency situation.

Squads of high-ranking military officers successively entered the conference hall.

Kayseri swept her gaze around the face of every high-ranking military officer present here; her slender and good-looking finger hit the tabletop. Not only did these women look pretty, but their whole body was also extravagant. Almost all Tanzanian high quality goods were plundered from Favargo by these women, for example the necklace on their necks, as well as the silver ornaments on their body.

[I say kill him, if not, can't say they'll again come to rob us, sooner or later bringing a disaster.]

One girl called Hwajiya said, although she looked like she was 17 year old, but she had already charged through the enemy lines more than once, and was also very famous within the Tanzya high-ranking military officers.

[We can kill one small petty Favargo official, but this man is Favargo's leader, also the son of Hass Empire's famous General Kyle, if we kill him, isn't that making enemies between us and the entire Hass Empire, although Queen Sofia wouldn't lower herself to our level, would General Kyle let us off?]

Kayseri gave a solemn gaze towards Hwajiya, she thought although this girl was an expert in combat, on other aspects her brain didn't seem to work.

[That doesn't mean we can let him be our leader? Or raise him; letting him eat our difficult to obtain food?] Hwajiya criticized Kayseri.

Kayseri glanced towards her and didn't speak anymore, she understood, letting this girl clearly understand was going to take some effort, it seems she had to hold a study camp, raising this small general political consciousness a bit.

[First let's give him a bit of time, let him promise to loosen our bilateral military defense, or else we won't let him return!]

Wuya first expressed the idea of not killing Aiwa, after she had her first sex with him, Aiwa's semen still remained inside her body, she didn't know whether or not she would bear Aiwa's child, just in case it happens, what would she say if her child asks why haven't a father? However she couldn't speak out her selfishness in front of everyone.

[If Kayseri doesn't have a plan, then give this gigolo to me as my male love pet, his looks are pretty good, height also pretty big, much better than our Tanzya

men.]

An individual not only pretty appearance, but also a amorous and feral 11 year old* woman stood up, the muscles on her arms were proof of her power, her erect twin peaks showed her unusual libido. Looking at her body, she could be considered to be Tanzya strongest woman, her first impression in a man's mind would be: If a man inserted his long genitals inside her hole, it would surely be clamped to two sections by her!

**TLN: The raws really say she's 11 year old! Let's imagine she matured quite fast!*

[Lumen, aren't you being very tyrannical? This person was captured by Wuya, why can you alone take him?]

A very seemingly gentle and weak, but very confident woman said, her figure wasn't coarse like Lumen, but no one dared to despise her cleverness, although strength wasn't her forte, but she had a charm which could shake a man.

[That's also good, if Lucy also likes this gigolo from Hass, I can share with you, we'll one after one go into battle, it could also be considered as his first punishment, letting him taste our Tanzya woman's fierceness!]

Although Lumen was more capable than Lucy, speaking of it she was never tough towards Lucy. No matter what affair, if only Lucy comes out, she would always concede.

The appearance of this woman called Lucy could be said to be one of the most beautiful woman in Tanzya, but everyone knew, Lucy's libido was even more intense and vigorous than Lumen's, every evening waves of yelling transmitted out of their tents, this was sufficient to let every Tanzanian know of their fierceness, therefore no man dared to go and provoke these two female generals.

Chapter 7: This Hass person belongs to me

Volume 2 Chapter 7

This Hass Man Is Mine

As Tanzya's leader, Kayseri never took part in the struggle between her subordinates, consisting of the matter regarding this Favargo's supreme commander. She used an acquiescent style to give Aiwa as a present to Lucy and Lumen, inside the whole Tanzya tribe, there weren't any men left who were able to satisfy the libido of these two women, it was the so-called getting used to somebody's taste, by bestowing this spoils of war brought by Wuya this time to these two female generals, they would more energetically fight for Tanzya's benefit.

[It seems you aren't happy with me giving away your spoils of war?]

Kayseri gently caressed Wuya's thin shoulders, from her expression; she could see that Wuya didn't like the decision of sending Aiwa to these unusually intense women. Although Wuya didn't understand male-female matters, but after the experience of having sex with Aiwa at Favargo, it had already sprouted feelings in her towards Aiwa, but she was after all a young lady, and when these adult women were fighting over a man, which Tanzya girl would be able to speak out.

[I merely don't like that Lumen's overbearing style, this man was obviously brought back by me]

Wuya was unable to speak out an adequate reason.

[When you were captured, they didn't bully you right?]

Kayseri faced Wuya and asked, that gaze looked like she was interrogating her.

Wuya was unable to avoid this question, if she found that she had conceived Aiwa's child, then how would she be able to deceive the leader? This moment of

silence had already answered Kayseri.

[The let those two take revenge for you!]

Kayseri spoke with hate. A Tanzya girl was raped by a man from Favargo, this was naturally a disgrace for Tanzyanians, so, letting these unusual sexually capable Lumen and Lucy two persons violently rape this Favargo's head, was an impartial measure.

Kayseri couldn't let Wuya go and rape Aiwa, after looking at his tall stature, she really didn't know how painful it would be if this guy's dick was inserted inside this girl's vagina.

Wuya sadly walked over to her tent. Kayseri specially took notice of her walking manner; it seemed as if there wasn't problem. Don't tell me this Hass man's wares and stature weren't of the same proportion? Kayseri was puzzled and shook her head.

The curtain of night slowly rose up from the horizon, hiding all the Tanzya tents under it, everything became unclear in the ashy mist, besides the warning sentinels, everyone went inside their tents, having an early meal, squeezing into their warm beds.

Since several hundred years past Tanzyanians had already formed a habit, no matter when, someone was always assigned for warning in all four directions, just in case any wind was moving around, the Tanzyanians inside the tents would immediately come out, mounting a horse and throwing themselves into the fight while carrying their blades. It was due their highly vigilant nature, that they were able to exist on this land, even if the surrounding big empires had sent a punitive force towards them; they never had the strength to injure them.

This was a very strange group; a man basically didn't have any status or right of speech. On this land, a man was merely a tool to carry on the ancestral line, very difficult to satisfy a woman's libido; even if a man's libido was very strong, but the common circumstances were that their sexual capabilities weren't that large, often making their women more and more irritated.

Therefore, after Aiwa was knocked out by Wuya, an idea to obtain Aiwa rose in the hearts of many Tanzya women, merely thinking of their position and power, it was still insufficient to request Aiwa, thus, during the whole meeting, only

Lumen and Lucy were able to obtain this spoils of war.

Regarding gold, silver, money and valuables, Kayseri didn't care much about them, but this Favargo's leader gave rise to her attention, but as the chief, she couldn't always think of her benefit, after Lumen and Lucy expressed their wish to receive Aiwa, it wouldn't be good for the leader to speak anything else.

Kayseri only lied down in her nightwear, not sleeping, she rested her head on the pillow looking pensive. [Mama, I heard you sent the Favargo senior officer older sister Wuya caught to Lucy and Lumen, you are the leader, why haven't you set him aside for yourself?]

Lying beside Kayseri was a maroon haired young lady; those beautiful deep blue eyes shining in the darkness due to the oil lamp could captivate any man. Her chest wasn't completely developed; through her skin-tight clothing two small hills were visible on her slightly bulging chest.

[It's because mama is the leader that I can't fight over this with other people, understood?]

Kayseri caressed her daughter's head. She wasn't able to convince even herself using this explanation.

Her daughter made a half-understood wink, [Then if I become the leader, I'll be the first to enjoy all the spoils of war!]

A more than 10-year-old girl clearly couldn't understand her mother's wishes.

Kayseri laughed, pulling the quilt over that slightly bulging daughter's small chest. The Tanzanians tents were scattered, this was favourable during an emergency situation, but the tents of a few important generals were always near the leader's tent. If someone inside a tent shouted loudly, then the persons in the other tents could clearly hear them. This was also for the purpose of combat.

Although Lumen's figure was strong, she was very tactful about one matter, she knew Lucy was Kayseri's front crimson man, therefore she didn't want to offend her, since she demanded this Hass empire man, she had no choice to wrong herself and share this man, letting Lucy also take a bite of the bread.

All the tents of Tanzya's main higher ranked officers were much bigger than those of other higher ranked officers; this was similar to their authority. It was

also because being able to obtain this privilege, that many talented Tanzyanians were encouraged and did their best to practice martial arts, to raise their position.

Lumen and Lucy entered the tent; Lucy had already finished her bath, lying on the couch wearing a wide gown over her shoulders. And two maids were bathing Aiwa on behalf of him. There was a brazier in the middle of the tent; coal was burning inside it, making the whole tent warm while letting a person feel sleepy.

Lumen had also already changed her battle gown, wearing a gorgeous skirt dress worn on holidays, that full body skirt clothes hid her sturdy muscles, giving a feel as if she was changed with another person, seeming somewhat softer. Although she was widely known as being barbarous, she was also a beautiful woman. At the very least her well-rounded breasts would very pleasantly receive a man's favour.

Not being polite to Lucy, Lumen sat down on Lucy's wide bed. Their two gazes fell on Aiwa's body, which was in the middle of receiving a bath.

Since Aiwa woke up, he knew it was useless to resist, so, he obediently listened to these Tanzya woman's arrangements, he undressed when he was told to undress, he stood where he was told to stand, sat where he was told to sit, he had no thoughts of accepting any physical pain. He knew what he had done to Wuya, their reprisals were unavoidable, but before receiving their reprisals, he was a bit lucky, stirring up these two woman's anger.

Those two maids carefully scrubbed Aiwa's robust skin, when their fingers touched the long thing in between Aiwa's crotch, they couldn't help but think of wiping it obtaining a bit of profit. Although these two maids responsible for bathing couldn't be regarded as beautiful women within Tanzya; however they couldn't be loathed by Aiwa; especially their already developed twin peaks, seeing them made Aiwa's libido quickly surge up.

Those two maids alternately scrubbed Aiwa's thick meat spear, as if they were conscientiously doing their duty. [Don't think I'm not looking, you haven't finished groping his body using this chance, but we can't wait anymore!]

Lumen was already impatient after seeing those two maids continuously rub at Aiwa's long thing between his crotch.

Especially when Lumen saw that long thing between his crotch expand not being able to fit their two hands after receiving the maids caress, her heart's desire became more intense, the place between her legs already becoming a bit moist. She couldn't help but extend one of her hands to fondle her plump and erect breasts.

[Yes, general, it's done.]

After those two maids heard the angry Lumen, they didn't dare to slack, speeding up their washing speed, after cleaning the bathing liquid left on Aiwa's body, they went to one side.

[Lumen, you contrarily are very impatient! Otherwise, why don't you go first, I will look from here? Going again after waiting for you to finish playing and satisfying your desire is also not late.]

Although she was present in front of Lumen, Lucy still tried to be relatively superior, at least when they were sharing the benefits, Lucy always showed a bit of magnanimity towards Lumen. She was still lying on top of the couch, indifferently waiting to have a look at Aiwa's and Lumen's good show.

[Hass man, quickly come over, lick here twice for this old woman!]

Lumen shifted her body on top of Lucy's bed, she lifted her legs, exposing her snow white skin, Aiwa was directly facing her, seeing that she didn't wear anything under her skirt, looking at her jet-black underbrush.

Aiwa didn't dislike licking a woman's pussy, but he disliked this kind of yelling woman. He thought this Tanzya woman was calling him as if she was calling an ox, so, when he was walking towards the bedside, an ominous glint couldn't help but arise inside his eyes.

[What? still haven't received your anger after becoming a captive? If you serve this old woman well, can't say you can still receive a reward, if not, be careful of eating sufferings at this old woman's hand!]

Lumen neither negatively nor positively said, her two legs hadn't parted; rather she waited for Aiwa to come serve her.

Aiwa came in front of the bed, he still thought of crawling on the bed, but Lumen obstructed her with her foot: [No, do it from the front of the bed.]

Aiwa hesitated a bit, standing there; he reached out his hand to pull up Lumen's skirt. If speaking of figure, Lumen could be regarded as a beautiful woman, her two long legs didn't have a bit excess flesh, when she huddled her legs, the muscles on top of her thighs extended towards her crotch. Aiwa really doubted whether or not her vagina and labia were also made of powerful muscles, capable of snapping off his big meat rod.

Aiwa used both hands to pull her knees, if he used his full force to strike now, he was absolutely capable of cleaving open this Tanzya woman's legs, at the same time splitting open her body into two half's.

However Aiwa didn't do that, after all this woman possessed some beauty, furthermore her libido was also strong, generally the energy of woman with intense libido was also vigorous, it would be better to use this chance to have sex with her, absorbing a portion of energy inside her body and supplying it to train his own dou qi. These high ranking women officers weren't ordinary women, their bodies were already capable of gathering moonlight essence, although it couldn't be compared to Ruth, but it was absolutely a hundredfold ahead of ordinary women.

Although Lucy was calm on the surface, but her quiet heart was also a bit puzzled by Aiwa's vigorous and thick body, inside the Tanzya tribe, when was there someone with such well-developed muscles? Again where would someone go to seek such a handsome man? Especially that long thing between his crotch, which Tanzya man was able to be his equal?

Aiwa had also heard, although Tanzya men could last a bit longer, they couldn't compare to Hass men in terms of length, let alone how could they compare to a deity like Aiwa, it was like speaking of two things on the same day.

And compared to Lumen, Lucy could be said to be a fairy descended from the heavens. Not only was her figure slim, but her skin was exquisite and flexible, those pretty cheeks would draw the envy of every person within the female generals, her deep blue eyes, looked like two clear springs, again seemed like two deep lakes. If her that sight went over once, it was sufficient to instakill all the men in the whole world.

Right now she was lying there, with a simple nightgown covered over her body,

and her tall peaks propped up together, that appearance could make a man's heart surge up.

After looking at Lucy's tempting figure and charming eyes, Aiwa's yang root instantly became hard, it seemed more elated than the time it was caressed by those two maids. Aiwa secretly used his yin technique, in a moment, a pink fog pervaded inside the tent, only Lumen and Lucy weren't able to see this fog, they didn't possess such deep insight, they could only feel their libido expand quickly.

Aiwa slowly separated Lumen's long legs, exposing her hungry pussy, lowering his head; Aiwa lightly licked once on top of her vulva which was already dripping with nectar, Lumen couldn't help but give out a happy moan. [Oh — — your tongue is very unusual — —]

Lumen ridiculously twisted her body, expressing her fondness towards Aiwa's mouth, especially his tongue's tip. Furthermore, right now Aiwa's yin technique had already shown its effect; in fact Aiwa mostly focused his yin technique on Lucy lying on the couch, because Aiwa could handle Lumen at this side using his mouth.

When Aiwa was licking Lumen's pussy, two small snakes flew out of the pink mist entering under Lucy's nightgown, teasing her sensitive location.

Aiwa's tongue was similar to a powerful brush, sweeping on top of Lumen's vulva; this made her body shiver in waves, at the same time making the sexual secretions inside that cave flow out majestically.

Aiwa was able to smell her cave mouth's smell, because she had just taken a bath, it still emitted the smell of a bathing liquid made from a compound of aromatic herbs.

[Aiwa, quickly pierce me, it's itching inside — —]

In front of a captive like Aiwa, there wasn't a need for Lumen to be embarrassed; she knew a robust man like Aiwa could give pleasure to both her body and soul.

Aiwa obeyed the order, supporting his long thing, using one hand to hold it, letting that thick glans penis grind Lumen's cave mouth dripping with sexual secretions.[Wu — —]

Lumen's body writhed.

And Lucy was also unable to keep lying on the couch, she felt as if her whole body was being caressed all over by a man's two big hands, kneading and pinching her, especially her breasts and the cave below were this way. But she wasn't extreme like Lumen, merely endured silently and secretly moaned.

[Pu zi] Aiwa loosened his hand, straightening his buttocks, that long thing immediately rammed inside Lumen's opening and closing flesh hole.

That flesh hole was very deep, all of a sudden taking in more than half of Aiwa's thick thing before it was obstructed.

[Very painful] Aiwa secretly shouted in his heart, furthermore he immediately felt the pincer attack from Lumen's flesh hole. In order to prove the powerful wind of a Hass man, Aiwa directly pierced that pike towards Lumen's deeply hidden flower bud!

[Oh — — a very powerful one] Lumen's jade neck couldn't help but move back, at the same time a strong and powerful contraction burst at her pussy, closely clamping on Aiwa's thick rod. Although Tanzya woman were fierce, but Aiwa's younger brother was also not to be trifled with, that thickness, length, firmness, were all things Tanzya men were unable to compare with.

[Aah — — I've never experienced so much pleasure — — very thick — —]

Lumen already took the initiative to take off the nightgown Aiwa had lifted until her belly, exposing her snow-white jade flesh; her two great mountains were quite flexible, moving on top of her snow-white chest, those two nipples were standing erect as if they were ripened mulberry fruits. Aiwa extended his hand, grabbing those two big meat buns.

[Wu — — oh — — fierce — —]

Lumen cried out.

Beside the big bed, Lucy was using her hand to fondle her well rounded chest, lightly massaging her two erect breasts, not a bit having a proper lady's appearance. Then she stretched her other hand under her skirt, passionately caressing at a woman's most secret region.

[Oh — —]

A soft bit alluring moan finally came out of Lucy's mouth. After hearing that moan, Aiwa was very excited, his body suddenly straightened, deeply pounding inside Lumen's deep cave.

[Aah — —you'll kill me — —]

Lumen didn't expect this meat rod to be this ferocious, she immediately felt as if there was a rod stabbing at her uterus, the accompanying intense pleasure and pain couldn't help but make her shout, those cries rushed out of Lucy's tent, passing through 10m of air, until they reached inside Kayseri's tent.

[Mama, isn't this Lumen's yelling? You listen to her excited sounds, they seem much unrestrained?]

Beira hadn't fallen asleep, her mood was the same as her mama; merely there was a disparity in the time of manifestation.

[Beira, this matter doesn't concern you, you're still small, you don't understand, barely relying on my power mama is unable to control other clan's army.]

Kayseri once more caressed her daughter's head and said. However right now she was unable to speak of the political struggle inside the Tanzya tribe to her insensible daughter, she simply couldn't understand.

[Ma, I understand, the reason they are so rampant, is that they haven't held you as their leader from the start, if they still revered you, the right thing would have been to deliver that captive Favargo's leader to you!]

Beira seemed like a strategist who had already understood the power workings, regarding her mama's forbearance, she couldn't comprehend. It was quite clear, if she was to become the leader in the future, she would never let this kind of thing happen.

The sound of Lucy's joyful yelling and Lucy's moaning provoked Kayseri who couldn't fall asleep, it wasn't that she liked to be held by Aiwa, rather she couldn't enjoy the thing which made a Tanzya woman most excited, that made her feel a bit wronged.

Beira suddenly crawled from the bed, going outside wearing a gown. [Beira, where are you going?]

Kayseri immediately yelled at her daughter.

[Shoot! To relieve myself.]

Beira only wore a gown, not wearing anything at her waist and rushed out.

There wasn't a washing space inside the tent, Kayseri couldn't help but deeply sigh.

Lucy was inside the tent, those two women Lumen and Lucy were releasing lewd sounds, because right now Aiwa was alternately thrusting inside both of these women. That thick meat rod was vigorously piercing those two female chiefs making them give out loud shouts. They were never pierced by a man like this, that excitement and pleasure made them give out uncontrollable loud shouts.

After looking at Beira coming over, the two maids standing outside immediately bowed their heads, lifting the entrance curtain to the tent.

[Please princess.]

Beira went in without glancing sideways, after seeing those two female chiefs suffering terribly under Aiwa's drilling; she couldn't help but feel disgusted.

As she entered the tent, it seemed as if the whole atmosphere inside the tent froze, those two excited women suddenly felt one kind of choking oppression.

Lucy first crawled from under Aiwa's body and stood up: [Princess Beira!]

She hurriedly covered her private positions with her clothes, covering her flesh hole which was already flowing with sexual secretions after getting excited by Aiwa. After seeing crawl up from the bed, Lumen also couldn't help but stop crying out: [What happened?]

She asked the stunned Lucy. Lucy gave a signal to her; Lumen also quickly crawled up from the bed.

It seemed that Beira's prestige had more intimidating power than her mother, she didn't even speak, at once making Lumen's lust quickly decrease. Right now Aiwa's thick meat rod was still inserted deep inside Lumen's flesh hole flooded

with sexual secretions.

[Princess Beira has what matter here?]

Lumen slowly loosened her flesh hole, pulling her buttocks backwards, letting Aiwa's meat rod break away from her body. Although these two persons dared to be rampant in front of Kayseri, but in front of this Princess Beria, they had no choice to exercise a bit of restraint, because, Kayseri would always consider the bigger picture, giving some face to these outstanding female chiefs, but this little princess never considered their feelings always using the privilege of being the princess.

[Give this Hass man to me!]

Beira quickly turned around to leave after saying this; those two maids bowed sending her off.

[Deliver at once deliver, who asked the other person to be the princess!]

Lumen without any choice covered her body with the nightgown. After getting used to Aiwa's thick rod she seemed a bit reluctant to part with it. She had just received her first orgasm. [Go.]

Lumen patted Aiwa's buttocks, letting him get down the bed.

[Let him wear some clothes, we cannot let him go naked like this.]

Lucy said. Her thoughts were always a bit thoughtful.

Following the two maids, Aiwa was delivered to Kayseri's tent.

[Generalissimo, we have a person to deliver here.]

The two maids held Aiwa and entered inside Kayseri's tent. Right now the mother-daughter Kayseri and Beira were lying on the warm bed.

Kayseri immediately understood what the matter was, just now Beira didn't go out to relieve herself, rather went to get the person for her.

[Beira, how can you be like this?]

Kayseri coquettishly protested.

[Originally he should have been enjoyed by you first. You are the Generalissimo!]

Beira not accepting the anger gave a compliment to her mother in return. Aiwa saw the charming Kayseri wearing only nightgown attire, half of her chest was exposed outside, when Aiwa came in, she still hadn't covered up, as she didn't have the need to cover herself in front of a captive.

Although Aiwa was wearing a cotton gown, but that standing up meat spear had already made Kayseri clear about its size. [Return and say to Lumen, I thank her and Lucy.]

Kayseri waved her hands towards the two maids, she didn't want to argue with her daughter now, moreover the man was already delivered, and it would be useless to again return him. Furthermore, she also thought that her daughter's method was also not improper.

The two maids hurriedly made a [Yes] sound and withdrew.

Aiwa didn't receive Kayseri's command, so he stood there without any option. Although this tent was big, but when compared to his tall height, standing there gave an oppressive feel to the tent's mistress. [You come over.]

Kayseri waved her hand towards Aiwa.

When Aiwa stood in front of her, the rising place in front of his crotch gave rise to her attention. Her sight couldn't help but get fixed at there.

Aiwa had just recently sucked in the essence from Lucy and Lumen's body, right now he was filled with energy all over, becoming very spirited. His blue eyes were also mysteriously looking at the reclining mother-daughter pair on the bed, although Beira's figure wasn't developed, her budding beauty was also quite charming, Aiwa naturally thought of putting this humble child showing a commander-in-chief's elegance in order together with her mother.

Looking at her slightly bulging small chest, as well as the outline of her long legs covered by the thin quilt, Aiwa's lust was similar to pouring oil on burning firewood, raging and igniting. His meat spear inside the cotton gown couldn't help but rise once more.

Kayseri concluded, making Lumen and Lucy those two vigorous women excited, was surely this chap!

[What are you doing not taking off that gown; don't you want to warm up

inside this tent?]

Kayseri's expression was serious; however her voice was exceptionally gentle.

[I still haven't received generalissimo's command.]

Right now Aiwa completely didn't conduct himself as Favargo's supreme senior officer, and resembled a small soldier under Kayseri's tent.

Kayseri laughed satisfactorily: [Take off, you can come and sleep at my side.]

Kayseri's finger pointed to her right side, to the left was her daughter. Kayseri still didn't know Beira used her title as Tanzya's princess and demanded Aiwa, if she knew; she would have admired her daughter's handling capability even more.

Kayseri dared to hold this Favargo region's supreme senior officer and sleep while embracing, this was proof of the incomparable confidence she had in herself as Tanzya's Generalissimo, she knew there were many persons inside Hass empire who could use dou qi, but she didn't believe this 17, 18-year-old big boy would have any techniques, he would have at most received the Queen's reward because his father was the empire's important general, so, in Kayseri's eyes, Aiwa was only a child.

Kayseri hadn't slept with a man in a long time, her body was like a parched sapling, urgently needing a man's moistness, since this big boy was improbable to have any danger, she thought of enjoying as much she wanted, but her heart had already formulated a plan, she was improbable to loudly call out like Lumen and Lucy, that would make her lose her elegance as the generalissimo, moreover her daughter was still at her side.

However, sleeping while hugging this kind of robust man was a wonderful thing; something to be envied. Her sleeping with Aiwa this one night, was to show her might as the generalissimo to those women longing for a man, Lucy and Lumen, giving out unrestrained calls like animals by just a man's touch.

Aiwa took off his cotton gown, immediately exposing his darling which could excite a Tanzya woman with one look. Beira was dumbstruck after looking. She imagined, if this more than 1 chi longer chap stabbed inside her body, wouldn't it make her unable to breathe!

Kayseri lifted her quilt letting Aiwa lie at her right side.

Aiwa squeezed into Kayseri's embrace, stretching his hands to grab her big breasts, although separated by a layer of clothes, after that one hold, Kayseri's body immediately went limp. [Oh — —]

Kayseri gave out an unrestrained moan.

Chapter 8: An Unforeseen Event

Volume 2 Chapter 8

An Unexpected Event

Right now Aiwa had already recovered his strength after getting knocked out, if he used his dou qi, then he could have easily knocked out the maids and escaped while he was being delivered to Kayseri's tent, however he didn't do that, because he had already seen Kayseri's dazzling features during the day. If he was able to sleep with this woman once, then it was a wonderful thing in his life.

Moreover the person, who demanded him just now, wasn't Kayseri, rather her immortal daughter. As for this Beira, she was more moving than her mother, those mellow cheeks and huge vivid eyes seemed as if they were born of the ling qi between heaven and earth.

Aiwa's big hand grabbed Kayseri's breast, breathing in the attractive fragrance from her body, it was very infatuating, if he wasn't Favargo's Senior Officer, he would have surely received Kayseri's punishment, the treatment he was receiving would have been a lot different. Although he was a captive, but it seemed to Kayseri that, he was a darling delivered by heaven, there was no harm in letting him take the initiative.

[Generalissimo, I was demanded by your daughter by using her position as Tanzya's princess, now you're holding me in your embrace, isn't this relying on force to bully others?]

Aiwa's hand directly went towards Kayseri's underwear, grabbing her ample and voluptuous breast.

[What did you say?]

Kayseri didn't dare to be convinced and looked towards her daughter, and Beira had narrowed her eyes right now, pretending to have fallen asleep.

[Of course, perhaps she demanded me for her mother, but in front of those two generals, she used her own mouth to demand me! Therefore, you must let me go inside your daughters quilt.]

Aiwa lustfully moved his thick meat rod on top of Kayseri's rich and beautiful leg, that erect meat rod was sufficient to bring huge undulations in her heart.

Kayseri believed Aiwa, if it was for her mother, Beira would have definitely said that, she merely spoke like that to defend her mother, this Generalissimo's face, if not, how could a girl go and demand a big man?

[Only, you are also pretty good, such a soft body, not resembling even a bit like the ice-cold expression on your face in the daytime, I wish to spend a very cheerful night with you.]

Saying this, Aiwa tormented Kayseri's breast, while stooping down his head kissing on top of her neck.

Kayseri hadn't adapted to this feeling that's all, after all she hadn't been caressed and kissed by a man like this since several years, whenever Aiwa's lips stuck on top of her skin, it made her body go limp all over, because her daughter was still at her side, she tried to control herself as much as possible, but a woman's instinct betrayed her, she was unable to restrain herself and hugged Aiwa's head, pressing him on top of her well-rounded chest, she felt a burning hot thing at Aiwa's crotch sticking to her thigh, she thirsted for Aiwa to immediately pull down her nightdress, and ravage her body, she wouldn't complain even if he split open her pussy, her hungry and thirsty body wasn't able to endure this man's enticement.

Since her daughter had demanded this man, surely her daughter also fancied this man, however, when this man touched her body, she also get intoxicated.

When Aiwa was thinking of lifting her nightdress, Kayseri still hesitated; she extended her hand to stop Aiwa. Aiwa lifted his head to look at her; she was indicating that her daughter hadn't fallen asleep.

Aiwa's hand didn't stop there, pressing on her smooth underbelly, again sliding

towards her pubis. Kayseri was worried that her daughter was still at the side, no matter what Aiwa wanted, the oil lamp on the top was still bright; Aiwa surrounded Kayseri's body using his well-built body.

A woman was after all a woman, Aiwa use a little force inside the quilt, her body quickly wriggled. Even if one wasn't lonely for many years, a woman would definitely become weak under this kind of teasing by a man.

[You mustn't move, Beira is still awake.]

Kayseri stopped the excited Aiwa, actually she was also unable to control herself; it was like when a hungry and thirsty person had found a water source, she merely used the rationality of being the Generalissimo to control herself.

[I don't want to be Favargo's Senior Officer, being an emperor's son-in-law at your side is good enough for me, what are you still afraid of? Your daughter brought me over, what matter doesn't she know, there's no need for you to avoid her right?]

Aiwa comforted Kayseri. This moment let Kayseri forget that this man was her enemy.

[Then be a bit gentle.]

Kayseri said in a low voice. After her body was teased by Aiwa, her body had already warmed up a lot, she couldn't help but lift the quilt on her body to one side, letting Aiwa crawl on top of her body.

Aiwa was also impolite; his hand lightly pulled the belt at her waist, in a moment opening the tying belt of the nightdress. Her nightdress immediately separated to either side, exposing her spotless white jade skin.

Aiwa didn't fondle them yet, he simply stooped down his head, kissing between her smooth cleavage. [Oh — —]

Kayseri's moan made the air inside the whole tent tremble for a moment. Aiwa's hands separated her nightdress to either side, exposing that graceful naked body in front of him. Right now, Kayseri didn't consider Aiwa as a captive, rather as a man, letting him manipulate her body.

Kayseri's nightdress was stripped down by Aiwa, her graceful curves, that

exquisite figure, especially her high twin peaks, made Aiwa's beast blood quickly boil up, and he couldn't help but suck her nipple, while gently caressing her smooth underbelly, his hand slowly slid down her abdomen towards her deep valley.

That thick pubic hair showed how intense her desire was, when Aiwa's finger reached the cave entrance of her tender hole, it could feel it was already wet with a viscous liquid.

[Generalissimo, you're leaking fluids!]

Aiwa lifted his head and said to Kayseri who was already a little intoxicated. Her charming sharp chin, was worthy of Tanzya's Generalissimo.

[Oh — — quickly pierce me once —]

Kayseri moaned in a low voice, she didn't want her daughter to know how thirsty and hungry her body was, but she was unable to control the pleasure received by Aiwa's caressing, she couldn't help but separate her legs, letting Aiwa's hand easily stretch until her crotch, since it had already come to this, she didn't want to conceal her desire anymore.

When her legs had separated, Aiwa's little finger naturally went inside her flesh hole, that side was more pleasurable and slippery, as a muddy paste, actually it resembled one marsh, if one wasn't careful they could at once could fall in it.

Kayseri's hands aimlessly caressed Aiwa's body, *ying ying* moaning sounds escaping from her sexy lips, her maroon hair swayed on the pillow, transmitting her raging inferno kind of desire.

Aiwa pressed his whole body on Kayseri's tempting naked body, experiencing her body's movements which were seeking Aiwa's thick meat rod, thinking of letting him smoothly insert inside her body. And whenever her vulva rubbed against Aiwa's meat rod, Aiwa quickly avoided it, making her great effort result in nothing.

This had already tormented the thirsty and hungry Kayseri, she wanted to use her hands to insert Aiwa's meat rod inside her body, but as the Generalissimo she also had some dignity, her dignity had already infiltrated her to the depths, even if her body felt unwell, she still tried to preserve.

[If you shout loudly, perhaps I can give it to you — —]

Aiwa nibbled Kayseri's sharp chin, his hands kneading her sexy breasts, not letting that burning hot thick thing go inside her flesh hole.

[Wu — —]

Her moan was still soft, as if it was issued from underground, but also very tempting. Because her moan wasn't fake, rather it evolved from the bottom of her heart; this was the reaction of her body after being unable to restrain her emotions.

[Still not enough, be louder.]

Aiwa had grasped this woman's weak point, he merely pressed that thick meat rod on Kayseri's vulva, but didn't insert it inside, that enticement was like one block of meat was hanging beside your mouth but you aren't able to eat it. [Aah — — give it to me!]

Kayseri's hands pressed on Aiwa's buttocks, thinking of leaving no place for Aiwa's meat rod to hide, however her efforts were fruitless, her cave was already muddy, but, also because it was this way, that his thick thing could move in relative to it, going under and to the side.

[Aiwa, quickly give it to me, satisfy me, I won't let you become their slave — —]

Kayseri's mouth murmured, she started to give a promise in confusion, naturally, Aiwa knew, as the generalissimo, she would be able to keep her promise, but violating the Tanzya tribe traditions for personal gains, also carried some risks, giving rise to interior mutiny.

[If I'm not your slave, then what will you make me? Will you make me your husband?]

Aiwa's thick thing forcefully milled on top of Kayseri's dripping vulva, it was difficult for this woman to endure the strange itching. Right now she couldn't be satisfied by merely getting her breasts kneaded by Aiwa's hands, as well as Aiwa's tongue kissing on top of her neck.

[Whatever you think — — want to do what — — all can — —]

Kayseri had already lost her principle, her murmuring came out of her writhing body.

Aiwa's body completely pressed down Kayseri's trembling naked body, [I at least want to become you mother-daughter pair's common husband, can I?]

Aiwa's lips stuck on the lovely skin on her face, licking her ear's border, extending his tongue's tip teasing her earlobe, a numbness extended towards Kayseri's whole body from there.

[You — — are threatening me — —]

Kayseri's mind was still not completely confused, but her body and soul were already on the edge of collapse. If Aiwa didn't hold her, she would fall inside a bottomless abyss. [It isn't threatening, this is an equivalent exchange, if you think of it as a profit, then you can agree, if you think you are suffering losses, there's still time for you to renounce it.]

Aiwa's thick glans penis was in front of her intensely reacting cave entrance, waiting eagerly, waiting for its master's command.

[Me — — get lost for me — —]

She powerlessly transmitted down an order. However Aiwa knew that she was speaking without meaning, she absolutely couldn't go against her desire.

[Becoming you mother-daughter pair's husband is very good, I can let you mother-daughter be happy everyday — —]

Not waiting for Kayseri to speak again, Aiwa directly delivered his thick penis inside the dripping wet cave.

[Oh —] a burning hot and rich feel crammed inside Kayseri's hungry and thirsty body, Aiwa let that eager meat rod deeply penetrate inside Kayseri's naked body, that thick thing pressed against her excited flesh walls, directly slipping towards her end, rubbing against her sensitive flower bud, making her lovely body tremble. That pain burst out through an unrestrained moan containing all the power of her body, but her throat forcibly stopped it bit by bit not letting it come out. Her waist muscles tensed, she spent a great effort to straighten her beautiful crotch, letting Aiwa's meat rod give more pleasure to her.

And when her body was straightened, Aiwa's buttocks again stuck out, maintaining a distance of 2mm from that flower bud!

This seemingly touching and not touching feel could make a woman who was on the edge of collapse really insane. And now Aiwa didn't merely think of tormenting her, there was another reason for this precaution, because he could clearly feel that, when he inserted his meat rod inside Kayseri's body, after getting surrounded by her bodily fluids, his thing had experienced a change, this change didn't appear when it was inside Lucy and Lumen, and happened when he was having sex with Wuya, also exactly the same!

He felt his penis quietly change after touching Kayseri's secretions! It wasn't shrinking, rather enlarging!

In order to not let the same situation appear again, Aiwa had no choice to use silently read his incantation, on this way, he could guarantee having sex smoothly with Kayseri.

After the experience of having sex with Wuya, Aiwa had already perfectly grasped that incantation's use, it was impossible to again let his penis get stuck inside Kayseri's body, again improbable to let his thing become like a small worm, making a woman dispirited.

But why was Kayseri's body different from Lucy and Lumen's? Don't tell me Kayseri's body was different from other Tanzya women? And Wuya was also a part of this other group? Naturally, another kind would be special cases like Lucy and Lumen these women. No matter what, right now Aiwa was improbable to let his penis stop inside Kayseri's body. He silently read the incantation, keeping a balance between the provocation caused to his penis by Kayseri's bodily fluids, taking his time, making that thick thing rub all around Kayseri's tender hole.

And speaking of Kayseri that pleasure was growing like a geometric series; her hot secretions also seeped out of some mysterious region due to that pleasure, gathering inside her cave.

Aiwa used his thing to explore her cave stirring it, he didn't find any difference between her cave and other women, even not having any difference to Hass women's cave, but those secretions were definitely not like Hass women's!

When there wasn't the need for Aiwa to read the incantations, he pressed his

lips on top of Kaiser's lips, saliva was already flowing out of her, if at a normal time, no matter how pretty a woman was, if saliva came out of her mouth, that would definitely be a shameful thing for her, however, right now when Aiwa saw saliva flowing from the corners of her mouth he thought she looked very beautiful.

He stretched his tongue licking Kayseri's saliva; taking it inside his mouth and swallowed it, afterwards his tongue followed the flowing saliva's path and returned while licking, when it still hadn't reached her mouth, Kayseri's fragrant tongue impatiently stretched out; she wanted to feel Aiwa kissing her mouth.

This was a thing she had thirsted for a long time, she thought Aiwa would quickly come and kiss her mouth, but this bastard tormented her body like that for a long time before coming to kiss her mouth.

Aiwa kissed Kayseri's fragrant lips, her small fragrant tongue immediately entered inside his mouth, these two persons tongues were similar to snakes intertwining with each other sending out their feelings.

[En — — aah — —]

Kayseri's mouth was already suffocated tightly by Aiwa's lips and tongue, her moans and ecstatic cries were similar to a person struggling while getting raped.

Right now Beira who was lying to the side slightly opened her beautiful eyes, blinking her long eyelashes, looking at her mother's side, listening to the ze ze sound of her body getting kissed by a man, looking at her mother crazing writhing under that man's body, this girl appeared indifferent, but curiosity filled eyes.

After Aiwa stooped down to kiss Kayseri for roughly 10 minutes, the two individuals felt a suffocating feel, Aiwa let go of her, lifting her body, and this posture change made it easy for him to deliver inside Kayseri's naked body, one side appreciating her beautiful tempting face, still looking at her erect and plump breasts trembling on a snow-white area.

Aiwa was thrusting inside Kayseri's body to one side, while looking at Beira, when his sight met hers, Beira didn't evade it, rather still calmly looked at Aiwa, merely it seemed as if there was a question inside her gaze — — is it very pleasurable?

Aiwa smiled towards Beira, of course once kind of confident laugh, Beira also smiled. They didn't need to speak, in the whole Tanzya tribe, Beira had never seen Aiwa this kind of soldierly handsome guy, when he was delivering on her mother's body, her face didn't show even a bit of fierceness, looking very tempting.

Aiwa's smile could make all of Tanzya women crazy, including this insensible child. Aiwa's meat rod had already pressed against Kayseri's body countless times until her flower bud came out, of course it meant it was the moment a woman's libido has reached the time for an orgasm, if there aren't any intense reactions, then this thing wouldn't come out, furthermore the degree of pleasure it caused in woman could bring out genuine reactions, even if she wanted to pretend, she couldn't pretend, because this thing couldn't be controlled by willpower, and was controlled by the amount of endocrine in a woman's body.

[Wu — — Aiwa, thrust a bit deeper again, I — — can't bear it — —]

Kayseri was already waiting for a long time, Aiwa didn't let his hard thing go thrust at her flower bud, making her body stay in a vague intense pleasure state, making her feel unwell.

[You still haven't answered my question.]

Aiwa's meat rod slightly left her flower bud, Aiwa thought he had succeeded, but her flower bud sprouted out a section, almost reaching her cave mouth. Aiwa had no choice to take out his meat rod, only letting a small section go in and out.

[Aah — — you first make me feel comfortable — — I'll say then — —]

Kayseri merely said that in order to have some face as the Generalissimo, not to haggle with this somewhat queer strong man. Actually she had already reached a compromise in her heart, she not only thought of possessing this strong man, but also thought of letting his daughter enjoy this man's protection, if other girls fought over to become his wife, she would surely regret.

[You promise first then I'll give it to you!]

Aiwa directly pulled out his meat rod outside her body, Kayseri's naked body

burning with lust immediately felt as if she was hollowed out; feeling very unwell.

[Aah — — quickly give it to me — —]

Kayseri's body tensed up, a portion of sex fluids immediately gathered and spurted outside, at the same time Aiwa felt her body's tenseness, he quickly dashed forwards, using his thick penis to block her cave mouth. When Kayseri's body was trembling along with the spurting sex fluids, Aiwa moved his dou qi, converting that portion of sex fluids into a strand of essence sucking it inside his body.

Inside Lucy's tent, he had used this method to suck Lucy and Lumen's sex fluids, it's a pity he had only sucked it once and hadn't converted their body's entire essence into his energy, before Beira appeared.

Right now Aiwa was merely standing up at her flower bud, and didn't thrust inside her cave, also haven't forcefully chased after that flower bud, this made Kayseri crave for more.

[Promise or not?]

Aiwa grabbed the optimum occasion to threaten her. [Aah — — my — — reply is — — agree — —]

Along with Kayseri's compromise, Aiwa all of a sudden rammed his hyperaemic meat rod on top of her flower bud, rapidly grinding it.

[Oh — — wu — —]

Kayseri's body also rapidly twitched. A portion of sex fluids again spurted out of her abyss, this time also Aiwa used his dou qi store a portion of essence inside his body.

Aiwa used the same method to continuously incite the igniting lust within Kayseri's body, her sex fluids spurted out again and again, but Aiwa still hadn't let off a single time, sucking all of her sex fluids inside his body.

Under Beira's attentive gaze, these two persons waged war for several hours, Kayseri's ecstatic cries penetrated out of her thick tent, making it hard for the women in the surrounding tents to sleep, when Kayseri was writhing in exhaustion, Aiwa released his semen in a crazy speed shooting it inside her body!

After Kayseri's body became tranquil, Aiwa slowly pulled out that meat rod which had completed its mission from her limp body.

Aiwa didn't avoid Beira's curious gaze she crawled up from her mother's bed, Aiwa's thick thing came into Beira's line of sight, her small face became slightly red, but she didn't move her gaze away.

He sat cross-legged between Beira and Kayseri, bringing his palms close towards his chest, breathing out stale air and breathing in fresh air, handling the essence qi he had just gathered from Kayseri's body. His dou qi revolved that essence qi around his whole body.

But after revolving for around one heaven circle, Aiwa's body suddenly swelled up. Those veins resembled like big earthworms crawling on top of his arm and back. His body transformed in a split second, his the flesh on his arm, head, as well as the muscles on his back, all resembled as if they had expanded due to dead qi, he could hearing his bones and joints issuing out a *ka ka* voice.

Aiwa was also frightened; he didn't know what had happened, as he had never met this kind of matter. But he made a great effort to keep his mind calm, because he felt that at the time his joints were issuing huge sounds, his power was also growing by many folds. He didn't know what had happened, when he had sex with Hass Empire women; such a thing had never happened, and while having sex with Wuya, only his penis had experienced a change that's all, after having a round with Kayseri how did this condition appear?

Aiwa's heart tensed up, because he didn't know whether or not he would survive this path, if his muscles continued to expand, it was possible for him to explode and die.

[Aiwa, what happened to you?]

Beira was really frightened after looking at Aiwa's swelling body, she immediately stood up from the bed, gently caressing his bulging veins with her small hands.

[Mustn't move!]

Kayseri immediately stopped her reckless daughter; she didn't want this boy who had brought happiness to her to die on top of her bed. That too an extreme

death, and also couldn't let him die at their mother-daughter hands.

She had heard of a legend once, there was a kind of Dragon Blood Clan man; if he joined together with a woman from a Blood Shed Clan, their two persons essence blood would mix together, arising a variation on the man's body, because the mixture of their bodily fluids would give rise to one kind of huge energy, that energy could make his blood flow inside his veins at an extraordinary speed, that speed flow could let a man's veins quickly rupture and meet a violent death, Kayseri didn't know whether her blood category belonged to a Blood Shed Clan, but she was convinced that this youngster ought to be a member of Dragon Blood Clan, as for whether or not he was a part of that Special Dragon Blood Clan, she also didn't know.

At the moment Aiwa's mind sensed the danger, he put out great effort to use his dou qi to control his madly rushing blood, he thought, this was the only way left to ensure that his veins were not ruptured by that rapidly flowing blood. After that he did a few stamina drills, to increase his veins flexibility, but he had no choice to be a bit careful.

[Ma, I'm very afraid — —]

Beira threw herself in her mother's embrace, she could feel, this handsome youngster's body could rupture again after some and cause him to die. That would surely scare a person, currently she regretted bringing this youngster over from Lucy's tent, if not, she didn't need to see this youngster die in front of her, she could have blamed a criminal charge on that avaricious Lumen, weaken her power, stabilizing her mother's position inside the Tanzya tribe.

[Beira, you mustn't be afraid, he's going to get better.]

Kayseri closely held her daughter's shivering body, her eyes watching Aiwa's body without blinking, silently praying for him to be able to survive this crisis.

Bid beads of sweat tumbled down from Aiwa's bronze coloured back, he had no choice to use a qi transmitting method to discharge a portion of energy from within his body, at East Empire's learning time this special self saving method was specially learned by him, because any person could meet an unexpected matter, for example eating a food or drinking a liquid with high energy could cause a person's death.

Kayseri who was attentively watching the changes on Aiwa's body suddenly heard a disturbance from outside. She vigilantly released Beira, raising her body.

[Kayseri, quickly come out!]

Chapter 1: Pacifying The Rebellion

Volume 3 Chapter 1

Pacifying The Rebellion

Aiwa sat between Kayseri and Beria, harmonizing his breath to calm the surging blood. Since having sex with Kayseri caused his blood to act crazy, he had no choice but to use the vein expansion method to bring relief to his veins. Big beads of sweat poured down his back and forehead.

Right now, a woman's shrilling yell came from outside the tent, rather than to say it was yelling, it would be better to describe it as demonstrating.

[Kayseri, quickly get out for me!]

Kayseri had no need to think, from that yell she could already make out who it was.

[I'll go out to take a look.]

Kayseri quickly wore her clothes, she was clear about the exterior circumstances; a thousand Tanzya soldiers had already assembled outside the Generalissimo's tent: Naturally, those soldiers were all under Lumen's command.

And regarding her private soldiers? Kayseri didn't dare to think about that.

[Mama, no need for you to go out, let me handle this mad disciple!]

Looking at Beira, Aiwa was amazed, this minor humble child unexpectedly had this much courage. He didn't know how much energy was in Beria's body, but her determination to stand in for her mother to take up this challenge; this was enough for her to gain Aiwa's admiration.

Although he was the Tanzyanians captive, Aiwa wanted to help this mother-daughter pair. Confronting a rebel without sufficient power could cause damage

to both sides. Naturally, from the pov as Hass Empire's frontier small garrison Favargo's Senior Officer, letting them massacre each other may be a good thing.

However, Aiwa didn't think like that, Tanzyanians were Hass Empire's neighbours, although they troubled Favargo from time to time, but, looking at the long term, this tribe has taken the important role of local guardians, standing in as Hass Empire's border guards. Since the Wolf Kingdom was at the Southeast and the Aegean Kingdom at the Southwest direction. Although these two countries were unable to threaten Hass Empire for the time being, but the Tanzya tribe which was situated in the middle zone was very well known for their swiftness, fierceness and bravery, they controlled a long and narrow grassland zone made up of several hundred li, becoming the buffer point to the attack from these two kingdoms.

The Wolf Kingdom and Aegean Kingdom carried out the same tactics as Hass Empire, and this often disturbed their tribe's dealings: Sometimes in order to ask for truce for a short amount of time, they even took the initiative to send all kinds of goods to show friendliness. Regarding these gifts, the Tanzyanians accepted them all without any questions, and in case of needing time, they ignored them and fled towards their territory. That's the reason why Tanzya wasn't encircled and annihilated in this sort of continuous plundering circumstances and the most important reason was that they never killed the goose that lays the golden eggs, they always fought over a little specific property and never brought any casualties.

Outside the tent, Lumen's female dog kind of yelling could be heard; Kayseri had already predicted such a day like this would come sooner or later. She was always benevolent towards her army, letting a portion of high-ranking military officer's think she was weak and gullible. Once, her daughter Beira had advised her, that she cannot be lenient towards the opponent, and had to establish a iron fist rule, consolidating her position, then no one would dare to offend the majestic Generalissimo; moreover also draw up an inheritance system, no matter who, if they relied on any other method to usurp the Generalissimo position, then everyone should put them to death.

However, Kayseri couldn't implement her daughter's idea, because to establish this kind of system, there was need of support from a strong and powerful

military strength.

Beria thought to stand in for her mother and deal with Lumen, but Kayseri stopped her.

Beira was really very small, and still insufficient to face this military coup.

Although Aiwa's body had stopped expanding, he felt violent pain all over his body. If he was sweating just now due the effect of his expansion method, then right now that violent pain made cold sweat flow down his body.

He continued to operate his dou qi within his body, if he could transform the energy he gained from Lucy, Lumen and Kayseri's body and absorb a portion of them into his body, then this pain would stop.

Kayseri wore her armour, and calmly went outside the tent. In order to avoid getting plotted against, before leaving the tent, she used her perception ability to probe and verify the circumstances outside the tent.

She only felt hostile cold qi outside the tent and didn't sense any death qi or arrow qi. If someone wanted to shoot her with a bow, then she could clearly sense it.

After Kayseri came out, she saw that her two maids acting as the outer guards were already unconscious due to the opponent's despicable methods; she guessed that her private soldiers must have also suffered the same evil scheme. If not, barely relying on her 1000 troops, even Lumen wouldn't have had the courage to challenge her outside her own tent.

Kayseri very calmly made two steps outside the tent, stopping there, her sharp gaze swept through the faces of the soldiers in front of her. They weren't her private soldiers, rather only Lumen's private soldiers; also, Lucy's men weren't present here.

However, at this time of crisis, Lucy still showed neutrality, this wasn't a good sign.

Kayseri thought of looking for her private soldiers inside this dense mass of crowd, but she was disappointed.

[What do you think you are doing?]

Kayseri's voice wasn't high, when she left the tent; the tent's surroundings were covered in absolute silence, as if the atmosphere had frozen.

Right now, her voice could reach over the entire barracks, letting every individual clearly hear her voice.

She criticized Lumen and said: [You're thinking of rebelling?]

However, after looking at the situation before her eyes, she changed her plan, because this sentence had thrown the 1000 soldiers following Lumen into an impasse, making them think that if they fought with her, then the consequences will be too horrible to contemplate.

[Humph! It isn't about what I want, rather what I think my soldier's deserve!]

Lumen immediately turned this military coup's purpose towards everyone's benefit, this was a General's trump card, only when seeking benefit for the masses could a person receive their support.

[Is that so?]

Kayseri paused; she continued to say with confidence: [Then compared to my soldiers, in what region's treatment do your soldiers fall short?]

After saying this, her sharp gaze looked straight towards this instigating woman.

[... ...]

Lumen was at a loss for a moment. Her soldiers and Kayseri's soldiers all received equal treatment, there wasn't any difference, but she roared again: [You ignore your daughter snatching a man from our tent, that's not giving importance to me. Not giving importance to me is the same as not giving importance to them!]

[Hehe, so it was like that. Right, Aiwa, the Favargo Senior Officer caught by Wuya, I asked Beira to bring him from your tent. Because I am the Generalissimo, I was thinking over the relationship between Tanzya tribe and Hass Empire, if we insult a Regional Senior Officer of Hass Empire, then that would no doubt be making enemies between us and an enemy with a large disparity of strength with us. Then, will our Tanzyanians be able to still exist on

this thin and narrow land?]

[Moreover, you keep on saying that you are thinking over the benefits of your soldiers, then, why don't you let your soldiers enjoy the spoils of war first? The reason why I demanded Aiwa to be brought over from your place is because I thought you might impudently infuriate your soldiers. In my eyes, you are at least a valiant military leader; I don't want to see the soldier's rebel, so I have no choice to remove the army authority from within your hands.]

Kayseri's words had substance, in a short while she had pulled over the hearts of some of Lumen's hapless soldiers to her side.

[Don't think you can cause disharmony in our relationship! If you don't hand over your military leadership today, then they also won't let the matter's rest like this!]

Lumen still stupidly resisted.

[Lucy?]

Kayseri didn't expect to make that many enemies, she at least had to make sure of Lucy's position.

[Till the end!]

A sharp and clear voice broke past the air and arrived, a person was floating in the region a few chi* ahead of Kayseri. Her hand was holding a long sword, she was fully armed.

**TLN: Chi : a Chinese foot : 0.33m*

[You haven't participated in this trouble?]

Kayseri's luminous gaze was still sharp in the night-time.

[Lucy has pledged her life to protect the Generalissimo!]

Lucy hurriedly declared her position.

[Right now I need you to return back to your troops and calm them down!]

Kayseri could already see a infantry soldier slowly moving forward within Lumen's army, her keen perception had already recognized the face hiding under the helmet, she secretly laughed.

[Lucy, it's best if you are neutral, I don't want to injure our friendship!]

Hearing Lucy declare her position, Lumen became a bit nervous.

Lucy didn't speak, rather flew her body back to her troops.

Right now, Kayseri's private soldiers were concentrated behind Lumen, the two armies were standing opposite to each other, not daring to rush ahead, even a single thing could cause things to go out of hand, it could even endanger the Generalissimo's safety.

As the Generalissimo's competent General, Wuya's thoughts were very thorough. It wasn't rational to reveal herself in the beginning, or else, Lumen could take up the decisive opportunity, and at that emergency time she wouldn't be able to protect Kayseri.

[Big brother, are you all right?]

Beira was still inside the tent, since Kayseri strictly disciplined her daughter, after looking at her mother's irrefutable sight, she wouldn't say anything else and follow her mother's order, currently, she came to take care of Aiwa.

[The situation is good and it's getting better.]

Aiwa didn't feel his body swelling anymore. The bulging skin and flesh was slowly restoring itself to its original state, and Aiwa could feel his body's power increase several folds.

[Can you help my mother settle this dispute?]

Beira knelt down in front of Aiwa; a genuine desire could be seen in her eyes.

[If you are able to save me and my mother, then I will be your woman!]

Her body slightly trembled.

[No need to be anxious, nothing will happen to your mother, someone has already gone to help your mother. You mustn't go out, waiting here is the safest, I can protect you here.]

Aiwa extended his hand, and pinched her tender cheek once. [No! I want you to protect my mama!]

Tears came out of Beira's eyes.

[All right, I will protect her; I promise nothing will happen to your mama!]

Aiwa said with certainty.

All of a sudden, Beira threw herself forward, embracing Aiwa's big body; she kissed his lips once.

Although this humble child's kiss was unripe, however Aiwa was very moved, a humble child was willing to sacrifice everything to save her mother!

[You said someone has already gone to help my ma? Who is she?]

Beria's round eyes curiously looked towards Aiwa. Although as Tanzya's princess, she didn't wish for a captive to save her mother, but after looking at his body's might, she inevitably had the thought of giving it a try. Although she was ambitious, her age was still small, she was unable to contend against the military skills or techniques of a few Generals, and Aiwa was after all a man, if he didn't have any ability, then Hass Empire wouldn't have sent him to be the magistrate of this border area small garrison which was often disturbed by outside groups.

[That person's nearing your mother's enemy, believe me, soon she can bring down the enemy with her blade.]

Aiwa's words were confident; it seemed as if he was capable of seeing everything happening outside from within the tent. Beira looked at this tall man in front of her with doubt, not knowing whether or not to believe him.

[Lumen, bring out your conditions, perhaps I can agree.]

Kayseri deliberately stalled for time, turning Lumen's attention towards her.

She saw that familiar face near Lumen step by step, and her hand was holding a very small dagger.

10 Chi, 8 Chi, 6 Chi suddenly, that girl covered in head armour strode forward and reached beside Lumen, and Lumen was completely off guard regarding the soldiers at her side, believing her enemy was only Kayseri standing in front of her.

A shining dagger very accurately pressed against Lumen's throat.

TLN : This chapter's half the length... i.e a normal sized 4k Chinese characters chapter... From next chapter they return back to double.. i.e >8k Chinese

characters.

Chapter 2: Bestowing A Marriage

Volume 3 Chapter 2

Bestowing A Marriage

Aiwa fondled Wuya's jade peaks while thrusting inside her pussy. Her originally taut face was twisted now, with slight pain and intense pleasure tormenting her body and soul. She was unable to uphold her dignity in front of the Generalissimo and the Princess. Her body writhed crazily while continuously moaning: [Oh wu good]

While she moaned, her legs gradually lifted up, continuously trembling in the air.

Little Princess Beira stood at the side, looking at the second face of this ordinarily majestic female high-ranking senior officer , her pure heart couldn't understand, what kind of feeling did a woman feel while getting pushed down by a man.

The Generalissimo, Kayseri's body was extremely weak, she could only lie there, looking at Aiwa pumping on Wuya's body: Naturally, seeing that scene only ignited her desire once again, merely her body didn't allow her to move much right now, compared to that, Beira was somewhat staring with awe.

[Beira, child, what are you looking at? Go over there!]

After Kayseri saw Beira's foolish appearance, she felt a little awkward. Letting one humble child look at adults doing their thing was very embarrassing.

[What are you afraid of? I am not a child anymore; I am already Aiwa's woman!]

Beira said with anger.

[What did you say?]

Kayseri doubted whether or not she misheard, not daring to believe it, she asked again.

[I am already Aiwa's woman!]

Beira made this word [woman] very clear: 1st was to say she already wasn't a child, 2nd was precisely to express the relationship between her and Aiwa, and Kayseri was most concerned about the 2nd meaning.

Kayseri moved her gaze towards Aiwa's face who was energetically pumping on Wuya's body. Aiwa couldn't understand, right now his attention was completely focused on the body of Wuya which was burning with desire. Wuya's nipples were already erect; her underbelly continuously moved up and down, her legs similarly trembled in the air.

[Aah Aiwa a bit harder]

Wuya had already reached her first orgasm, sex fluids sprayed out of her pussy. Every time she came, her body trembled due to the battle. She tightly bit her lips, but that pleasure made it difficult for her to restrain her emotions.

However, Aiwa didn't stop pumping because of Wuya's joyous shouting, his speed increased even more, making his thick thing get clamped tightly by Wuya's rapidly tightening pussy. Since Aiwa's chap was very majestic, it hadn't completely entered inside; therefore, although Wuya felt very pleasant, Aiwa had just entered into an enjoyable state.

Right now Aiwa was already capable of freely using the mental technique, freely controlling the negative variation caused by having sex with a woman having the Blood Shed blood vessels. His body wouldn't expand again after getting wet by the essence blood of a Blood Shed blood vessels woman. His glans penis deftly jabbed at the flower bud at the abyss of Wuya's pussy, lightly grinding it, making the pleasure Wuya felt increase bit by bit.

Under the pressure of her mother's strict gaze, Beira had no choice but to go down and sit at the sofa. However, her attention was continuously pulled towards Aiwa's side. Looking at Wuya turning, moving and listening to her joyous shouts, she thought in her heart, the day she and Aiwa got married, she could satisfy Aiwa's request, making joyous shouts like Wuya and her mama.

After Aiwa finished thrusting inside Wuya's body once, she was already drained, but Aiwa had just reached the peak mode. After grinding inside Wuya's pussy once again, he pulled out that erect meat rod from her body.

Wuya was powerlessly paralyzed there, she saw Kayseri also didn't have any strength left, she could only moan continuously.

Aiwa saw the area between Kayseri's legs was already drenched in sexual secretions a long time ago, he knew, she had been waiting there for him from a long time.

Aiwa came in front of Kayseri, lightly pushing inside. Kayseri opened her arms to embrace him, that meat rod covered in Wuya's sex fluids smoothly entered her body.

[Wu]

Aiwa's meat rod had just entered and Kayseri released a tempting moan. She made a great effort to straighten her body, letting Aiwa's yang root penetrate deeper, her wide pussy immediately swallowed more than half of Aiwa's weapon.

Aiwa didn't think much, although her body was weak, Kayseri still used her pussy to forcefully suck in his erect meat rod.

Aiwa kissed her graceful neck, his wide chest pressed against her erect twin peaks.

Looking at Kayseri's beautiful face, Aiwa suddenly recalled his stepmother.

He suddenly pulled out of Kayseri's body.

Kayseri was alarmed; she believed it was going to end with this.

Aiwa laughed: [We are going to change the position!]

Aiwa knelt there, waiting for Kayseri to turn over her body, she brought her plump and big snow-white buttocks towards Aiwa. Aiwa lightly slapped her white butt twice, Kayseri simply pushed her body down and separated her legs, to let Aiwa's big meat spear easily pierce her from behind.

Whether it was Kayseri or Aiwa, they both felt a very unusual feel and mood while doing it from behind. Aiwa's hands caressed Kayseri's beautiful crotch,

slowing moving inside it, that thick thing smoothly went in and out of her pussy. Because of the large amount of secretions, every time Aiwa twitched, a *pu chi*, *pu chi* sound was issued from her pussy.

Aiwa didn't dare to make Kayseri spend too much strength; therefore, when she reached her first orgasm, he shot his energy inside her body.

[Humph ... oh ...]

Kayseri's elbows were on the bed, her butt was raised high, taking in Aiwa's burning hot meat rod inside her pussy as much as possible. That meat spear's thrusting cause her a little pain, however she liked the intense pleasure accompanying that pain.

She moaned while moving her buttocks, her breasts were hanging in the air because her body was lying on her stomach, making her more attractive. It was a pity that Aiwa couldn't see them; however he stretched his hand forwards to grope them.

Aiwa's hands were strongly fondling Kayseri's breasts, at the same time his body rammed on top Kayseri's buttocks, issuing a *pa pa* sound.

[Aiwa ... I ... can't bear it anymore ...]

A woman reached her orgasm very quickly in this posture, her body trembled more rapidly. Aiwa didn't slow down, accelerating the rhythm, thrusting faster.

[Aah ... aah ...]

Aiwa's fast thrusting interrupted Kayseri's moaning, Kayseri suddenly felt pleasure in her whole body spreading from her pussy. When a portion of sex fluids were going to spurt out, Aiwa also strongly pressed against her flower bud, a portion of warm essence spurted inside her flower bud, that warm essence didn't disperse, rather it was slowly sucked inside the small mouth of Kayseri's flower bud.

Aiwa didn't pump for the second time, he tightly pressed against her flower mouth. Softly pulling Kayseri's body, he tightly hugged her sweaty naked body, kissing on top of her small mouth.

He lightly sucked Kayseri's fragrant tongue, which was playing with Aiwa's

mouth. Aiwa had no choice to admit, compared to Wuya, Kayseri's kissing skills were a notch higher, that fragrant tongue was revolving at his mouth and pecking it, Kayseri's effect was completely different, her one light peck, could provoke a man's libido once again.

Aiwa sucked her fragrant tongue, ejaculating a second time, that burning hot semen shot inside her body.

That wasn't ordinary semen; rather it was filled with Aiwa's energy, pouring inside her body.

After Aiwa slowly crawled up from Kayseri's body, Kayseri still didn't discover the increase in her physical strength; her body still lied there in a weakened state.

Two maids washed Aiwa's body.

Wuya had long ago worn her clothes; her gaze was admiring Aiwa's robust naked body, making a little love bubble up inside her. Looking at Wuya's expression filled with love, Beira felt very jealous.

[Wuya, thank you for putting out your life for me and my ma, I will ask my ma to compensate for you.]

Beira advanced forward and pulled Wuya's hand. Her main purpose was to move her loving gaze away from Aiwa's body.

[How are thinking of compensating me?]

Wuya forced at bitter smile.

[I can ask ma to confer you the title of White Horse Riding General, how?]

Beira deliberately made a dazzling expression, to increase the weight to this unprecedented title.

[White Horse Riding General? Has some ever been granted his title?]

Wuya asked with doubt.

[That's why it is rare! You'll be the first to be conferred the title of White Horse Riding General, is it no good?]

The naive Beira thought of making Wuya think that this was a most rare title,

because from the gaze Wuya showed towards Aiwa, she could feel one kind of hidden crisis. Especially since her mother still hadn't made a formal promise, to let her marry Aiwa who still had the identity of a captive man.

[Generalissimo, take a look, Beira is using a title to bribe me!]

Wuya could make out Beira's plot, and couldn't help but caress her head as she laughed and spoke to Kayseri.

Kayseri also couldn't help but laugh, right now she could already feel her body strengthen a bit, as if a portion of power was spreading towards her whole body from her lower part. She stood up, glancing towards her daughter Beria with a deep loving gaze: [Beira, I have a matter to speak with Wuya, can you go out a moment?]

Beira unwillingly stood up and went outside, because of her mood, the cold air outside immediately made her tremble.

[Wuya, come over.]

Kayseri pulled Wuya's hand, making her come at her side. Although Kayseri was always gentle towards her troops, however she was so imitate like this with very few people. The Generalissimo's hand, made Wuya very happy, she lifted her face, looking at this calm adult.

[Generalissimo can speak what she wants to!]

Wuya could make out the Generalissimo's thoughts.

[You like him?]

Kayseri looked towards Aiwa who was sitting in the chair.

Listening to this question, Wuya's face immediately went red in front of Kayseri, but she quickly calmed down and asked Kayseri: [What relation does this have?]

[If you like him, I'm thinking of marrying you to him!]

Kayseri said very seriously.

[But, he is a Hass Empire man, and not from our race, how can we become husband and wife? Furthermore, he is still our captive; he simply doesn't have

the qualifications to marry me.]

Wuya said.

Kayseri laughed, however she was confident that she could persuade Wuya and guarantee this marriage's facilitation.

[If this bit is eliminated, is he fit to become your husband?]

Kayseri's hands gripped Wuya's shoulders, looking at her willing face, she could more or less make out Wuya's true thoughts using a mature woman's judgment.

Wuya nodded.

However while these two women were about this, they completely ignored Aiwa, as if the matter they were consulting about was hardly relevant to him, simply not needing his individual thoughts, if only Wuya said she was fond of him, Kayseri could send Aiwa to her like a gift.

In fact, whether it was Kayseri or Wuya, they both felt Aiwa was an outstanding man. In the entire Tanzya tribe, it was impossible to find such an excellent male. Especially his extremely strong male skills could endlessly make a woman be fascinated, if one had this kind of husband, their entire lifetime's libido could be satisfied. Sending this kind of gift to Wuya would consolidate her supreme position as well as her daughter's. If a woman wanted to firmly control her regime, then it was not enough to rely on her own strength, she needed unswerving followers at her side. This bit was confirmed with tonight's coup d'état.

The most important thing was, Wuya was still young, she had the strength to wait for this Hass Empire's General's son. His brave spirit was also verified within this coup d'état — — He absolutely wasn't a nobody like Federer. Therefore, Kayseri wanted Aiwa to stay at Tanzya.

[I will first grant you the title of Princess, then, we'll raise a relation by marriage towards Hass Empire. I believe they won't deny us.]

Kayseri raised her thoughts in front of Aiwa.

[I already have a wife!]

Aiwa immediately recalled the daughter of the Empire's Prime Minister Groote

— — Dolly and Sili, those two adorable girls. If he didn't return, wouldn't those two girls have to marry someone else? How could he let his beloved woman be married to another man?

[What did you blurt out? You don't have the right to talk here, right now, you are our Tanzyanians captive. If you want to return, there's only one way, that's becoming the husband of our Tanzya's woman.]

Kayseri had completely recovered from her weakness, her words seemed very powerful.

[Right now you could say I am someone who has given outstanding service to you, you won't bite the hand that feeds right? If you don't return a Hass Empire's Regional Senior Officer you have fought over for marriage, Hass Empire won't leave the matter as it is. Even if the Queen doesn't pay attention to me, my father is still going to demand his son!]

Without any other option, Aiwa had to bring out his trump card.

Kayseri shot a glance towards him not speaking anything else. She already understood that Aiwa wasn't a frog within the pond, and would sooner or later fly away, however, she had to first use him to bribe a person's heart.

Wuya also didn't have any qualms with Princess Beria, she really liked Aiwa very much, especially the pleasure his strong body brought to her was the world's happiest affair to her.

[Then what's to be done about Beira?]

Wuya had also heard that sentence; I am already Aiwa's woman. She didn't know whether or not she had already slept with Aiwa, but that sentence had already made it clear that Princess Beira also liked Aiwa.

[No matter what she says, she is still small. I have to first find an ideal husband for you, which would give peace to my heart.]

Kayseri's expression was just like Wuya's mother.

Wuya remained silent. She was afraid that if she said too much, then the Generalissimo would regain her words. Moreover, Aiwa's seed was already within her body, so, she didn't have to worry about the matter of giving birth to

a child.

[All right, I will send someone tomorrow to Montelago City and propose the marriage to Queen Sofia, I think we'll receive a reply very quickly. Good! You return first, tonight let Aiwa stay here! I won't eat him; sooner or later he will belong to you.]

Kayseri laughed towards Wuya.

Wuya got up and left the Generalissimo's army tent.

After Wuya left, Aiwa came on top of Kayseri's bed. [Didn't you already promise to let me be your daughter's husband? Furthermore, you also promised to let me be the husband of you two mother-daughter, then why are you sending me as a gift to other people? Don't tell me that I'm not worthy of being cherished by you?]

[If you wish, I will forever be your woman, including Beira.]

Kayseri's face was overflowing with sadness, producing a tear at her eyes. A Generalissimo had no choice to send out her man for her regime, this was a very heart-breaking affair.

Aiwa tightly hugged Kayseri, right now he and she weren't enemies, rather lifelong husband and wife. Her tender body lightly trembled in her embrace. He kissed her cheek, sucking the teardrop that came out of eyes.

After Beira saw Wuya leaving, she went inside the tent not waiting for her mother's summon. She hastily jumped on the bed, throwing herself in her mother's embrace, she asked: [What did mama and Wuya discuss?]

Her young spirit was very sensitive, she was sure that the reason her mother had some relation to her.

[Very soon, we'll be able to drink at Wuya and Aiwa's wedding feast.]

Kayseri gently caressed Beira's head and said, she tried to make Beira think of this as a happy matter.

[Why? Didn't you already promise to let me become Aiwa's woman? You're going back on your words, not deserving a General!]

Beira suddenly struggled free from Kayseri's embrace, fleeing outside the tent.

Aiwa thought of chasing after her, but he was pulled by Kayseri.

[Don't go after her, if she doesn't experience this affair, then she won't mature up. A wilful person will forever be unable to understand the situation.]

It seemed as if Kayseri was saying it to herself. Only, she didn't have the desire to make love with Aiwa right now, she was really exhausted, and only wanted to rest.

[Don't tell me you're not wilful?]

Aiwa criticized her.

[There is no person who has absolute freedom in this world; I am also without the freedom to act independently!]

Kayseri at last revealed her sorrow. From the changes on her pretty face, Aiwa could conclude, this woman really had many sorrows.

[You sleep! I will take a walk outside; also take a look at Beira at the same time.]

Aiwa got up from Kayseri's body, getting down the bed.

[No need to find her. I'm really tired, only want to rest. If you want, you can enjoy the maids inside the army tent.]

Kayseri powerlessly pulled the quilt over her body; feeling tired both physically and emotionally.

Aiwa left the army tent, the two maids pointed their fingers toward a distant place and said: [Little Princess went over there; she said to not allow anyone to disturb her.]

Aiwa looked towards that white distant region; Beira's heartbroken silhouette could be seen there.

The night's intense cold enveloped the Tanzya savannas, the stars in the sky blinked like exhausted eyes, as if they were dozing off.

[I want to sleep outside; can I lie in your embrace?]

Aiwa looked at those two maids on night duty, although they were wearing thick gowns, from their exposed faces, Aiwa could make out that these lassies

were very delicate. With vivid eyes, exposing their pure white neck skin, a spacious gown wrapped their body, making Aiwa unable to see whether or not they had an exquisite figure.

[You are the Generalissimo's man, if only you wish, please]

These two girls were already aware of the relationship between Aiwa and their Generalissimo. Listening to the passionate act between Wuya and Aiwa just now, these two maids were extremely envious. After all they were at the age of first awakening of love, which girl didn't yearn of love? Moreover, Aiwa's appearance was tall and sturdy filled with confidence, and his attractive looks had already made these two girl's hearts go out of control.

The two girls were standing at the two sides of the army tent entrance, they had already untied their spacious gowns, and Aiwa reached out his hand to grope the bosom within it, those ample breasts felt very soft and tepid under the thin underwear. The girl was flustered after Aiwa grabbed and fondled her bosom, making her release low moans.

[Pleasant?]

Aiwa kneaded that maid's breast and asked.

[Very comfortable]

The girl replied while trembling.

However, he quickly withdrew his hand, stretching it towards the other maid's bosom. Her breast was also full of softness, like an elastic fresh steamed bun. He forcefully gripped it, that girl's body simply tightened.

[Oh]

She moaned very softly, afraid of letting it reach the Generalissimo inside the tent.

Under the boundless sky, Aiwa could clearly see that maid's excited face, when his big hand kneaded her breast under the undergarment, tears appeared in her eyes due to the excitement.

Aiwa's big hands kneaded her breasts at the same time, then let go of her, however, she was reluctant to let go and closed her gown, wishing to continue.

[Find a stool for me to sit down; your thin and weak body will be unable to bear my weight.]

Aiwa said.

One maid immediately brought a pew* from the tent, placing it under Aiwa's buttocks. Aiwa removed his shoes, stretching them forwards towards a maid's bosom, letting her soft breasts warm his feet, and he leaned his upper body in another maid's embrace.

**TLN: Pew: a long bench with a back, placed in rows in the main part of some churches to seat the congregation.*

Those two maids were only wearing thin undergarments under that thick gown worn to resist the wind. Right now, Aiwa lifted the maid's undergarment, lowering that girl's body, Aiwa held her nipple. Actually, Aiwa's big mouth was almost capable of eating half of her breast inside his mouth.

[Oh]

After the girl's nipple was held, her whole body went limp. Aiwa sucked her nipple, and lifted his head and smiled towards the girl.

The two girls came near each other, this way; they could perfectly protect Aiwa, not letting any night wind invade him. Aiwa also matched them by huddling up; letting his feet get wrapped up inside the girl's embrace as much as possible. Merely he wasn't well behaved, from time to time; he used his toe to press that girl's soft breast twice, making that excited like the girl who breast was being sucked.

Beira was sitting at a region 100m away from Kayseri's army tent. She couldn't look at the affair happening outside the tent, she also didn't want to look. She was only thinking that her mama was very fickle, unexpectedly sending away her beloved man to Wuya. Although Wuya was respected by her, and was a military office she was fond of, furthermore, from her observation, Wuya was loyal and devoted towards Kayseri; however, feelings were always selfish.

If the counterpart was Lucy or Lumen, she could seize the man from them, like how she took away Aiwa in the evening from Lucy's tent. However, the person fighting over her lover was Wuya; this caused a contradiction in Beira's heart. If

Aiwa and Wuya got married, then that would mean that she would have to find another man as a husband. AS the Princess, she couldn't have a common husband with her mother's subordinate military officer.

Although the night was peaceful, Beira's heart was experiencing one climax after another. She would rather wait in this cold wind, than return inside the army tent.

Aiwa lied down in the maid's embrace for a long time, falling asleep, listening to his snoring sleeping sound made those two yearning for love girls smile endlessly. That girl whose breast was held in used her fine and glossy small hand to caress Aiwa's face, and the other maid massaged his feet with her breasts.

A wave of cold wind came over, making Aiwa's body tremble, he immediately became clear headed.

[How long did I sleep?]

Aiwa suddenly recalled a matter.

[For some time.]

The maid was unable to say the exact time. [The Princess?]

Aiwa came down from these maids body.

[Still like that.]

One of the maids spoke. After thinking he realized, if the Princess returned, how could these maids surrounding him not rouse him up?

Aiwa wrapped a gown around his body, and walked over towards that pure white region. Although the wind wasn't as intense as before, however it still blew against his gown.

A rustling sound was issued as his feet stepped on the land, that noise came from behind Beira, coming more and more near to her.

Beira was unable to settle down after waiting this one night, however, she still resisted her tears, not letting them fall down. As she was Tanzya's Princess, she had to be strong.

Aiwa's heavy and powerful footsteps stooped beside her.

[Your mama is right, she is thinking for the stability of this thin grassland as well as for your future. She surely wants to pass on this thin grasslands supreme power to her daughter Beira. Only if you have power, then you can have the thing you desire.]

Aiwa stood there as if he was speaking to the night sky; however this made Beira suddenly come over to himself. She slowly lifted her head, looking at the tall Aiwa.

Aiwa sat down at her side. The night wind was blowing towards Beira, bringing her charming body fragrance towards Aiwa; that sweet scent penetrated deeply into his heart.

[Then do you love me?]

Beira asked suddenly. This wasn't a question ought to be raised by a child, in fact there wasn't any need for Aiwa to reply, she ought to be capable of understanding. She was an adorable Little Princess; her body had many characteristics which Aiwa was fond of, not only because she was beautiful, but also because she was strong.

The blowing night wind had already dishevelled her hair, but this made her better-looking. Her slim face seemed more delicate and pretty within the cold night; Aiwa could conclude that this girl would surely become rather extraordinary in the future.

[I love all those who love me.]

Aiwa thought a bit and replied to Beira.

There were small green lanterns floating within the wilderness.

Relying on her experience, Beira judged that these were a small group of wolfs seeking food. They were approximately several 100m away from this place, after leisurely swimming in the pond, they disappeared within the cluster of thorns.

Aiwa leaned behind Beira's back, opening his gown wide, waiting for Beira to enter within it and embrace his bosom.....

Chapter 3: To Vie For The Husband

Volume 3 Chapter 3

To Vie For The Husband

Montelago City.

At the Hass Empire's Imperial Palace.

Queen Sofia was looking at the petition Jancy had just brought to her. Reading the letter Tanzya's Chief Kayseri had written, she couldn't help but knit her brows. [Didn't someone announce recently that Aiwa had saved Federer who fell into the enemy's hand? How did Aiwa become their hostage?]

Sofia lifted her head. Looking towards Jancy, she asked with doubt.

[Could it be that Aiwa lost a battle after sending troops in large scale?]

Jancy was not clear regarding the front line circumstances; the intelligence of the Imperial Palace was brought by a messenger every day and announced in a concise and comprehensive manner, not including everything. Even having a rich imagination, it was difficult to know the circumstances beyond a hundred li.

Besides, Jancy's perception range was only several hundred meters.

[Hehe, I actually doubt this youngster may have run away, there are many beautiful women there, and this small lecher might have felt lonely at Favargo.]

Queen Sofia didn't have any plans regarding the intermarriage issue raised by Kayseri, she never met this kind of issue, even Federer who called himself as Hass's most handsome man wasn't looked upon by Tanzya's women.

[If we let Aiwa take a Tanzya woman as wife, perhaps it would be advantageous to our frontier defense, only]

Jancy stopped speaking.

[Only what?]

Queen Sofia languidly looked towards Jancy, waiting for her next words.

[Before Your Majesty had ordered the engagement between Aiwa and Dolly, if we agree with the Tanzyanians, we'll be unable to justify this to the Prime Minister, after all the wedding between their two families is already spread at all levels of the society.]

Jancy had no choice but to think over the Queen's surrounding circumstances. Regardless of whether Groote was willing for this wedding or not, right now, if they rescinded the wedding, then Groote's family wouldn't have any face to show outside, for good or bad he was after all the Prime Minister!

[Then can you go and seek Groote's intentions?]

Queen Sofia formulated a plan.

She didn't declare the matter of Tanzyanians proposing a marriage towards Aiwa, rather first let Groote declare his position.

Groote was a really understanding person. After he knew the purpose for Jancy coming over here, he privately sent his intentions to Queen Sofia through Jancy, writing a letter to her.

The news of Groote refusing the marriage proposed by General Kyle's son wasn't spread everywhere, but it was known within the Imperial Palace, Prime Minister Groote didn't like the idea of the marriage between his daughter and General Kyle's son, Aiwa.

The next day, the Tanzya messenger returned to Tanzya tribe carrying Queen Sofia's letter.

What made Kayseri overjoyed was that, not only did Queen Sofia agree for the wedding between Aiwa and Tanzya's Princess, she still expressed that if every year Tanzya offered tribute to Hass Empire, then Hass Empire would present great amount of riches and goods in return. The actual amount within the letter was much more than the loot Tanzya tribe plundered from the surrounding three countries. In other words, from now on, Tanzyanians wouldn't have to worry about food and drinks even if they didn't go to disturb Favargo.

However, this didn't make her happy; instead she was worried because of the gains Queen Sofia conferred towards the Tanzyanians.

Beira was Tanzya's genuine Princess. For her beloved Aiwa, Beira raised her thoughts towards her mama.

[Ma, I am Tanzya's Princess, Aiwa is my husband, why did you gift him to Wuya?]

Beira's eyes were already brimming with tears, not being able to speak due to her choking emotions.

[Child, since mama has already put out the order, how can I regain it? Accept your fate! Only if our position in the regime is stable, then will we be able to achieve happiness. Or else, you can't have anything.]

Kayseri could understand the pain of her daughter's heart.

[If I can't have Aiwa, then there's what meaning for me to keep on living?]

[Child, you don't understand, Aiwa won't be a Tanzya woman's husband forever, and he will sooner or later return to Hass Empire, that is his true home. A true embrace isn't the fusion of bodies, rather the exchange of hearts; if his heart is really yours, even if he isn't your husband, he will care about you forever. There's one phrase which you won't be able to understand now, it goes like this [A wife is not as good as a concubine, a concubine is not as good as a prostitute, a prostitute is not as good as a secret affair, a secret affair is not as good as the affair you want but can't get.] Whoever becomes his wife, would lie in bed with him every day, like that, his heart would slowly go far from this woman.]

[I at least want to give birth to his child!]

No matter how her mother persuaded, Beira was still determined.

Kayseri pondered for a long time; finally she found a way to placate her daughter.

[Let's make it like this! If you're really unwilling to give up, you can have a competition with Wuya, the victor gets to marry Aiwa.] Kayseri clearly understood, her daughter's age was small, she couldn't compare to the battlefield experienced Wuya in all aspects. If her daughter lost the competition,

then she wouldn't say anything else.

Naturally there was a reason for Kayseri to give Aiwa as a present to Wuya. From the outsiders perspective, after looking at Kayseri's conduct, they would feel the Generalissimo was how selfless, simultaneously it would greatly raise Wuya's position within the army, forming a natural power centre, then even Lucy wouldn't dare to have any improper thoughts, this bit was advantageous for her regime.

Wuya was called inside the army tent by Kayseri. Since this matter had the rancour of seizing love, Beira made an unnatural face when she saw Wuya.

[Wuya, it's like this, in order to let you receive Aiwa more than just in name, I thought of arranging a competition between you and Beira, the victor can tie the knot of husband and wife with Aiwa, no one else can participate in this. I think, no matter who wins in this competition, it would convince the hearts of the other Tanzya high ranking military officers. Are you willing?]

Kayseri asked Wuya with a determined look. She thought, it was impossible for the intelligent Wuya to not know the path, her this Generalissimo's way of handling clearly favoured towards her, Wuya. She would rather abandon her own flesh and blood, her heart supporting this quasi-princess, Wuya was very grateful in her heart for this.

[I agree.]

Due to her loyalty, it was impossible for Wuya to disagree.

[I also agree.]

Beira at last obtained to fight over the husband with Wuya. If she didn't like Aiwa very much, she was also improbable to have a falling out with Wuya, because she saved Kayseri's regime at the risk of her life. Beira also understood, if there wasn't a regime, then what would she be, only a common Tanzya girl.

[Elder Sister Wuya, if I lose, my heart will willingly withdraw, not disturbing your life anymore.]

Beira extended her small hand.

The two tender hands held each other.

In the Tanzya tribe, there was a well known legend — — At the southern region of Khalila Grand Canyon there was a group of God Wolf's, if someone was able to kill any one of them, then they would become Tanzya's hero, furthermore can even become the leader after getting the support of the Tanzyanians.

[We'll have a competition, How about seeing who can hunt a head of a God Wolf?]

[God Wolf?]

Wuya couldn't help but get stupefied.

Every Tanzyanian knew about the legend regarding the God Wolf, but no one knew the appearance of that God Wolf, in what way it was different from a feral wolf. It was only known that wolf had a whole body of pure white fur, and it was very tall and ferocious.

Who would fear a thing they haven't seen, the dreadful thing was Khalila Grand Canyon; it was said that small bugs roamed around there, a very dangerous region, any person who entered inside hadn't returned back alive, and Beira unexpectedly wanted to take risks at Khalila Grand Canyon with Wuya, is she still sane?

Wuya sent her sight towards Kayseri; this competition could only advance with her decision.

[Apart from this, there isn't any other method?]

Kayseri looked towards her stubborn daughter, somewhat afraid in her heart. She felt her daughter wasn't only fighting for Aiwa but rather also to increase the power within her hands.

[No.]

Beria replied calmly.

Looking at her determined daughter, Kayseri felt it wasn't good to speak anything else, however she really didn't want her daughter to lose her life.

[I will give a group of 5 persons to you each, the time limit is 10 days, all right. If you still haven't reached a conclusion within 10 days, I will use my title as the Generalissimo to enact the issued order.]

Beira firmly nodded, as if she had absolute certainty, that she would be able to capture a God Wolf's head within 10 days.

At the time the sun was setting in the west, Wuya and Beira set off towards Khalila Grand Canyon accompanied by a group. The reason they chose the evening time was to avoid the burning hot sun.

Looking at their leaving rear view, Kayseri grumbled at Aiwa's side and said: [Apparently, with your arrival, it was unavoidable for a commotion to rise in our Tanzya.]

[That may not be true, after all they aren't fighting to kill each other, in case an outcome is obtained, it would be advantageous to this land, bringing stability and peace to it, those persons coveting your power would also be content with their lot.]

Aiwa said with confidence.

[You are after all a Hass person, and naturally can't be worried about our matters. I'm really afraid of any accident happening to Beira.]

Kayseri said with worry.

[If it was like that, and she didn't dare to participate in the competition, then would she be able to wield the Tanzya regime in the future?]

Listening to Aiwa's point of view made Kayseri feel that his thoughts really didn't match up with his age; she couldn't help but glance towards Aiwa. His sharp and clear face was really tempting for a woman, that tall and sturdy physique could make a girl's heart tremble.

[Then, whom do you want to win from those two?]

Kayseri felt her heart receive the enticement of this man at her side; she had no choice but to continue the previous discussion. However, her violently moving bosom had already made Aiwa notice her mood change, she didn't wear a leather gown, and the two peaks at her breasts were clearly visible on her thin clothing, wrapping up the desire of a mature and sophisticated woman.

[They won't be able to win, because only you are the true Queen of Tanzya.]

Actually, Aiwa's words weren't mere flattery. From his contact with Kayseri for

the past few days he could see, currently, inside the entire Tanzya tribe, besides Kayseri, no one was capable of controlling the situation here.

[You have so much confidence in me?]

Kayseri was naturally fond of listening to Aiwa declare this. On the evening of the coup d'état, the fact that her destiny hadn't ended was verified. Furthermore, after she was replenished by Aiwa's energy that day, she felt many big differences in her body, not only her spirit, but her power also abruptly increased.

[Don't tell me you have no confidence in me? You mustn't forget, flowing within your body is our Dragon Clan's Blood!]

[Our Blood Shed Clan is also not lacking anywhere.]

Kayseri didn't want to let Aiwa be too arrogant in front of her. Besides his working on her body time, she still liked his docile appearance.

Aiwa was naturally convinced of her words; because even if they couldn't practice dou qi, they could make a person like Federer piss in his pants, at Hass Empire, it was really difficult to find that kind of person.

[Let's return inside the tent to rest! No need to be anxious, they won't be reaching Khalila Grand Canyon in a short time. If you have energy, it would be better to have a happy round with our bodies.]

Aiwa looked at the somewhat begging expression inside Kayseri's eyes, a woman's hungry and thirsty expression was really tempting.

[No, I want to play with your two maids, you won't mind right? As the Generalissimo, you must take note to preserve your physical strength!]

Aiwa didn't follow Kayseri inside the tent, rather stayed outside. Those two maids couldn't help but blush after hearing Aiwa's frank words.

The weather was warm, those two girls didn't wear a leather gown, and a thin jacket covered their youthful glowing bodies.

Since ancient times, a leader's lasciviousness was reasonable and fair, receiving a punishment meant that they didn't have the qualifications to receive the lasciviousness.

Aiwa's identity within the tribe was no longer that of a captive, after he was permitted to be the Princess's husband, he was practically a hero within the Tanzanians hearts. All the Tanzya women wished to sleep with the tall and powerful man, Aiwa once. They already heard this Hass man had an unusual reproductive organ, which could make a woman drown in endless ecstasy.

And Kayseri's personal maids had personally heard it with their own ears, they saw Aiwa's ferociousness with their own eyes, merely they haven't personally experienced it. However, every time Aiwa made love with Generalissimo Kayseri, although these two maids didn't speak similar to a frightened deer, but their lower parts were always moist, making these two maids feel embarrassed to speak, simply cleaning their body, they assumed an appearance as if nothing had happened.

Right now, listening to Aiwa say he wanted to play with them, these two maids couldn't help but burst with joy, even not being careful of letting Generalissimo Kayseri look at their excited appearance before entering the tent.

[Be careful of me peeling your skin!]

Kayseri ferociously glared at the two maids, frightening their minds; she hurriedly resumed her smiling expression.

After Kayseri went inside the tent, Aiwa walked in front of the two maids, he held the chin of one of them, letting her raise her small face. [Out of you, whose breast has mother's milk?]

Aiwa's lewd and demonic sight swept across these two maid's faces.

[We haven't given birth to a child, how can we have mother's milk?]

The two maids thought Aiwa was a big fool, not knowing the common sense that a woman could only have mother's milk after giving birth to a child.

[Then, how can a woman give birth to a child?]

Aiwa let go of the first maid, however his hand kneaded the other maid's breast. Although separated by the clothes, his hand was very powerful, making this maid's body feel numb immediately.

[Marrying]

One of them said while hesitating.

[Say, how can a woman give birth to a child?]

Aiwa approached his lips near that maid's lip but he didn't kiss her.

[She can have a child after marrying and sleeping with a man.]

That maid stated in a low voice. She was afraid of getting heard by the Generalissimo inside the tent, because right now, she felt as if she was seducing the Generalissimo's male lover.

[Have you slept with a man?]

Aiwa's big hand kneaded the maid's other breast. Aiwa liked to fondle a girl's breasts, although their breasts were petite, but also quite flexible, furthermore a little hard within the softness, not resembling a mature woman's breasts, like two flabby lumps.

What Aiwa liked very much was that a girl couldn't endure her breasts getting kneaded, after fondling a few times, a girl's body would give a clear reaction.

He liked looking at the infatuated and again not daring to give out lovely shouts expression on the maid's face as he fondled her.

[Gen Generalissimo said she'll peel our skin]

The maid getting fondled by Aiwa suddenly recalled the words spoken by the Generalissimo before going inside the tent, she still was somewhat afraid, after all accompanying one's sovereign was like accompanying a tiger.

[Oh?]

Aiwa's hand stopped there, but he didn't release it, still holding that lovely maid, her soft and hard wonderful breast, and went to look inside the tent, only the curtain was already lowered, Kayseri was probably lying on the bed. He knew Kayseri wasn't a stingy woman, and won't punish these maids because he played with their body.

[Why?]

Aiwa kneaded the maid's breast and asked indifferently, as if a doctor was taking the pulse of a patient.

[We we mustn't seduce you because you are the Generalissimo's man]

The maid spoke while trembling. Not only because she was afraid, because Aiwa's hand had groped her breast for a long time, her lower body was already moist all over, her legs couldn't help but writhe.

[What happened?]

Aiwa looked at her lower body, his hand directly stretched down her waist.

The maid's thigh's inside side was slippery, feeling warm and moist.

The maid's body trembled.

[Oh, already like this!]

Aiwa took out his hand, smearing that finger wet with love liquids on the maid's lips once. The maid couldn't help but lick on top of Aiwa's finger once, his finger slid inside her mouth, softly sliding in and out.

The girl half lowered her head, Aiwa's finger moved round at her small mouth, however Aiwa very quickly withdrew his hand, his hand stretched forward towards her lower body, hair still hadn't grown there, feeling very smooth. Aiwa still liked a hairless girl, when his hand felt that smooth region, he felt very pleasant.

For convenience, Aiwa directly untied her clothing, after his big hand forcefully grabbed her smooth tender flesh; his finger went inside the ravine at her lower body.

[Oh]

The maid already couldn't withstand Aiwa's lengthy teasing, right now; he was moving his hand at her most private region, that satiny finger was sliding back and forth inside that fleshy path, that rubbing made waves of soft itching emerge at her lower body.

[What happened? Feeling unwell?]

Aiwa's mouth stooped down near the maid's ear, his mouth released his breath on top of her earlobes, provoking her prospering lust.

[Comfortable]

The maid's face was ruddy with excitement. The region at her lower body had never been touched by any person! However, right now, Aiwa's finger was wreaking havoc there; she looked forward to that finger pierce deeper, directly pounding against her uterus.

[Don't you want me to fuck you once?]

Aiwa asked in a low voice. Not to mention that his fingers movement had already confused the maid, this sentence was enough to make her feel pleasant.

[But the Generalissimo will get angry]

The maid's alarmed expression made her seem lovelier.

[She won't get angry.]

Aiwa suddenly held the maid burning with desire and rushed inside the tent, right now, Kayseri was resting by lying in her chair, and Aiwa threw the maid he was holding on top of her bed.

[Aiwa, are you insane? Are you actually going to fuck a maid?]

Kayseri felt that Aiwa ought to fuck her, this charming Generalissimo.

[This maid is much unrestrained; if you don't believe then take a look!]

Aiwa pulled down the clothes at the maid's lower body, also pushing up her jacket, an exquisite woman's physique immediately appeared in front of Aiwa, he really didn't expect this maid's figure would be so fascinating. Those long and beautiful glossy legs were well proportioned, her pure white skin seemed like snow, particularly the region above her vulva was pure white, without a single pubic hair; looking at her small bosom, although her two small mountains couldn't be regarded as lofty, they were very adorable, her captivating red nipples were already standing high due to Aiwa's caressing.

Aiwa raised the maid's leg so that Kayseri could see, it was really moist. Kayseri naturally knew what Aiwa had done to this maid outside the tent just now, she coquettishly glanced towards Aiwa, and said while laughing: [Try to be bit gentle, she's still a child, that place is still delicate! Looking at your thickness, I fear won't it take her life?]

The maid knew, if the Generalissimo's man wanted her, then she could only bear it, lying there without struggling, obediently following Aiwa's arrangements.

[This little slut's pretty good; she belongs to you for this evening.]

Kayseri couldn't bear to look at this delicate girl get tormented by Aiwa; she got up and walked outside.

Aiwa didn't want to fuck immediately; he stooped down his body, separating her legs he gently kissed on her white moist pussy.

This maid was a natural beauty, her skin was white and tender, as if it would melt with one lick. Aiwa's tongue strongly licked on her vulva, that small pea immediately became erect, furthermore that peak was moist and sharp, Aiwa's tongue softly poked there, making the maid's body tremble.

[Oh]

The maid couldn't help but give out delighted moans, the Generalissimo had already gone out, she could relax a bit. She didn't know a man's tongue had what kind of enchantment, that mere lick had made her feel this ecstatic! A happy expression immediately rose across her face.

When Aiwa's tongue was twisting inside her pussy, the maid's body couldn't help but convulse. Whenever Aiwa used his lips and tongue to forcefully lick her vulva, the maid immediately twisted her body. [Oh aah]

Aiwa's movement made the maid realize once secret — — when her vulva was rubbed by a man's tongue, a wave of pleasure immediately appeared in her entire body. So, when Aiwa stopped, the maid took the initiative to push her vulva against Aiwa rubbing it against his tongue. The maid moved her entire body, her small buttocks straightened, that tender flesh hole was rapidly rubbed by Aiwa's tongue.

[Wu aah]

The maid released a lewd shout; she wriggled her body, looking at Aiwa's face, making a great effort to move her body, that intense pleasure distorted her face's muscles. Her hands were at her back, because her body was moving very quickly, her breasts on her bosom also followed up by trembling.

[Master quickly pierce me It's itching inside]

The maid had already climaxed, sexual secretions continuously spurted from inside, however Aiwa was still licking her vulva. Although the maid had never slept with a man, she had seen the scene of Kayseri and Aiwa doing sex many times. She thought, it was so pleasurable just now, if Aiwa inserted his big thing inside, wouldn't it be asking to die from the pleasure?

At the time the maid was making lovely shouts, her body was moving very ferociously, it could be assumed that, Aiwa's tongue skill was really tremendous; moreover she was still a virgin!

Looking at the violently moving maid, Aiwa's libido roused itself. He held the maids buttocks, sucking forcefully at the vulva on which sexual secretions were flowing, as if he was trying to suck her intestines out.

[Ah.. dying from the pleasure]

The maid tightened her body, shooting out a portion of sexual secretions, spraying them inside Aiwa's mouth. Sucking in a virgin's sexual secretions gave great benefits to the body. Aiwa knew, if a girl's body was tormented, she would quickly have an orgasm, because she hadn't undergone training, a girl's orgasm would often emerge quickly and finish quickly. He had to first let this maid experience a lifelong unforgettable feeling, making her think of having sex with him every day.

Aiwa calmly lowered down the maid's snow white butt, this was to take off his clothes. The maid was already accustomed to getting attended by him, how could she let Aiwa undress himself? She immediately stood up and undressed Aiwa. Aiwa was stripped naked; the maid impatiently lied down, separating her legs, waiting for Aiwa to pierce her.

Although the maid's identity was humble, however her looks were delicate and pretty, many times better than that high-ranking military officer Lumen. So, Aiwa was all along harbouring one thought — — fucking a woman, precisely fuck her face!

[Master, quickly pierce slave servant! Slave servant is unable to bear it]

She showed a painful expression, which couldn't be explained with words.

Right now, she felt as if there were several million insects crawling inside her lower body, she tried to separate her legs as much as possible. Aiwa looked at the gu gu flowing out milky white sexual secretions out of her pussy.

Aiwa knelt between her legs; his hands caressed that long thing a few times. That long thing was hyperaemic long ago, as if there were earthworms crawling on his cock, looking at that cock made them maid happy as well as afraid.

It seemed to her, that cock was like a fierce small serpent! However, she believed that when that serpent drilled inside her pussy, she would feel great pleasure.

Aiwa used his hand to support his cock, pushing it inside her narrow pussy, those rick sexual secretions made it very easy for Aiwa's big head to push in, that maid's flesh walls were being filled simultaneously, however that pussy barely seemed enough, a tensed colour was clear on the maids face.

Aiwa also felt some trouble while pushing inside; however, right now the maid was looking forward to Aiwa's action, a portion of lust fiercely ignited within her expression.

Aiwa's body tightly stuck with the maid's naked body, his hands pinched her lovely erect breasts. He softly pushed his body, that burning hot cock squeezed inside the maid's delicate pussy!

[Aah!]

The maid didn't expect, that when that thick meat spear would penetrate inside, it would bring that kind of pain, she immediately felt as if her entire lower body was being split open.

However, what made Aiwa frightened was that, although this maid's age wasn't much big, her vagina was very long, his thick thing had already squeezed in more than half but it still hadn't touched her hole's base.

[Wu hurts very much]

The maid's face distorted due to the pain, and Aiwa's cock continued to penetrate deeper, the maid was really unable to bear that ripping sort of pain, the fingernails on her hands deeply pinched on top of Aiwa's body. However, Aiwa was only excited, he didn't feel any pain.

In order to lighten the maid's pain, Aiwa had no choice to read the Reverse Yin Technique in his mind, making his cock's tip shrink a bit, until it could fit that maid's long and narrow vagina.

The pain became lighter, and along with Aiwa's pumping, the maid felt increasingly intense pleasure.

[What's your name?]

Aiwa kissed her forehead while slowly pumping.

[Celi]

The maid replied while trembling. She already raised her two jade legs, which were continuously trembling.

[Celi, let me eat your breast okay?]

Aiwa forcefully lifted her body, sucking Billie's entire breast inside his mouth.

Chapter 4: Sex Slave

Volume 3 Chapter 4

Sex Slave

TLN: Could only do 1 chap today.. Fortunately my tests end tomorrow So'll be able to release chapter's more quickly!

[Wu]

Aiwa bit forcefully, making Celi feel as if her breasts would be bit into two half's by Aiwa. She couldn't help but shout due to the intense pleasure born at her breast. Aiwa's tongue teased her erect nipple, making Celi's bones soft. Her lower body tensed up, a portion of dense sex fluids immediately sprayed out, covering Aiwa's cock inside it. That burst of pleasure made her entire vagina contract, clamping on Aiwa's thick thing from either side.

Celi opened her small mouth, taking big gasps. Her breasts and pussy were being attacked by Aiwa, with nowhere to escape, an intense pleasure bubbled inside her from all directions.

[Aah aah]

Celi's gasps became more rushed; those weren't moans anymore, and almost resembled painful howling. Her lowed body continuously moved towards Aiwa's body; however Aiwa's thick cock was firmly fixed there.

Right now, Kayseri was standing outside the tent, looking at a far away region. It was impossible for her to be not anxious for her daughter Beira's safety; however Celi's shrilling and yelling transmitting out from inside the tent pulled her thoughts back. The other maid, Aduona also approached the entrance from time to time, crouching there, trying to listen to the sounds from inside.

[Aduona, are you also thinking of letting him pierce you once?]

Seeing Aduona's excited appearance, Kayseri couldn't help but get angry. Right now, she missed her daughter, and the reason why her daughter went to adventure, wasn't it the man inside the tent who could make a woman fall in love at first sight? Kayseri was unable to release the anger in her heart on Aiwa, but she could release it on Aduona.

[Have not ... have not ...]

Aduona immediately withdrew her body and bowed down.

Kayseri firmly glanced towards Aduona, turning around to rush inside the tent. Right now, Aiwa had bowed his body, eating the two breasts on Celi's bosom while moving his buttocks, that pike's thrusting made Celi continuously howl in pain.

Kayseri sat down in an unhappy mood, looking at Celi whose legs were trembling in the air, she said to Aiwa: [I see it's not bad, actually that little slut outside is waiting for you to pierce her! She said that you best make her faint from fucking as soon as possible.]

These words were made up by Kayseri; however Aiwa didn't think much, he immediately withdrew from Celi's body, that thick cock was still moist with Celi's virgin blood.

[Hehe, then quickly call her in!]

Aiwa was originally preparing to shoot his semen inside Celi's body; however he didn't expect that Aduona also wanted to join the fun.

[Aduona, come in!]

Kayseri immediately shouted sitting there, Aduona was frightened as she quickly lifted the curtain and came in. Kayseri sent a meaningful look towards Aiwa, Aiwa simply came down from the bed, walking in front of Aduona. Although her heart yearned to make love with Aiwa, however, after seeing his mighty naked body, especially that long and large cock, Aduona felt a bit timid, withdrawing her body backwards.

Aiwa suddenly grabbed her, and threw her on top of the bed. Aduona curled up her body due to the fear, timidly looking at Aiwa walking near her step by step.

[Strip your clothes.]

Aiwa ordered. However, Aduona seemed like she didn't hear it, clamping her legs together.

Aiwa suddenly threw himself on the bed, pulling down Aduona's clothes.

Compared to Celi, Aduona's bosom was better developed; those breasts were similar to big steam buns freshly taken out of the furnace. Aiwa hugged Aduona as he used his mouth to bite her breast.

[Aah!]

Aduona screamed immediately, however, Aiwa ignored her violent shouts. Inside the Generalissimo's tent, if the Generalissimo allowed a matter, then no one could prevent it.

Aiwa bit Aduona's breasts while digging his finger inside her pussy, it was already moist and wet, and that slippery feel made Aiwa feel like piercing her immediately. Aiwa's hand easily separated Aduona's white legs, directly inserting his pike inside Aduona's pussy.

[Aah!]

A ripping sort of pain immediately made teardrops appear at Aduona's eyes. However, Aiwa didn't stop because of this; he continuously thrust in and out of her slippery wet flower hole. Aduona sensed a painful feel as if her vagina was split open, and at the same time, she enjoyed the pleasure produced from there.

Every time she could only hear the master's wishing for death and immortality kind of joyous yelling, always fantasizing about how one day she could also taste the thrusting of a man, unexpectedly it had come true today!

Aiwa stopped temporarily, raising his body, this way he could see the entire movement of Aduona's body. Aduona's moving and writhing showing an intoxicated expression wasn't even a single bit inferior to Celi, although these two persons were delicate, their lower bodies were very powerful, and their clamping made Aiwa very refreshed.

Aiwa thrust in and out of Aduona's body for some time, although it didn't have a rhythm, for handling Aduona and Celi, these newly hatched birds, was there

any need for skill and trick? If only their bodies were rubbed twice, it was enough to make them endlessly excited. Aiwa simply didn't have any need to use his Yin technique, directly thrusting that thick cock was enough.

Very quickly, Aiwa spurted out a portion of sex fluids. Aiwa also didn't expend much energy, when Aduona's body was trembling, his semen shot inside her. In order to let Celi also experience the taste of ejaculation, when half of the semen had shot out, Aiwa suddenly pulled out of Aduona's body, inserting his cock inside Celi's naked body, continuously thrusting a few times and ejaculating again, that semen gu gu sprayed on top of Celi's uterus, making her lovely body shudder.

Kayseri was sitting at the side, watching Aiwa use his thick weapon to torment those two maids, this was one kind of enjoyment for her: Especially, after seeing a twisted expression on the maids faces, she felt satisfied.

[Aduona, Celi, you two come over. Looking at your good play, I'm wet all over here, quickly come and lick for me!]

Kayseri lied on top of the chair, putting her hands on top of the armrest. She wanted to continue tormenting these two little sluts, not letting them enjoy just for nothing.

After those two maids heard the order, without being able to change their clothes, they quickly knelt in front of Kayseri. They untied Kayseri's nightgown, exposing her lower body, but they didn't dare to forcefully separate her legs. Aduona brought her body forward, stooping down her face on top of Kayseri's vulva; she extended her tongue, cautiously and solemnly licking that vulva already dripping with sexual secretions.

When Aduona's tongue touched on top of Kayseri's vulva, she couldn't help but shut her eyes, issuing a tempting moan: [Oh]

After Aduona finished licking, she sucked the place she had licked just now, this made Kayseri very pleasant. Especially, when Aduona's lips and tongue rubbed against her vulva, she had never experienced this kind of feeling.

In fact, before Aiwa arrived, as the Generalissimo, Kayseri was never like this. After getting affected by Aiwa's Yin technique, she became a different person: Moreover, right now, she was somewhat abnormal due to the disturbance

created from her daughter Beira's matter, thus, the more she tormented these two maids, the more her heart felt delighted.

Celi and Aduona licked on top of Kayseri's vulva one after another, the more they licked, the more sexual secretions came out, these two maids were eating sufferings, how to lick this place clean?

Aiwa laughed, after properly wearing his clothes, he said to Kayseri: [I'm going to take a look at how things are going on for your sworn enemy now.]

He fastened the belt on his gown as he walked outside.

After Lumen was captured, she was delivered over to Lucy's place.

This was also Kayseri's special intention. She knew, the reason why Lumen rebelled wasn't because she hated her, rather because her self-respect had received an injury, this could all be blamed on her daughter. If Beira didn't run to seize the person from Lucy's tent, Lumen was also improbable to rebel. Kayseri didn't want to be heartless towards Lumen, she also knew that Lucy and Lumen had a good relationship, at the level of high-ranking military officers inside the entire Tanzya, only Lucy and Lumen got along, other people didn't like Lumen, her nature was very straightforward, very easily offending a person. If this phoenix met with misfortune was delivered to any other high-ranking military officer, then she would surely suffer. Thinking of protecting Lumen, Kayseri sent her to be imprisoned under Lucy.

[Lumen, you know why the Generalissimo delivered you to my hands?]

Lucy sat beside Lumen and asked carelessly.

[Your ability is strong, is in order for you to monitor me!]

Lumen instantly stated. Right now, she still harboured hard feelings towards the Generalissimo. When she heard Princess Beira was competing with Wuya, she not all refrained from scolding: [I wish Beira dies at Khalila Grand Canyon!]

[You blame the Generalissimo wrongly, for your good, she delivered you to be monitored by me.]

Lucy said thoughtfully.

[In order for me? who would believe that!]

Lumen was not ready to accept and groaned.

[Think yourselves, if she sent you elsewhere, can you have a good day? Like this! Right now, you can select a region yourself, to whom do you wish to go?]

Lucy looked towards Lumen.

Lumen rolled her eyes for a long time, but didn't figure out a single person.

[There's no other region where it's better than here? Only I won't injure you. Therefore I said, the Generalissimo delivering you to me, was all for your own good.]

[Then ... she can kill me?]

Lumen was concerned about her life's safety. She publicly made a claim as equal towards the Generalissimo. In Tanzya's history, there had never been a traitor who had a good ending.

[If she wanted to kill you, then she would have killed you on the scene. Your and my military forces are all under her, moreover she doesn't even need to personally do it with her hands, if only she ordered, will you still have lived till today?]

Lucy analyzed Lumen's situation.

Lumen couldn't help but recall the scene of Wuya holding the cold dagger at her neck, she regretted her hot headedness which caused her to do this unforgivable sin, she was quite clear in her heart, even if she was capable of saving her life, she could be hit into the slave book by Kayseri, that would be worse than living. Thinking of here, Lumen couldn't help but shed silent tears.

Unknowingly, Aiwa had arrived within Lucy's tent. Actually, when Aiwa came he deliberately didn't use light footsteps, however he didn't allow the two maids at the doorway to report, and Lucy could already make out that it was Aiwa from those heavy footsteps sound. Just now, the reason she spoke these words were for letting Aiwa listen to them. After all, Aiwa was Kayseri's man right now; this meant that if these words were passed on to Kayseri through Aiwa's mouth, perhaps there was a chance for Lumen to explain herself in front of Kayseri.

Lucy's heart was also clear, although that day she had made a clear stand and

let her private soldiers block Lumen, Kayseri still returned Lumen till here; however, this didn't mean that the Generalissimo had complete trust towards Lucy.

The reason was simple: Beira seized Aiwa from inside Lucy's tent, Lumen directly showed her complaint; like that, since Beira seized Aiwa from inside Lucy's tent, did Lucy really didn't have any complaint?

[Aiwa?]

Seeing Aiwa appear inside Lucy's tent, Lumen couldn't help but get happy. She liked this Hass man very much, only it's a pity, before she could reach her first orgasm, he was carried away by Beira; but precisely in order to fight over Aiwa, Lumen had ended up this way. Thus, seeing Aiwa, Lumen felt grief once more.

[You two are good?]

Aiwa came over to those two seated woman and asked, putting his hands on top of fragrant shoulders of these beautiful women.

[I was casually walking, conveniently coming over to take a look at my two beauties.]

Aiwa's hands slid down from their fragrant shoulders, sticking to their waists, they hooked one breast of each person.

[Did the Generalissimo send you?]

Lucy asked with a neither cold nor warm voice.

[General Lucy isn't thinking I, Aiwa am Kayseri's spy right? I am the majestic senior officer of Favargo!]

Aiwa laughed and hugged these two women into his embrace.

[Why don't you return to Favargo? You should know, you gave rise to war within Tanzya? You don't fear they would hack you into pieces?]

Lucy asked.

[Even if I didn't appear, you were sure to raise war. In order for benefits, war is improbable to stop. Don't tell me that someone trying to covet the supreme power and position began after I came to Tanzya? Only, I admit, because of my

arrival, it brought out your conflicting views, actually its good like this, so as not let everyone's heart feel stifled, yes or no?]

Aiwa's big hand pinched on top of Lumen's plentiful breast as he asked.

[However, the price I paid was very disastrous. From now on, I'll lose my freedom, Kayseri won't let me off!]

Lumen wept with grief as she recounted the affair. She sincerely wished Aiwa was capable of persuading Kayseri to not lower herself, giving out a way to survive. [If only she doesn't make me a slave, I will work hard for her!]

Lumen expressed her good faith towards Aiwa.

Seeing Lumen's fawning appearance, Lucy began to somewhat look down upon her.

[Isn't working hard similar to a slave? To say again, if you want to show good faith towards her, then speak to her, what's the use of saying it to me?]

[You're Kayseri's crimson person right now, she listens to you the most. I beg you; help me by saying a few good words! I can repay you!]

Lumen directly knelt in front of Aiwa's body.

[How are you thinking of repaying me?]

Aiwa merely laughed, and didn't go and raise her. A person violating an unforgivable mistake has to naturally receive punishment.

[You can do whatever you want to me!]

Lumen practically forfeited her dignity, willing to become Aiwa's slave.

However, it wasn't necessary that an ordinary woman could become Aiwa's slave, because an ordinary woman wouldn't be able enter the discerning eyes of Aiwa, this lewd man.

In fact, every individual was a slave to their desire, if they are able to get what they want; then they are ready to become a slave. Like the aloof and remote Kayseri, how isn't she Aiwa's slave? And as for Wuya and Beria, aren't they competing to become Aiwa's slave?

Lucy was very clear about this bit.

[Then, are you ready to let me cum inside your mouth once?]

Aiwa clasped Lumen's face. Although she couldn't be considered as Tanzya's most beautiful woman, however, her figure was sexy, amorous ripples undulated inside her eyes, making a man's sexuality rise.

[You can come as many times you want!]

Lumen said decisively, she really wished Aiwa could cum inside her once.

Aiwa lifted her head towards Lucy, and laughed: [Take a look, she's like this, should I cum in her? what do you say?]

[This is a matter between you two, what relation does it have with me?]

Lucy couldn't bear to see Lumen's lowly begging appearance; she couldn't help but get angry.

[However, right now, I want to cum inside your mouth once]

Aiwa hooked his hand around Lucy's slender waist. Compared to Lumen, Lucy was more outstanding at many aspects. Although her breasts weren't as ridiculous as Lumen's, but their shapes made Aiwa desire them, those tall and straight points were also very tempting. Right now, two snow white lumps were crowding out of her clothes neckline, seeing them made Aiwa's heartbeat quicken.

[You aren't afraid Kayseri will feel jealous?]

Getting her breasts pinched by Aiwa, Lucy began to feel restless. Her hand also went towards Aiwa's crotch, caressing on top of that long thing.

[Hehe, right now, Kayseri is getting licked by her two maids, she feels very comfortable, and how can she consider being jealous regarding eating you? If you two aren't there to vie for her, then how could she have fun?]

Aiwa's words made Lucy suddenly reveal herself. [What you're saying is correct, for the Generalissimo, we have no choice but to snatch her man. Come! Lumen, climb on top!]

Lucy suddenly turned towards Aiwa, removing his clothes for him, those trousers still hadn't fallen off, and she quickly grabbed that thick thing and started playing with it.

After Lumen saw Lucy take Aiwa's thick thing in her hands and play with it, she also stripped her clothes, revealing her sexy figure in front of Aiwa. She rubbed her breasts on Lucy's back; her lovely eyes looked towards Aiwa. Receiving the two beautiful woman's seduction, Aiwa's thing at this crotch quickly swelled up, making Lucy hold it with her two hands.

Seeing Aiwa's thing elongate in her hands, Lucy was excited, she immediately held that cock, sucking it inside her mouth.

[Ao really pleasurable]

Aiwa couldn't help but raise his body, Lucy used her small mouth to keep on sucking.

Lumen was also unwilling to be left out; she brought her body in front of Aiwa, delivering her huge breasts near his mouth. Aiwa opened his mouth, sucking a nipple inside his mouth!

Lucy oral sex skill was pretty good. She sucked and released Aiwa's thick thing as she used her fine fingers to caress Aiwa's meatballs. Aiwa also didn't stay idle, his mouth sucked Lumen's breast, and his hand stretched inside her crotch, digging inside her fleshy slit.

[En oh]

Getting her pussy dug out by Aiwa, Lumen writhed her sexy body, her flesh walls clamped on Aiwa's moving finger. Lumen's mouth was still idle, she thirsted to kiss Aiwa, but Aiwa's mouth was busy at her breast, not willing to come out, without any other option, she licked her own lips.

Lumen's pussy was dripping wet due to Aiwa's provocation, she moaned continuously: [Oh let me eat you dick! Didn't you say you wanted to cum inside my mouth?]

Aiwa finally released her breast, also taking his finger outside her flesh hole. After getting released by Aiwa, Lumen immediately got down his body, she held Lucy who was energetically sucking Aiwa's huge cock and pulled her: [First go and undress!]

Lumen pulled Lucy strongly; she lied between Aiwa's crotch, sucking that slippery cock wet due to Lucy's licking inside her mouth. Along with her sucking,

her breasts at her bosom also swayed rhythmically.

However, Lucy didn't act like Lumen, she removed her clothes and lay on the bed absolutely naked, and separating her legs, bringing her vulva near Aiwa's mouth.

Not waiting for Aiwa to come lick her, she took the initiative to move her buttocks herself, making her vulva rub against Aiwa's lips. Aiwa was held by Lucy's legs, his lips closely stuck on Lucy's vulva, strongly sucking her, those sexual secretions were all sucked inside Aiwa's mouth. Due to using too much force, those two tender flesh slits were also sucked by Aiwa's mouth, plus Aiwa used his tongue to continuously sweep against them, this provoked Lucy's libido very quickly.

[Aah wu]

Lucy continuously moved her buttocks, a wave of sexual secretions sprayed out, a trace of excitement floated across her face. Right now, Aiwa also felt pleasurable due to Lumen licking his dick. Lumen had already swallowed his two small meatballs inside her mouth, that slippery tongue swept across his creased testicles, making him excited.

Just now, when Lumen was getting dug out by Aiwa, her libido had already surged up, and now sucking his yang root like this made her endlessly excited, sexual secretions huahua flowed out from her flesh hole, making her itch and hard to endure anymore.

Lucy made a great effort to rub her vulva against Aiwa's tongue and lips, Lumen also seized the opportunity, sitting on top of Aiwa's crotch; she inserted that huge cock inside her pussy.

[Oh unbearable it's itching very much]

Lucy had already reached her first orgasm under the rubbing movement of Aiwa's lips and tongue; however, she wasn't to settle the desire inside her flesh hole like this. She suddenly came down from the bed, and pulled Lumen who was moving on top of Aiwa's cock, and impatiently inserted his cock inside her body.

[Oh this is pleasant very pleasurable]

An intoxicated expression filled Lucy's face. She lewdly looked towards Aiwa as

she groped her breasts with her hands.

[Aiwa, you mustn't cum inside her body, you have to cum inside you slave servant's mouth!]

Lumen also learned from Lucy and brought her vulva near Aiwa's mouth. However, Aiwa didn't take the initiative, without any other option, Lumen raised her buttocks herself. Aiwa licked and sucked, sometime later, Lumen was already infatuated. Sexual secretions gugu sprayed out of her flesh hole and her body trembled continuously.

Aiwa withdrew his face, and once more dug into Lumen's vulva. She was done in long ago, and Aiwa's this move made her body convulse again, clamping on his finger firmly.

[Lumen, I'm going to cum]

Aiwa put out a going to cum expression, frightened, Lumen quickly came down the bed, pushing Lucy aside who was vigorously moving on Aiwa's body. She inserted Aiwa's thick cock deep inside her throat, until her teardrops came out, and Aiwa still didn't look like he was going to cum.

In order to make Aiwa cum as quickly as possible, she released Aiwa's cock and used her breasts to clamp on it from both sides and started sliding it.

This trick of throbbing against a woman's breasts was very new to Aiwa. Aiwa thought in his heart: [Thank you!]

[Lumen; let Lucy come and have a round first]

Aiwa's body trembled with excitement; however the semen still didn't shoot out.

Lumen obediently returned the cock to Lucy. Aiwa took the initiative to pump inside Lucy's small mouth, when he felt that he was going to ejaculate, he suddenly sat down, drawing out his cock, pointing it towards Lucy's tempting face, a portion of milky white semen spurted out.

That milky white semen slid down from Lucy's upper face, reaching her mouth's corner, and Lucy extended her tongue out to lick her mouth. Ejaculating on top of the face like this was a really pleasant thing!

[Aiwa, you mustn't! Leave a little for slave servant!]

Soon, Aiwa was going to finish cumming on top of Lucy's face; Lumen became anxious.

She pushed Lucy who was kneeling there and accepting getting ejaculated on her face, she immediately sucked that cock which was spurting milky white liquids just now, however, by the time she sucked it inside her mouth; Aiwa had already stopped cumming. This made Lumen somewhat dispirited; she gave a lovely blaming look towards Aiwa.

[Lick it again, perhaps there's still more!]

Aiwa encouraged Lumen, so she doesn't release it immediately. Lumen once again knelt on the ground and strongly sucked like a prostitute. She knew, a ferocious man was capable of ejaculating several times.

Luckily, Aiwa's cock still hadn't gone soft after ejaculating once, it was still firm and upright, if it was inserted inside a woman's flesh hole now; it was still capable of letting the woman feel ecstatic.

Lumen sucked and licked Aiwa's cock, until the veins were popping on top of the cock again, slightly throbbing? Aiwa leaned on the bedside, looking at Lumen sucking him, a woman's face at this time was very tempting, he was suddenly excited, he used his hands to hold Lumen's head, and inserted his cock deep inside her throat.

A portion of burning hot magma spurted out, spraying inside Lumen's throat. She firmly closed her eyes, forcing the warm semen inside her throat, so as to not let it choke her windpipe.

The uvula inside her throat was touching Aiwa's meatus, after a wave of itching, another wave of warm semen shot out, much more larger and powerful than the previous time.

Aiwa was not a normal man; his ejaculation quantity was top-notch among males. Aiwa's cock throbbed inside Lumen's throat several times, semen had already crammed inside Lumen's mouth, and Aiwa could see milky white semen flowing out of her mouth's corners. Lumen used her lips to tightly engulf his cock, not releasing it. Then, Aiwa saw Lumen firmly close her eyes again, swallowing

down the semen inside her mouth, and her tongue continued to lick his glans penis, until she sucked out the final drop of semen.

At the time Lumen took out that cock outside her mouth, it was still hard, merely its color was a bit ruddy, because of getting sucked by two woman simultaneously, it was in a hyperaemic state. Right now, Lucy still hadn't wiped her face, she hurriedly held the cock Lucy had released and inserted it inside her pussy.

Aiwa held Lucy's slender waist, moving against her body. Her tight pussy clamped his thick cock from time to time, furthermore exerting itself to make Aiwa's thick cock reach until her tender uterus.

However not matter how energetically she moved, although Aiwa was firm and straight, he didn't ejaculate inside her. Aiwa's heart was very clear, right now he couldn't waste his yang essence as he liked. He still needed to raise his ability, because he a new mission to accept next.

Chapter 5: God Wolf

Volume 3 Chapter 5

God Wolf

TLN: Well... I dozed off... Anyway enjoy the chapter... Next chapter will be up tomorrow! You'll finally be able to see the witch!!

Four days passed by since Beria and Wuya had set off, not only was Kayseri worried; even Aiwa had an ominous premonition.

[Maybe something happened to Beria?]

Aiwa was feeling fidgety, moreover this feeling he felt was clearly aimed at Little Princess Beira. In the past two days, her shadow had frequently appeared in his mind, he even dreamt of her sometimes.

[You really are a crow's beak!]

TLN: Crow's beak: a person who has made an inauspicious remark.
Kayseri sent a taboo glance towards Aiwa. Although she was inseparable from Aiwa even for a single day after he arrived at Tanzya, however she could hardly concede regarding her daughter's matter. Even if her heart felt one kind of ominous feeling, she was not ready to speak out and silently prayed in her heart, that God is able to bless and protect her daughter.

[Leave Beira's matter to me! I can bring her back safely.]

Aiwa said decisively. Kayseri was in charge of all the matters in Tanzya, she couldn't leave the base camp even for a single day. Therefore, it was only possible for Aiwa to go.

Aiwa set off carrying dried food that would last for 2 days, Kayseri was already powerless to worry about whether he would seize the opportunity and return to Favargo. Of course, Kayseri felt Aiwa was a man who would never break his

word, since he said he would retrieve Beira; then he would surely do so. As for whether he would be able to find her, it would depend on Beira and Aiwa's fate.

Aiwa wore a battle bamboo hat, to obstruct the scorching sun, a battle cape was draped over his shoulders, holding a moon-star sword in his hand, his appearance resembled a travelling knight. He quickly departed towards Khalila Grand Canyon.

The reason why he refused Kayseri's treasure horse was that if he went by foot, then he could reach there faster, but Kayseri couldn't comprehend it. After Aiwa went 4-5 li away from the Tanzya base camp, he stopped his footsteps. He moved his dou qi from his dantian, his legs left the ground slightly, as if he was floating, that red battle cape on his back was floating back similar to a bird.

Less than half a day later, about 2'o clock, Aiwa had reached the precipice of Khalila Grand Canyon. Until that point, Aiwa imagined Khalila to be just a large ravine, however, when he reached the precipice, he could feel there were many mysteries buried in its depths.

He slightly leaned his body, looking down, its bottom couldn't be seen, a portion of cold air ascended from the valley's bottom, directly pressing against his navel region. Standing there, he could still see snowflakes floating towards the valley's bottom.

Air was produced under Aiwa's feet, gently spreading out his battle cape, he jumped, flying down towards the valley.

The huge battle sail slowed down his descend; he looked around, observing the circumstances within the valley. Both sides were covered with sheer cliffs and precipitous rocks, however strange vegetation had grown due to the wind and snowfall.

Aiwa ignored them and searched the valley floor, hoping to find a human trail. During his journey to Khalila Grand Canyon, he couldn't find any tracks; he feared that Beira and Wuya's groups had reached here long ago. Therefore, he didn't try to find further tracks and directly descended down the canyon.

The valley floor's atmosphere was somewhat oppressing, its spaciousness and emptiness could suffocate a person. Compared to the precipice, the valley floor was warmer; however, he couldn't find any traces of life here. If it wasn't for

being able to see the greenery from the plants on top of the cliffs, he would have believed this was a death valley.

After Aiwa travelled a few 100m, he discovered a pile of horse dung on the ground. It was already dried due to the warm temperature evaporating the moisture in it. Therefore, Aiwa concluded that someone walked past this region just recently.

He examined the hoof prints on the valley floor; their direction was facing towards the valley's interior.

This meant that Beira and Wuya had already entered into the valley's hinterland.

Aiwa's mood was excited; he sensed he was getting closer to Beira.

Khalila Grand Canyon couldn't be considered to be narrow; some regions were around half a li wide, whereas the smallest region was only 10m wide. Aiwa didn't dare to walk quickly, he wanted see whether or not there were any caves near the valley floor.

After walking for some time, a tremendous amount of monoliths appeared in front of Aiwa. Those monoliths were set horizontally on the valley floor, similar to many lanes; the entire region resembled a maze. Since those monoliths were very huge, they obstructed a person's sight. Aiwa was already tired. In order to catch up with Beira, he had used up a lot of physical strength. He prepared to rest for a little time and eat some rations.

He didn't expect that eating those dried food would cause him to choke up, he immediately unscrewed the water sack and drank a little water. Although there was water inside this valley, there was no surety about its effects.

In order to relieve his exhaustion, Aiwa took out a tobacco leaf from his spice bag. Rolling it up, he gathered his dou qi in his palm, bringing out a small fireball.

He took a deep breath, immediately letting a portion of fragrance seep into his lungs. However, he was not used to that tobacco's smell and immediately started coughing.

Aiwa's fierce coughing resounded inside the valley, making it seem deathly

quiet here! He stood up, took a few deep breaths and walked forward, however, another strange thing happened.

He found that he had returned to the region where he had rested before.

He picked up the tobacco butt thrown away on the ground; it was still distributing a familiar smell.

What's going on?

Aiwa raised his head to take a look at the terrain. Those monoliths were as awe-inspiring as a mythical animal; their appearance could frighten a man. They forged ahead into several paths, making it difficult to find the correct path; he had entered such a strange path and returned back here.

Without any other choice, Aiwa jumped on top of the monolith and walked on top of it, he quickly ran forward not losing the way.

This method showed quick results, before long, Aiwa had left that maze. Although he has learned trapping methods at the East Empire, meeting this trap, he was still unable to use those mysterious methods to break this stone formation.

When Aiwa was preparing to glide past the maze, from that high region, he saw a group of troops disorderly moving forward in the maze.

It seems that they were also trapped within the maze.

Aiwa dropped down to the surface, and quickly moved near that party using his quick movement method.

[Princess, Wuya, take a look, who has come!]

A maid was surprised after she saw Aiwa arriving near them.

[Aiwa, how could you come?]

Wuya immediately faced Aiwa, right now; she was as surprised as the maid. No need to say, during the time they walked inside the canyon, they had encountered many troubles, Aiwa's appearance was a hope for them.

[If I don't come, then who will help you capture a God Wolf?]

After Aiwa saw that these two beautiful women didn't have any injuries, he

was very happy in his heart.

[Then who do you want to help? There can only be one victor!]

One maid interrupted. The difficulties and danger the past few days, had already removed the line between the master and servant, even a maid had the cheek to openly joke about their master.

[Can't I help you both beat one each?]

Aiwa walked near the two beautiful women. Although Beira wasn't as excited as Wuya, however, her eyes were already moist, after all she had never eaten sufferings since her childhood, if it wasn't for her intense determination to obtain Aiwa, she would have already conceded.

[Why did you walk in this direction?]

Aiwa found that they weren't walking towards the valley and were walking horizontally, like this they would reach their original place again. [We're lost, every time we return to our original position, not being able to walk out of this damned place.]

Seeing Aiwa arrive, Beira who had preserved till now relaxed her spirit and suddenly collapsed.

Aiwa swiftly moved his hand, quickly holding Beira in his embrace.

[Beira, what happened?]

Wuya and her group of maids approached her.

[Princess Beira hasn't eaten since two days; she's very weak right now.]

One of the maids said.

[Aren't you supposed to protect the Princess? Why didn't you advise her to eat?]

Aiwa was very angry. A raging inferno burned inside his eyes, making those maids silent due to the fear.

[Aiwa, you mustn't blame them, in order to save food and water, she only ate only if it was absolutely essential. Everyone advised her, but she was not ready to listen.]

Wuya felt that only she could speak in behalf of Beira's maids.

Due to relaxing her spirit, Beira was unable to support her body, curling up inside Aiwa's embrace. Seeing the scene of Beira lying in Aiwa's embrace, Wuya couldn't help but wish that it was her who had collapsed instead of Beira. Because it wasn't Beira who had taken the initiative to throw herself in his embrace, rather it was Aiwa who took the initiative to hug and embrace her. Although Wuya had a physical relationship twice with Aiwa, this scene made her envious; however, nothing could be done. A weak woman could easily obtain a man's affection, Wuya was very valiant, and was incapable of enjoying Aiwa's care and concern.

Right now, the gaze which Aiwa used to look at Beira made her endlessly jealous, she never enjoyed that kind of loving expression, not even when he was riding her body. She wanted to know, when Aiwa would strip Beira's clothes, and insert his thick cock inside her naked body, would he still show this loving expression.

[All of you retire first! I want to speak with Aiwa.]

Wuya commanded her and Beira's chamberlains to retire. Her gaze closely watched them until they retreated behind the monolith, until they went out of her sight.

In order to let Beira get ample rest, he held her and sat on top of the ground. Right now, Aiwa caressed her delicate face, almost causing his tears to appear, because he knew, this respected Tanzya Princess had suffered till now due to him. Aiwa wasn't a boy whose emotions could be easily moved, but this time, he was moved by Beira.

That sight made Wuya jealous and envious again. For any girl, it was enough for her if she could be loved dearly by the man she admired, however, her chastity had already been taken away by Aiwa and she still hadn't received his affection.

The only way left to win Aiwa's love right now was to play as the matchmaker between them.

[Aiwa, Beira's body is very weak right now, if she isn't saved quickly]

Wuya calmly looked towards Aiwa.

Aiwa raised his head slowly. He also didn't wish for anything to happen to Beira, or else, he wouldn't have come to this ghost region.

[What method do you have?]

A trace of gentleness appeared inside Aiwa's firm gaze. This was the first time he had used such a gaze to look at Wuya, it made her heart tremble.

[I can only think of one way, but that would also need you to save her.]

Glistening teardrops appeared inside Wuya's eyes, not realizing her personal feelings, she was anxious about Beira's health. Right now, Beira was opening and closing her eyes lightly, weakly lying in Aiwa's embrace, not even having the strength to speak, only the up and down movement of her small bosom could be seen.

[What way, say quickly?]

Aiwa said with worry.

[You ought to know. How did you let Generalissimo Kayseri recover her strength?]

Wuya looked towards Aiwa ambiguously. She was unable to directly tell Aiwa to have sex with Beira, after all Beira was the Princess, if she directly said it, it would be offending her.

Aiwa looked down, gently caressing Beira's petite and weak body, he made a long sigh.

[Let's do it like this, you can continue to look for the God Wolf; I will take her and return.]

Aiwa didn't declare his position.

[You want to return to save her? If you understood her character, then you should know that's simply taking away her life. You should know, right now, what's the most important thing for her!]

Wuya said. Right now, she felt somewhat sorry for Beira. Because, compared to Beira, her emotions towards Aiwa weren't pure, on the opposite, the reason

she was good towards him, was because of vanity and revenge. Aiwa used a forceful method to take her chastity away, and again used forceful methods to make her experience the pleasure of sex. On the other hand, although Beira hadn't experienced anything, not even received a kiss from Aiwa, but it was clear to Wuya, Beira was the one who had obtained the most. During the days Aiwa stayed within Tanzya, only Beira was able to obtain Aiwa's genuine love.

[I naturally know what's most important!]

Aiwa raised his head to look at Wuya. His sight resembled a sharp sword, making Wuya tremble with fear, she knew what Aiwa was thinking.

[You mustn't blame me for this matter; it was the Generalissimo who gave you to me!]

Wuya tried to justify herself. She knew in her heart, the reason Beira had taken risks this time was because of her. However, in order to obtain Aiwa, Wuya couldn't take the initiative to withdraw, he was already deeply engraved inside her heart.

Aiwa's sight looked all over, he found a cave, in order to take shelter and take protection from the rain.

Aiwa held Beira and stood up, walking towards the cave.

Looking at this cave, Aiwa thought to himself: [This must have been left behind by a hero who was battling life and death; first I must let Beira take rest here!]

[We'll continue to advance, pray that you are able to make a big harvest.]

Aiwa found a good place to leave Beira and turned over towards Wuya.

[You're thinking of leaving her here?]

Wuya was anxious about Beira right now.

[I can't bother about the Generalissimo's promise anymore, as long as Beira is alive and well!]

[You're right; she isn't that kind of girl, let's set off!]

Aiwa picked up Beira's bow and arrow. Beira liked to use the arrow from her

childhood, but she couldn't understand how to use the sword, she couldn't even lift up a common sword.

Looking at Aiwa walking forward without hesitation, Wuya also followed behind.

[You walk in the front!]

Aiwa didn't want Wuya to think he was taking small advantages. Wuya hesitated a bit, but after seeing Aiwa's firm expression, she didn't hesitate anymore and walked forward.

All the maids stayed behind to look after Beira, only Wuya and Aiwa continued to move forward.

Suddenly, a huge gale attacked towards them, a storm of black clouds fiercely hit towards their faces, Aiwa hastily moved forward, using his body to protect Wuya.

Wuya was certain, if Aiwa didn't protect her, she would have already been thrown away by the gale. In a moment, the clouds and wind stopped, everything went back as it was before.

[Aiwa, nothing would happen to Beira right?]

Wuya looked towards that regiment of black clouds.

[Nothing will happen; the wind won't be able to go inside the cave.]

Aiwa sent a momentary glance behind and walked forward together with Wuya.

Half a day later, they suddenly heard a heart shivering yell! That was the God Wolf's yell!

Raising their heads to see, on top of the precipice, there was a wolf which had white hair stretching till its neck. It continued to issue that hair standing yell. This yell raised Aiwa's spirit. The legendary God Wolf had finally appeared!

Wuya couldn't help but lean against Aiwa. Although she was experienced and always fought at the lead, after listening to the God Wolf's yell, Wuya felt all the hair on her body stand up. Even ignoring its huge body, knowing its mysterious legend was enough to scare even a courageous girl. Because, according to the

legend, everyone who had met the God Wolf didn't even have a little chance of surviving.

Aiwa closely held Wuya; she had experienced such a protective embrace for the first time. She thought that it didn't matter even if she was eaten up by the God Wolf.

Aiwa vigilantly peeked at the valley, he knew that the habits of God Wolves were similar to common wolves, they liked to live together, in case they heard a wolf's cry, it was possible for a huge group of wolves to appear.

Under Aiwa's observation, he suddenly felt the hair on his back stand up. He had never felt this. He suddenly turned his body, the scene before his eyes made him suck in a cold breath!

Several hundred God Wolves were slowly nearing towards him from behind.

These God Wolves bodies were huge, releasing light from their eyes, black hair standing erect on their forehead. It was that black wolf hair, which was distributing one kind of intimidating energy towards Aiwa.

Aiwa already felt Wuya's body tremble, however he didn't dare to pass his energy to her right now, if he did, it was possible that it would be unable for either of them to survive. These God Wolves were this primitive land's gods; it wasn't easy to win against them. If he couldn't leave Khalila Grand Canyon alive, then Wuya and Beira would be buried here!

When those several hundred God Wolves were moving towards Aiwa, Aiwa fetched the bow on his back, taking out two arrows from the quiver; he put them at the bowstring simultaneously.

However, the God Wolves didn't stop because of this.

For these God Wolves who had never been defeated by humans, this male and female in front of them were like culinary delicacies delivered right to their mouths.

However, a mere 300 jin human meat was not enough for several hundred God Wolves.

TLN: Jin=0.5Kg.

However, they hadn't moistened their mouths with delicacies this past year, they waited inside this canyon path for a long time, waiting for a satisfactory meal to arrive, it had to be said it was heaven's bestowal. If it wasn't for the gale just now, perhaps their keen sense of smell would have already brought them to a tempting region, because their keen sense of smell told them that somewhere inside a nearby cave, there were many culinary delicacies, making them endlessly excited.

However, Aiwa and Wuya were completely oblivious about this. These several hundred God Wolves were going along the precipice and not on the valley floor. So, Aiwa and Wuya couldn't hear anything, by the time they heard the God Wolf's yell from the precipice, they had already been marked. However, when the God Wolves targeted them, those two became more excited. Aiwa's raised the bow, aiming the two arrows towards the two God Wolves walking at the front. Right now, although Wuya was holding a sword in her hands, they were already sweaty, it was possible that her sword would slip out of her hand if she attacked. Therefore, she had no confidence in leaving this canyon alive, the only comfort for her was that she could be buried inside the wolves abdomen together with Aiwa!

Humans had to die one day. Dying together with your beloved was the happiest affair. Aiwa pulled the bowstring back, but he didn't release it. He didn't use his eyes to aim, and rather willed that bow to hit the chests of the two God Wolves ahead. He was convinced, if he loosened his right hand, those two God Wolves at the front would surely collapse.

Right now, Aiwa's eyes were calmly looking at the genuine alpha wolf of this wolf pack; it was hiding within the wolf pack. This was a wolf's characteristic, any community had prerogative, wolves were no exception.

Sensing something from Aiwa's eyes, those two wolves leading the pack suddenly slowed down their steps.

Their alertness made the wolves behind them conscious that something was wrong, and they also slowed down their steps. For them, this kind of man who was motionless even during the wind, was definitely not a good kind.

However, escaping without fighting was not a wolf's characteristic; God Wolf was also this way. The God Wolves lowered their heads; their gaze never left Aiwa, especially the bow and arrow in his hand.

Although Beira was small, but this bow and arrow in her hands was very special. Aiwa was convinced, without appropriate strength, it was impossible to open it. What made Aiwa amazed was that the arrow head was somewhat different than that of a normal arrow; it wasn't sharp but rather rough and heavy. If this kind of arrow hit the opponent, then it would surely tear open one hole in the opponent, therefore, its killing power was very frightening.

The God Wolves came more near, almost only 50 steps far from them. Aiwa still had no plan of releasing the arrow, however, Wuya who was next to him was worried, because she knew, if they waited for the Wold pack to attack, then there would be no chance left of fleeing with their lives!

Wuya had already closed her eyes, tightly grabbing Aiwa's clothes with her hands, death was extreme! Even if she was divided into pieces by the wolf pack, she wanted at least one piece of flesh to stick together with Aiwa! 40 steps, 30 steps, 25 steps, 20 steps

The God Wolves pressed forward step by step, Wuya's hand had already deeply pinched Aiwa's flesh, holding that long sword stiffly with her other hand.

That two God Wolves slowly walked 2 steps forward, as if they were negotiating, they soared and attacked towards Aiwa at the same time. Aiwa's hand slowly raised the bow, loosening his right hand, two arrows shot out at the same time. Those arrows seemed like two long eyes as they directly shot towards the two wolves.

[Pu zi! Pu zi!]

Two splitting sounds, the two arrows pierced the God Wolves throats! Those two wolves fell to the ground at the same time. However, the wolves at the back suddenly rushed forward, like a tide, rushing out with momentum. Aiwa took the sword from Wuya's hand once and waved it once, for God Wolves were instantly beheaded, wolf blood was sprinkling down like rain.

However, the death of these six wolves didn't scare the rear wolf pack. They threw themselves up, towards Aiwa and Wuya, wishing to tear down this

powerful person who had massacred their companions into meat slices! Sometimes, the wrath of animals was more fearful than humans.

Soon the wolf pack was going to throw itself at him; Aiwa used his hand to hold Wuya, and floated in the air, dashing forward by stepping on the wolf pack.

There wasn't enough time for this angry wolf pack to react, Aiwa had already flown out of the wolf pack with Wuya, standing on the path from where the wolf pack had arrived.

He wanted to stop the ferocious guy inside this pack, not let them injure Beira.

The Wolf King inside the wolf pack was the first to notice the change in Aiwa. When Aiwa had reached the ground, that Wolf King suddenly jumped up from the wolf pack, flying towards Aiwa, it extended its sharp claw like an arrow, throwing itself towards Aiwa.

Wuya was ashen-faced from the fear long ago; she went soft all over, unable to stand there.

Since he hadn't settled his steps, although Aiwa swung the sword, it didn't hit. Without any other option, he held Wuya and turned around, carefully dodging the Wolf King's charge.

That Wolf King made a single jump and its body fell at a region 7-8 steps near Aiwa.

[Aiwa! be careful!]

Hearing the scream from behind, Aiwa turned around to see that the Wolf King had thrown itself against himself once again.

Right now, in order to protect Wuya, he threw the long sword in his hand to the ground. Without any other option, he placed Wuya on the ground and dodged the Wolf King's hit.

After rushing twice, the Wolf King decided to change its plan. It renounced attacking Aiwa and Wuya, and pounced towards Beira who had come out.

Beira didn't have any weapon in her hand, soon, that chief wolf was going to injure the Princess, two maids bravely came forward, the God Wolf clawed on

their bodies, it had apparently recognized who was the genuine master, therefore it didn't bite their bodies, rather it bent its waist, preparing to attack the petite and weak Beira.

Right now, Aiwa had already picked up the long sword in his hand, he used all his strength to throw it, that long sword flew towards the Wolf King like a strong gale.

When the Wolf King's claw was almost going to reach Beira, that long sword [shua] thrust into the Wolf's back, piercing through its heart.

The Wolf King's body slowly fell in front of Beira.

However, at the time Aiwa had loosened his breath after saving Beira, the wolf pack again rushed forward like a tide. He suddenly turned around, the wolf group was already close at hand. Only 7 were dead out of these several hundred wolves, it didn't sway even a little bit of their confidence in victory.

Although Beira had escaped from the danger of the Wolf King's attack, seeing the surging up wolf pack, Beira finally understood, this time everyone would all be buried inside the wolves abdomen! But in order to keep the final gleam of hope, Beira took out the sword from the Wolf King's back, and rushed towards the wolf pack.

Beira who had recovered her physical strength just now, was supported by a mystical power at this time, she was determined that if she had to die then she would follow Aiwa and die at the same place.

Chapter 6: Snatched Spirit Drop

Volume 3 Chapter 6

Snatched Spirit Drop

TLN: She's here at last.. Next chapter will entail a lot of action if you know what I mean!

At this time, four huge flame balls suddenly appeared in front of Aiwa's body, which were followed by four huge thunderclaps like. Aiwa dodged back with Wuya, also grabbing Beira who had came over. Those three floated back 1 zhang back as if they were floating in the sky.

TLN: Zhang = 10 Chinese feet = 3.3m

The flames rose up to the sky as waves of wolf's howling transmitted out of them.

A wave of deep smell of burnt flesh floated around. It was the smell of the God Wolves fur burning like a raging inferno.

After the smoke scattered, the places from where the thunderclaps emerged each had God Wolves corpses, their bodies were mutilated, limbs separated, body and head lie in different places, mostly becoming scorched.

The smell of burning flesh dominated over the remaining God Wolves.

They felt the death god's threaten for the first time.

All the God Wolves suddenly sat there, foolishly looking at the scene as if they have suffered an unexpected calamity.

Suddenly, a huge God Wolf raised its body from within the wolf pack, it issued out a mournful yell after stretching its neck, and all those God Wolves looked towards it. Naturally, the new Wolf King had instantly emerged after the

previous Wolf King's fall.

After that mournful yell, all the God Wolves crowded around the new Wolf King.

Aiwa thought another large fight was going to take place. Although he didn't want to slaughter too much, but in order to save his beloved's life, he would not hesitate to do it.

What went against Aiwa's expectation was that the Wolf King slowly turned its body, walking over towards the ravine.

Besides the God Wolves whose backs were broken, all the other God Wolves retreated along with the Wolf King.

Aiwa naturally didn't want to waste his strength, if these guys wanted to retreat, then it couldn't be any better than that.

[Are you alright?]

After making sure those God Wolves had gone far away and didn't present a threat towards them, Aiwa came back to Beira's side and asked with concern. When he saw the Wolf King throwing itself towards her; he felt as if his heart was going come out of his throat, because the contrast between Beira's petite body and that huge God Wolf was very big.

[I'm alright. Are you alright Older Sister Wuya?]

Beira was really concerned and directly embraced Aiwa and Wuya. It was already pointless to think who had won and lost, what's important was that they were able to survive safely, she also didn't wish for any scars to be left on Wuya's pretty cheek.

Hearing Beira's caring words, Wuya couldn't endure anymore as tears appeared out of her eyes: [Beira, I was really scared just now! If something happened to you then how would I explain it to the Generalissimo?]

[Take a look at you two, unable to take care of yourselves, and now you're worried about the other person.]

Aiwa sat on the ground. He was really tired, especially after so many thrilling experiences, who knows how many of his brain cells had died on this path.

[We're very good sisters, what's wrong with that?]

Wuya disputed.

[You're so modest to each other since you are such good sisters, or else perhaps you would have already been facing each other with a blade?]

Aiwa directly lied on the ground. Two maids were frightened and quickly stripped their clothes and put them under Aiwa's body. Right now, Aiwa was their great saviour, without him, they would have already been buried in the wolves bellies. Therefore, they were delighted to use the coat which they had obtained after innumerable contributions to be used for Aiwa, as life was priceless.

Aiwa glanced towards the maid who had taken off her clothes to make a cushion for him. That maid was older than the other maids, seeming more mature, what should stick out really stuck out and what should be curved was really curved. Especially her breasts, after stripping her coat, the outline made on her soft undergarments by those plump peaks were very tempting.

[Come, You also sit here.]

Aiwa looked at that pretty maid, pulling her hand to make her sit down. Without receiving Beira's order, how could that maid dare to sit? After Beira nodded towards her, she sat down.

[Just now, your master was saved thanks to you; you're a really brave girl!]

This maid was one of the two maids who had protected Beira from the Wolf King.

[Your wound isn't hurting?]

Aiwa looked over the maid's body, discovering that a small gash had opened up on her arm, with blood flowing out of it. Aiwa quickly pulled her arm, using his mouth to suck on her wound. Aiwa was very well versed on the wound spell, if only he used his saliva to clean any skin and flesh wound, while reading the wound healing spell a few times, then that wound would heal very soon, not even leaving a scar.

Aiwa naturally didn't wish for any ugly scar to be left behind on the maid's

tender skin, he sucked in two mouthfuls, her blood was very sweet. Aiwa didn't think that it was strange, because he had never tasted blood before, only sucking in the maid's blood, made him very excited.

Aiwa sucked on the place where the wolf had clawed, using his tongue to lick on her wound one time, reading the spell two times. That gash slowly started to heal in front of everyone's eyes.

What made the maid amazed was that the wound slowly disappeared as if her arm had never received a wound.

[Aiwa, you're really awesome!]

Wuya stared in awe.

Aiwa ignored her fussing and continued to look over the body of the maid protected her master, seeing another hole on her undergarments, Aiwa thought that another wound was surely there on her body.

[Let me take a look.]

Not waiting for the maid to agree, Aiwa quickly tore open a region of her clothes, there was another gash near her snow like exquisite navel region which even more deeper than the one on the arm.

Beira had a very good opinion regarding this maid; so she stripped the maid's undergarments herself, revealing her entire upper body in front of Aiwa.

[Quickly treat her! The blood's still flowing!]

Beira said. Seeing that maid make a hurting gasp after Aiwa touched that wound with his finger, Beira felt as if that wound was on her body.

Seeing the maid's snowy upper body, Aiwa's blood boiled up. Although she was only a maid, but her figure was not that different from Wuya, she was even more developed than Wuya; two perfectly round and exquisite breasts on her bosom, one look at her captivating red nipples could reveal that they still haven't been cultivated.

Aiwa was already excited after sucking this girl's blood, and now after looking at the gash on her navel region, he was again prompted by a sudden impulse.

Aiwa also didn't want to get tired, so he directly sat there, sticking his face on

the maid's navel, those full rounded breasts wrapped around Aiwa's head. The maid shyly looked towards Beira.

[What are you afraid of? He is also your master. You should be grateful that he's helping to heal you.]

Beira said. Seeing Aiwa was fond of her maid, she also felt happy.

Aiwa's hands caressed the maid's waist as his tongue slid up and down on her navel region. By the time Aiwa lifted his head, there wasn't even a shallow scar on her navel region.

The maid thought of wearing her clothes but Aiwa stopped her, thinking it would really be a great loss if he wasn't able to eat such good breasts. The maid also didn't dare to be shy, without any other option, she brought her breast near Aiwa's mouth to be sucked. Aiwa softly bit on her nipple, that bite changed the expression on the maid's face.

[Oh] The maid softly moaned, Aiwa's bite really hurt her and she couldn't help but shout. Aiwa bit her until her nipple was bleeding in his mouth, but he used the previous method again to stop her bleeding, the pain also disappeared. When the maid was putting her clothes on, she felt a bit reluctant to have left the feeling of getting licked by Aiwa, but she knew Aiwa was her master's lover, and she was merely a maid, and she couldn't dare to have delusions, therefore she quickly stood up and withdrew back.

[You return first! I and Wuya will return back with the fur of those two God Wolves that were shot to death.]

Aiwa said to Beira.

[All right! I'll wait at the cave with them. Right! Those two? Who shot them?]

Beira asked impatiently.

Just now she still didn't have any plan to strive against Wuya, but after hearing that two God Wolves were shot to death, her heart couldn't help but throb. If they were Wuya's spoils of war, then wouldn't that mean she would have to surrender Aiwa readily?

[Aiwa.]

Wuya said. She could comprehend Beira's thoughts right now that they were shot by her. She also didn't want to strive against her at this time.

[Oh]

Beira felt relieved; her age was still small, it was impossible for her to cover up her heart.

[You return first! We'll come back in a moment.]

Wuya pulled Aiwa and walked over to the place where the God Wolves with pierced throats were lying, since there were far from Aiwa's thunder palm, they weren't roasted and still had an intact corpse.

Aiwa fished out a blade from his pocket and peeled the fur of those two God Wolves along with Wuya's help. This was the proof of victory, after returning to Tanzya, he would surely be considered a hero.

Aiwa was good in all aspects and that's why he was inevitably linked to pretty women. He busily trained in Favargo every day, visiting the residents; therefore he naturally didn't know Favargo also had beautiful women. After coming to Tanzya, and seeing these beautiful women like Kayseri, he unexpectedly indulged in pleasure while forgetting his home and duty. And now, he had unexpectedly taken risks by coming to this Death Valley of Khalila Grand Canyon for Little Princess Beira.

Before this, Aiwa never knew the danger of Khalila, he didn't expect the God Wolves from the legends were this vicious and numerous; naturally, he also didn't know his thunder palm would cause the God Wolves to retreat. He was thinking of making a small thunderclap in this extreme emergency and escape with Wuya. The current situation was the result of his Dragon Blood blood vessels combining with Kayseri's Blood Shed blood vessels, if not, he would have already lost his life.

Aiwa and Wuya returned back with the wolves' fur. At this time, Beira ought to have already returned back to the cave. He wanted to take a good rest, making that maid spend one night with him in passing. Even if he didn't make love with her, merely holding her soft body would also be satisfying.

At the time Aiwa and Wuya were slowly returning, another sandstorm passed

by, covering over the entire canyon.

[Haha Haha]

The sound of a woman's laughter, flit across Aiwa and Wuya's head. Aiwa lifted his head and saw that on top of that sandstorm, there was a woman floating in the sky.

[Who are you?]

Aiwa yelled towards the sky in a loud voice. Aiwa could only glide and couldn't fly in the sky like that woman. Therefore, seeing this scene, Aiwa yearned for it.

[Haha Haha]

The woman laughed in an unrestrained manner for a long time and flew towards the ravine, quickly disappearing.

[This is what kind of person?]

Aiwa thought that since Wuya was a local Tanzanian, she had some understanding about Khalila Grand Canyon.

[I also don't know, I have never seen such a ferocious person!]

Wuya's mouth was also wide open, looking at the sky, she was also bewildered.

[Really! I thought you would know!]

Aiwa was disappointed looking at the empty sky and said.

[Perhaps Beira knows, you can go and ask her!]

Receiving a blow from Aiwa again made her feel very unwell. She knew Beira held the most important position in his heart and couldn't help but feel jealous.

[All right! We'll go back and ask Beira. I definitely have to pay a visit to such a fierce person.]

Aiwa had learned many skills from the East Empire, he naturally wanted to obtain this fierce movement technique from this woman, he had never heard of such a ability in Hass Empire which could allow a person to fly inside a canyon like this.

Just now Aiwa was foolishly hearing to wind's sound and didn't notice that

Wuya was annoyed; he still hoped that Beira knew the story behind this woman flying inside the canyon.

Right now, Wuya had become Aiwa's attendant, carrying the wolf's fur still dripping with blood. He seemed like a triumphant Generalissimo returning from a victory as he walked ahead.

[Heartless!]

Wuya's hands were already tired from lifting the heavy wolves' fur and she couldn't help but scold.

[What are you saying about wanting a heart or lung? These two furs are enough. After returning, I'll say that they were beaten by you, it would be a wonder if they didn't hold you as a great hero!]

Aiwa was excited and he placed his hand on Wuya's shoulder, forgetting that she was carrying the two wolves' furs.

Wuya could barely lift those two wolf furs, and right now Aiwa's hand was pressing on top of her shoulder, how could she be able to endure it? This was different from getting pushed by Aiwa on the bed, that time she was not conscious of Aiwa's weight, and now, she found that Aiwa's arm which seemed very light to be very heavy. However, how could she speak out, it was Aiwa who took risks inside the canyon this time. Even if she was tired, she could only strain herself, and keep on persevering

However, when they still haven't reached the cave, one of the maids disorderly ran outside and yelled towards Aiwa and Wuya: [Master, no good, The Princess she]

That maid's complexion was deathly white due to exhausting her breath.

[What happened to the Princess?]

Aiwa grabbed that maid's collar and asked.

[The Princess she]

Because of gasping for breaths, and also perhaps because she didn't know how to describe the situation, every time she could only speak those 3 words.

[Let's go and take a look!]

Wuya handed over the two wolves' furs to the maid and those two quickly ran towards the cave.

All the maids were surrounding Beira, continuously calling out her name, but Beira's eyes were closely shut, not giving any reaction.

Wuya quickly ran forward and anxiously asked the maid: [What happened to the Princess?]

[A woman suddenly appeared at the cave entrance, she lightly patted over the Princess's head and she became like that!]

That woman recounted the whole affair to Wuya while sobbing.

[A woman?]

Aiwa immediately remembered the good-looking woman who flew towards the canyon's abyss. He squatted down and used his hand to examine her breath; Beira's breath seemed very weak, her bosom slightly moved up and down, it was proof that she was still alive, and examining her condition of her veins, they didn't feel vigorous like a regular person.

[How is it?]

Wuya anxiously looked towards Aiwa, she could only have hope in Aiwa, he was so ferocious, omnipotent, so he ought to have a method to cure Princess Beira.

[I don't understand the art of healing.]

Aiwa dispiritedly shook his head.

[Don't tell me we'll have to take Beira back like this?]

Wuya thought she would be unable to explain this to the Generalissimo, although she wasn't in charge of Princess Beira's safety, but this matter had happened because of her, if it caused a setback in her, her heart wouldn't stay peaceful, and then, would it matter if she obtained Aiwa?

[The solving method need the related person, I'll go to find that troublesome woman! If she doesn't cure Beira, see if I don't burn her to ashes!]

The recent battle with the God Wolves had increased Aiwa's confidence, he

thought he would definitely die but he still made a new turn, making the God Wolves retreat. Therefore, he could only go and fight that flying woman right now.

[That woman is so fierce, you... .. nothing will happen to you right?]

Wuya was worried about Aiwa's safety, if he encountered an unexpected accident, then how could she keep on living?

[Isn't she a woman? If it's a woman, then I have the means to handle her.]

Aiwa proudly pinched Wuya's breast. If he used his huge meat spear inside her daoist immortal cave right now, then it would really be difficult to invoke her desire, because the recent matters had made her heart very anxious. If she had known it was going to be this way, she wouldn't have competed with Beira.

Wuya naturally knew the ferociousness of that long thing at Aiwa's crotch, having sex two times had already pounded her and made her suffer terribly, and that meat spear still hadn't gone inside her completely, if it did, it would be a wonder if it didn't overturn her intestines. Wuya prayed in silence, if only that woman capable of flying also had the 7 emotions and 6 desires like her, then she could be fucked by Aiwa into confusion and be forced to cure Beira.

Thinking back, Wuya wasn't very certain regarding Aiwa, after all, that woman could fly; her strength seemed deep and unfathomable.

[I'll also come with you!]

If something happened to Aiwa, Wuya would also not feel like living anymore.

[What can you do by following me?]

Aiwa himself didn't have a surety about subduing that woman, so he didn't have any confidence regarding Wuya.

[If we have one more person we will become stronger! After you subdue her, I'll strip down her clothes.]

[What's the use in stripping her clothes, in such an uninhabited region, would it matter if she's naked?]

Aiwa sent a disdainful glance towards Wuya.

[But Beira had an accident because of me, I can't watch with folded arms.]

Wuya's words were determined.

[All right! We'll leave right now.]

Aiwa had Beira's bow on his back, a maid handed him a long sword from the side, and Wuya also took her long sword. Those two went to search the valley.

Those two walked for about 10 li but they still couldn't find anything on the nearby cliffs.

[Repulsive witch! If you have the guts, then come out. I'm going to fuck you to death!]

Aiwa bellowed towards the canyon's abyss, wishing to lure the woman out.

[Haha Haha]

A licentious laughter resounded inside the valley, however, Aiwa and Wuya couldn't even see that woman's shadow.

[Where are you? Older Sister Fairy, quickly come out! I want to see you!]

After hearing that woman's laughter, Aiwa unconsciously restrained himself, not scolding her and rather tried to win her favour.

[Didn't you scold me by calling me a stinky woman just now? Why are you shouting for Older Sister Fairy to appear now?]

A sleeved robed woman arrived on top of the cliff while fluttering in the sky, dropping on a huge stone 1 zhang away from Aiwa and Wuya. That woman wore a veil, however looking through the veil was sufficient to make a man's nose spray blood. Her figure was tempting like a fairy, her clothes seemed to be made of muslin, her figure could be faintly seen through it.

When that woman floated down in front of them, Aiwa and Wuya couldn't help but tighten the grip on their long swords, retreating their bodies back a step. And that woman was unarmed and defenceless, only having long fingernails.

[Want to fuck me to death? Then you must be really ferocious? Why don't you let me see how you fuck me to death?]

The woman's voice was sweeter than that previous laughter within the air, it was like the sound of a brook flowing down within a mountain.

[I want to ask you, did you harm my younger sister?]

Aiwa directly went to the subject. Although this woman appeared like a fairy, her heart was surely like a snake. He didn't hope for much, if she gave Beira's cure, then he also wouldn't request anything else.

[Aren't you falsely accusing a person?! I haven't harmed her!]

That woman coquettishly moved her body, throwing charming glances towards Aiwa from time to time, not paying attention to Wuya at his side. It seemed that, after not having seen a man inside this valley for a long time, and seeing such a huge man like Aiwa, she couldn't control herself.

[Except you, who else is there inside this valley? A man should be courageous enough to accept the responsibilities of the action he dared to do, why do you refuse to admit it?]

Aiwa said courageously. After finding that this woman didn't have any intention of attacking him, he felt more courageous and criticized her.

[Who is a man? I am clearly a woman; don't tell me you can't see it? Is something wrong with your eyesight?]

That woman deliberately stuck her chest out, it seemed as if her pointed nipples were going to split open the muslin clothes and pop out, seeing it made Aiwa gulp down to settle his mood.

[I was only making an analogy, and didn't say you are not a woman!]

Aiwa explained to her.

[Making an analogy won't do, you see your younger sister is holding a weapon in her hand, it can scare a person, why don't you regard her as a man?]

That woman's finger pointed towards the long sword in Aiwa's hand.

[Stop speaking nonsense, I want you give me the cure for my wife, or else don't blame me for being impolite!]

Seeing that woman's charming appearance, Aiwa's became bolder.

[One moment she's your younger sister, now she's your wife, finally what is she to you? I'm completely confused!]

That woman made a unhappy expression.

Because of being hidden by the veil, Aiwa couldn't guess that woman's age, but listening to her sweet and clear voice, she seemed to be a 18-9 year old girl. However looking at her flirtatious appearance, she didn't seem like a pure and shy 18-9 year old girl and rather looked like a slut. Only, inside this uninhabited ravine, there wasn't any region for her to go and enact her lewd behaviour.

[She's my wife.]

Aiwa didn't want to waste his words with her, this woman clearly wanted to waste his time.

[Then who's this girl?]

That woman's finger pointed towards Wuya as she asked. She unexpectedly advanced forward, and caressed Wuya's face with her finger. Looking at her stretching her hand, Wuya thought of dodging her, but that woman's movement was quick like lightning, making Wuya unable to evade her.

Wuya's heart couldn't help but sink. When she fought those experts of the neighbouring countries, there had never been a person capable of approaching her speed, but this woman was much faster than her! If this woman wanted to take her life, then she feared that she wouldn't even have the time to blink.

[I am also his woman! Only, if you promise to cure Beira, then I can gift him to you.]

Wuya stammered. Right now, she could only do this. She didn't have the ability to haggle with this ferocious, deep and immeasurable woman.

[So to speak, it seems you are quite fond of your man? But I still don't know whether your man has jumbo goods or not?]

Saying this, her satiny finger softly pinched Wuya's chin. If it was an equal opponent, the long sword in Wuya's hand would have already set out, killing the opponent, but, Wuya already knew she wasn't this woman's opponent, thus the most wise decision would be to bide her time.

[I guarantee that he can satisfy you]

Wuya's chin was already raised by that woman's finger; she didn't plan on resisting even a bit.

That woman laughed satisfyingly, [You're an intelligent girl! I'll think over your proposal. Only, I'm telling you, I haven't harmed your person, I only took one of her spirit drop that's all.]

That woman regained her hand from Wuya's chin; at the same time she extended her tongue to lick the finger which pinched Wuya's face.

[Took her spirit drop?]

Aiwa couldn't understand. He never about a person having any spirit drops in their body. The woman regained her gaze, sizing up her slender finger, not paying attention to these two individuals holding a weapon in front of her. She understood that they won't kill her, they still hoped for her to save Beira! However, she was confident that even if they set about, they wouldn't be able to hurt even a strand of her hair.

[Were those God Wolves killed by you just now?]

That charming woman slowly lifted her seductive eyes, sizing up Aiwa up and down.

[You're not going to say that those God Wolves are your house pet's right?]

Aiwa looked towards that woman's charming gaze; her pitch black pupils were similar to a deep lake.

[I didn't raise them. They eat several tens of cattle and sheep every few days, how could I have so much food? Only, we have co-existed together in this ravine for 10 years, unfortunately they had a disastrous casualty at your hands. Ai, everything is the Will of Heaven! If it weren't for you killing that many wolves, there would have been a problem in their livelihood sooner or later.]

[I hadn't killed that many, haven't they withdrawn?]

Aiwa didn't expect all the blame would be pushed onto him.

[Your thunder palm was very ferocious, not only were some jolted to death, 10 of them were burnt to death, you don't know how many collapsed after walking

around 10 li. Their lungs were shocked and broken by you; it's already amazing that they were able to walk that far.]

Chapter 7: The Toad's Holy Water

Volume 3 Chapter 7

The Toad's Holy Water

TLN: It seems I made a mistake lol.. No nsfw parts in this chapter.. Next chapter is the finale of V3 and has the nsfw part It will be released in a few hours. Although Aiwa eats some suffering in this chapter.. the revenge in the next one is simply hehe ...

[What is this spirit drop? You still haven't answered me.]

Aiwa asked again.

[This naturally doesn't exist in every girl's body. I have cultivated inside this ravine for 10 years and I have never seen a girl possessing spirit drops. Therefore, I held this girl as if she was bestowed by Heavens, this is an innate skill specific to her, if it's used for cultivation, then it let me quickly increase my power several folds. Tell me, meeting this kind of good luck, would I miss it?]

That woman glanced towards Aiwa and said. She single-mindedly appreciated her beautiful fingernails, seeming not even a little bit anxious that Aiwa may attack her.

[You're really selfish! In order to increase your power, you sacrifice others, do you have any conscience?]

Aiwa was raged.

[Conscience? What is conscience on this land? You tell me, conscience is worth how much money?]

That woman not only didn't get angry, she still rubbed her body, directly pushing her towering erect jade peaks on Aiwa's chest. That tepid and soft touch immediately warmed Aiwa as he smelled the attractive body fragrance emitting

from this woman's body.

Aiwa felt his desire rise in him, he immediately thought, can it be that this woman wants to steal the spirit drop from my body by using this body fragrance to seduce me?

[You can take my spirit drop, why are you harming a girl?]

[You? Aren't you overestimating yourself? Although you have dou qi and fire control, compared to that small girl, you're completely worthless, your body doesn't have any spirit drops. How can a stinky man's body have this thing? Even if it's there, I won't be able to absorb it inside my body. Hehe, you contrarily seem like an affectionate and true man, ready to sacrifice yourself to save her, only even if you have it, I won't want it, I can only help you if satisfy my condition.]

Saying this, that woman raised her head, sending lovely and charming glances towards Aiwa, the slight swaying of her lovely and soft body made Aiwa's entire body warm up.

[What condition? Say it. If it's something I can do then I agree.]

Aiwa said decisively. This was the only choice left.

[What condition? I want your head; can you give it to me?]

That woman directly pressed her body against Aiwa's, that boneless softness was very alluring.

[What will you do by taking my head? My head won't be able to make you happy.]

Aiwa made a great effort to balance his body. Although that woman was sticking her body to him like this, he didn't dare to set out his hand to feel her up, as if she was a blood sucking devil.

[Tell me, in which place can you make me happy?]

That woman slowly raised her face, slightly opening her red lips, she hungrily gazed towards Aiwa.

Aiwa embarrassingly glanced towards Wuya.

[Aren't you a woman? He is a man, at which place would he be able to make you happy? Won't you understand once you strip his clothes?]

Wuya directly plunged into the subject; she was already depressed and now, after looking at this shameless woman stick her body to Aiwa, still putting out a flirtatious appearance made Wuya loathe her. She thought to herself: [Aiwa must use his huge partner to fuck her into confusion, let's see if she's still able to flirt like this then!]

[I know he is a man. I am a woman, when did I say he's not a man?]

That woman couldn't understand Wuya; rather, she kept on sending charming glances towards Aiwa. She lifted her jade arm, gently caressing Aiwa's face using her bamboo shoot like finger. Her speaking tone and style were very languid as if she was almost asleep.

[My mind is pretty good, however, my lower body is also pretty good. I like using my lower body to communicate with women, that kind makes it a bit convenient.]

Although Aiwa didn't dare to exchange blows with this woman, he knew this woman was very ferocious. However, after seeing her flirtatious manner, he felt that if he could raise some love in her, it would definitely lead to a tasty path. Therefore, he couldn't help but think of provoking this woman burning with desire. If he wasn't worried about her ferociousness, then he would have already set out against her. [Am I no good? Why aren't you embracing me]

[I want to but let's find some other place! Doing it here doesn't seem very proper?]

Aiwa didn't dare to be sure that this woman wanted to have sex with her, but he had no choice but to go along with her.

That woman's body suddenly straightened, immediately getting away from Aiwa's chest. Maybe it was because she felt that erect penis at Aiwa crotch pressing against her underbelly.

[If you want to save your woman, then follow me!]

That woman tiptoed on the ground and jumped; her body softly fell on top of the cliff. When her body escaped from him, Aiwa found that there was a small

cave behind her which could let a person enter inside it.

That woman stood on top of the cliff and laughed towards Aiwa, as if she was waiting for Aiwa to perform a show. Aiwa raised his head to look, that cave was located at the 1/3rd position of the cliff. Its distance was too far to be able to jump across the ravine, and if he jumped down from the cliff, he would die a horrible death by relying on his tiny skill. [Good Older sister, your ability is so large; you might as well take us along with you! We two are from a general generation, how can we have such huge magical power like you?]

Aiwa fawned towards that woman standing on the cliff. If she was an ugly woman then it was nothing, but unfortunately, her looks were very charming, one look made Aiwa's heart itch. On one hand, he is saving Beira, and he can take some small advantages on this woman's body. What could he have against it?

[If you don't come up, don't think you can save your woman! However, that girl won't die; she merely won't be able to practice martial arts that's all, what's wrong with that? A girl getting spoiled by a man is also pretty good.]

That woman said.

[Good Older Sister, You don't know, she is Tanzya's Princess! Without martial arts, who will listen to her orders? Wouldn't this drop her authority?]

Aiwa couldn't find any other reason to persuade this witch.

[Why should her matters concern me? If you're thinking of coming up, then come quickly, or else I'm going to sleep!] Saying this, that woman turned and entered the cave.

Aiwa and Wuya looked at each other in dismay at the valley floor.

[If not, why don't you slowly climb up?! I'll stay underneath to protect you.]

Wuya's face was vehement.

[I'm so heavy; you'll be able to protect me? If it happens, it would be wonder if you're not smashed into mincemeat! You return first and attend to Beira! If I die, there's no need to receive my corpse, it would be very ugly, just let my handsome image forever be left in your heart!]

Aiwa made a brave and unafraid of dying expression.

[Aiwa, then let's not go up! Didn't that woman say? There won't be any danger to Beira's life, she at most won't be able to practice martial arts, that kind there would be no need to fight and kill others, and wouldn't it be peaceful?]

Wuya pulled Aiwa's clothes, wanting to prevent him from climbing the rocks. It seemed to her that this matter was really difficult, if Aiwa dies, not only would Beira not be saved, she also wouldn't have the desire to live anymore.

[What are you saying? You want to substitute her in the future? Kayseri has already conferred you the title of Princess, be content with that!]

Aiwa glared towards Wuya, again gazing towards that lofty cliff.

At this time, he discovered a 10,000 year old rattan hanging a place 2 zhang in front of him.

Aiwa was surprised.

[What are you looking at?]

Aiwa pointed towards that rattan and asked Wuya.

[Just now it seems as if this rattan wasn't here? What's going on?]

Wuya also couldn't understand. Just now she made sure that there wasn't anything that could help in climbing the cliff, how could she have missed this rattan?

[Perhaps we didn't notice it just now! Maybe the Heavens have opened its eyes, letting me go up and put that woman in her place!]

Waiting till this time, Aiwa still had the mood to play jokes with Wuya.

However, Wuya thought it was very strange, it seemed as if that rattan had sprouted out of nowhere. She doubtfully looked towards that rattan.

[It doesn't matter if it makes it possible to enter that woman's cave.]

[You think it would be good to advance inside that woman's cave?]

Wuya also made a pun and laughed, [We'll go up together.]

TLN: If someone didn't get it the pun here is that Aiwa meant to enter the cave

inside which the woman went and Wuya meant for him to enter her cave(pussy).

[You want to fall to your death? This single rattan can only support a single person's weight.]

[You go up first, then I'll come up or else I won't feel relieved.]

Aiwa also didn't argue anymore, thinking to himself: [You also won't be able to reach this 2 zhang height.]

He tried to find a highland, lifting his feet with qi, his body suddenly dashed and jumped towards that rattan, accurately grabbing that rattan's tip.

Getting hold of the rattan, Aiwa wasn't anxious anymore, relying on his strong hands, he climbed up as if he was flying.

At the time Aiwa had almost reached the cave entrance, that woman suddenly appeared, she held a long sword in her hand and stood there with a smile.

Aiwa had no choice but to stop.

[You cannot say I haven't kept my word, I came up with great difficulty, you]

Soon that woman's sword slowly fell on the rattan, if her sword chopped off the rattan, Aiwa was sure to die. Right now, the valley wind was blowing against her skirt, letting him look at the spring scenery inside it. However, how could Aiwa have the time to appreciate it right now?

[Coming up or not is your matter, chopping this rattan or not is my matter.]

That woman was hardly worried about Aiwa gazing inside her skirt; she squatted down and pinched Aiwa's face. Aiwa firmly grabbed that rattan, a little scared in his heart.

[Good Older Sister, be a bit reasonable]

Aiwa made a helpless expression, who asked him to meet this person whose skill was greater than his? Right now, it was the time for the hero to show off his glib-tongue. He hardly dared to look down; that height was almost around 10 zhang if he fell down then it would be a horrible death.

[You really want to sleep with me?]

That woman's satiny finger pinched Aiwa's face, this made Aiwa feel humiliated, but what could he do? Today he could only let this stinky lady take advantage of him!

[Hehe, I I was joking!]

Aiwa feared that this woman would chop off the rattan in anger, that's why he took back the words he had spoken before.

[So actually, you were making fun of me?]

Saying this, that woman moved the sword, lightly touching the rattan with it; that rattan broke in a flash! Aiwa's body followed that rattan and fell

[Good Older Sister, save me! I really want to sleep with you]

When he was falling, Aiwa didn't feel like having any regrets and spoke out his heartfelt intentions. He yelled, thinking that it was over; he would surely become a meat patty!

When he was falling in midair, he suddenly felt a delicate hand grab his arm, afterwards his body also floated up.

He discovered that he was saved by that woman!

Since Aiwa was heavy, that woman slowly flew up towards the cave but this made Aiwa enjoy the feeling of getting held by that small satiny hand.

Just now, looking at Aiwa's body falling down rapidly, Wuya was scared and became unable to speak, and now, after seeing Aiwa being grabbed by that woman, her heart calmed down, she continuously comforted her bosom, from where it seemed that her heart was almost going to jump out.

When Aiwa was dropped at the cave entrance by that woman, he was already confused and disoriented, and directly embraced the woman.

[It's all right!]

That woman quite disdainfully shook off Aiwa who was hugging her hand, and walked inside the cave. At this time, Aiwa opened his eyes to see the circumstances inside the cave.

It wasn't that spacious inside the cave, but it could also be considered to be a

place of charm and beauty. It was very clean; each nook was covered with aromatic herbs, spreading a sweet scent inside the entire cave. Aiwa thought to himself: [80% of this woman's body fragrance must have been dyed by these aromatic herbs.]

It was not known that [Bed] was made up from which plant's branches, but it appeared pretty good. That woman went inside the cave and lied down on her bed. She enjoyed lying on her back, that originally erect chest seemed more lofty now, separating her thin muslin, Aiwa could even clearly see her areola.

Aiwa exerted all of his strength to gulp down the saliva.

[I can I drink some water?]

Aiwa was very thirsty, getting tossed around by this woman, his spirit was already weary.

[Water is over there, go and drink yourself.]

That woman lazily lied there as she pointed towards a stone cauldron not far from her and said. Aiwa hurriedly went near that stone cauldron, there was a worn out ladle made of plants and fruits beside it. Aiwa thought that it was surely used by her to drink water, it was really simple and crude, how could it compare to the gold and silverware in the Generalissimo's home? However he was very thirsty, and unable to consider all this.

He picked the ladle up and filled the ladle full with the water from the stone cauldron; it still wasn't enough to for him drink satisfactorily! That water was abnormally clear and cold, reaching the belly, it made his entire body feel pleasant.

[Aah!]

Aiwa comfortably exhaled a breath; it felt to him that it was like sweet rain drops falling from the heaven!

When Aiwa was about to fill the ladle for the second time, he discovered a huge toad inside the stone cauldron! That toad's body was swollen at several small regions, Aiwa was most afraid of this thing in his childhood.

Aiwa was frightened and immediately leaped out. If it weren't for that woman

stopping him with her hand, he would have directly rushed out of the cliff.

Aiwa leaned in her embrace not daring to budge.

[You really have no future prospects, isn't it just a toad? Unexpectedly frightening you like this?]

That woman disdainfully pushed Aiwa away, but Aiwa tightly embraced her not daring to move. He had seen many frightening toads, but he had never seen such a huge toad, especially those swollen lumps on its body, thinking of them made Aiwa feel like vomiting. He unexpectedly drank one ladle full water in which toad had dipped!

One kind of vomiting feel immediately bubbled up from Aiwa's belly. In order to not make this daoist immortal cave dirty, Aiwa had no choice but to lean outside the cave and vomit.

[Aiwa, what happened to you? Did you get poisoned by that woman?]

Wuya was waiting underneath, and Aiwa also didn't reply to her after coming out. Aiwa waved his hand to her as he was unable to reply due to vomiting.

[Bad woman!]

Seeing Aiwa's painfully vomiting, she thought to herself: [He was alright when he went up, how could he start vomiting after such a short time, that bad woman surely harmed him.]

Since it was the road to disaster, she directly scolded facing the cave.

[You mustn't waste my treasure, that holy water was something I specially extracted from that Divine Toad I'm raising, even I hate to part with it and drink it! I decided to let you drink it after seeing your poor health, but you vomited it out, really unable to tell good from bad!]

That woman lied on the bed as she said while sighing.

[What bullshit holy water, looks completely nauseating!]

Aiwa scolded while vomiting; however he only scolded that nauseating water and didn't dare to directly scold that woman.

[What use would I have in deceiving you? If I wanted to harm you, you think

you could have lived until now?]

That woman sent a disdainful glance towards Aiwa, [I say you are afraid after getting duped by a woman?]

That woman was no doubt indicating towards Wuya down the cliff.

Aiwa was at a loss for words. If it wasn't for getting duped by Wuya, would he have reached this demonic Khalila Canyon from that small wine shop?

[It's all because of you, duping me to come to this ghost region!]

Aiwa vomited again, roaring towards Wuya standing down the cliff.

[What happened? Who duped you? Aren't you getting confused by the poison administered by that woman, how can you not recognize your family? I am Wuya!]

Wuya had kind intentions but suffering Aiwa's criticism, she naturally felt wronged; she forgot that she had knocked out Aiwa and seized Aiwa till Tanzya; moreover Aiwa had to come to this place called Death Valley of Khalila for her and Beira.

After seeing no change in Aiwa after the explanation, Wuya sighed continuously: [Finished, really finished, mind is all unclear!]

[Your mind is unclear! Stinky woman.]

After Aiwa rained curses, he unexpectedly felt his strength gradually rise up. After using the dou qi fire to beat the God Wolves, he had used a huge amount of his energy, affecting his vitality, if not, when he was healing that maid, with her fair skin, he would have already overwhelmed her and held her. Originally his physical strength was unable to hold up, again he crawled up this 10 zhang cliff, how could he have any strength left? Moreover, he was thrown down while climbing, frightening him to death, almost making his soul fly out.

Remembering that woman's words, Aiwa operated his dou qi again, it was unexpectedly rather smooth and unhindered, furthermore it was more vigorous than before.

If he had known that the water in which the toad had immersed itself would be so much effective, he wouldn't have vomited even if he had died from the nausea!

[Hehe, Daoist Immortal Older Sister, I vomited all the water I drank just now, I'm thirsty now, can I drink it again?]

Aiwa turned his head back and fawned over that woman lying there, making a fake smile on his face.

[If you don't want to live anymore, then you can drink it again!]

That woman glanced towards Aiwa and said.

[Hehe, didn't older sister just say that water has a wonderful effect? Now, why are you saying that I won't live? Let alone I vomited everything I drank just now; there would be no harm in drinking again right?]

Aiwa wiped his mouth and approached that woman, still making a smile across his face, apparently wanting to hold that woman's tender arm. Merely he was afraid of getting thrown outside the cave by that woman, it would certainly be miserable.

Aiwa thought of bracing himself from the nausea and drinking it, in order to quickly increase his strength again. He didn't hope to defeat this woman, but he wanted to at least be able to use his big stick to serve this woman well, if not she wouldn't go and save Beira.

[You understand fart! That toad was raised by me; so I naturally know its habits. After each time the ladle is taken out of the water, not matter how many times, it has always released poison after that, after that the water cannot be drunk for one whole day; you can if you don't want to live.]

In order to make Aiwa stop making a fuss, she explained the mystery.

[Oh, originally is this way? I still believed older sister didn't want me to drink! Isn't it very good to drink that holy water?]

Aiwa couldn't help but ask. He thought: [If it's possible, I can come here and steal a drink when this woman is not present here, can't say for sure one day I'll also be able to fly in the sky.]

[It's a really good thing, drinking too much can even kill a person.]

That woman said carelessly.

[Just now, I was thinking of drinking once again, why didn't you prevent me?

Did you really want to see me die?]

Aiwa suddenly widened his eyes and roared. He really gets angry about any affair related to his life.

[Since you vomited it out, what's the use for me to advise against it? Even if I advised you, you would have surely believed that I'm deceiving you. I know you are a person who's afraid of getting duped by a person.]

Just now, the dialogue between Wuya and Aiwa had already confirmed this bit.

[Actually it wouldn't be right to say that she deceived me. As you can see, my looks are very handsome, this girl was once captured by me and confused by my sex appeal, hehe, she couldn't sleep properly at night and use a method to knock me out, hehe. If not, how would I, a grand Regional Senior Officer of Hass Empire come to this place right?]

Aiwa couldn't help but boast his popularity, wishing to be able to put on a good price tag in front of this woman, if not, there wouldn't be any capital to haggle with her later.

[I really can't see what sex appeal you have.]

That woman sized up Aiwa up and down, as if she had acknowledged him just now.

[Hehe, the valuable thing on my body can't be made out by looking like this.]

Aiwa pretended to be shy and said, but his eyes continuously looked towards the lovely breast peaks on her bosom, wishing he could immediately lean in and eat them.

[The how will you be able to show your value?]

That woman made a lovely laugh.

[Hehe, I won't hide it from you, I can only show divine might on top of the bed]

Aiwa perversely looked towards that woman lying there, with saliva dripping out of his mouth.

[I see your age is still small, but your speaking tone is not at all small.]

That woman stretched her body, glancing towards that sword beside the bed.

[Although my age is not big, but I'm big in some places! For example]

Aiwa gazed towards his crotch and suggested.

That woman glanced towards Aiwa's crotch and carelessly said: [Bring my sword to me.]

Aiwa brought that sword till that woman's hand and handed it over. He didn't dare to point that sword towards the counterpart, and pointed the tip towards himself. That thing was very sharp; it could injure a person if they were not careful.

That woman took the sword from Aiwa's hand, looking that although his age was still light, but still having the manners while handing over the sword; she made a lovely laugh towards him, as if she was praising him. She immediately held the sword hilt in one hand, while the other tested the sword's blade edge.

When her fine finger lightly tapped that sword's blade; it issued a beautiful metal sound. Although Aiwa didn't do any research about sword weapons, but he knew, only a first rate sword could be like this. Therefore, Aiwa concluded that there was definitely some history behind the sword held in this woman's hand. Just before, she had just slightly touched the rattan with this sword and it easily broke.

[Older sister must surely be holding a precious sword!]

Aiwa grabbed every opportunity to flatter.

[You want to try?]

That woman raised her head towards Aiwa and asked. [Hehe, let it be! I am not interested towards these weapons.]

[I want to see you understand, test whether or not this is a precious sword?]

Saying this, that woman pointed that sword's tip towards Aiwa's navel region.

[Don't ... don't ... Daoist Immortal Older Sister; my body's made of flesh! How can it receive your sword? Just now I saw, that rattan was unable to bear older sister's light touch]

Aiwa still hadn't finished speaking, that sword tip had already slowly neared his navel region, sticking close to his clothes and moved down. What made Aiwa nervous was that sword unexpectedly stopped on top of his family jewels. She used that sword tip to lightly arouse Aiwa's cock, enjoying and looking towards it.

Aiwa was going to almost urinate due to the fear, after all if that sword went down, then that thing would definitely be removed. What use be living anymore without that thing,?

[Good Older Sister, you mustn't jest like this you take the precious sword back! My body]

Aiwa's complexion changed due to the fear. He didn't dare to be certain whether this woman would really chop off his darling, but that sharp sword was enough to frighten a person. From childhood till now, he had never experienced this kind of situation.

[Didn't you say you'll show your divine might on top of the bed? Make you penis stand up and let me see, whether or not you can satisfy me?]

That woman used that sword to tease Aiwa's meat spear, not matter how Aiwa tried it couldn't get hard, it was already soft due to the fear.

However Aiwa quickly ran his mind, he was immediately enlightened with an idea and said: [In all likelihood, older sister is an experienced person, a man's penis is fond of warmth and not fond of coldness; your sword is ice cold, that's why it can't stand up!]

He thought: [Inside this cave, how could there be any another warm thing besides a woman's warm body? She can only get naked and let me lie on her.]

[Oh! Likes warmth? I almost forgot, this sword can also warm up!]

Saying this, that woman suddenly exhaled a breath; Aiwa immediately saw flames surge up along the sword's hilt, that sword instantly changed into a fire sword, Aiwa retreated one step back from the fear.

[Good Older Sister, you are going to cause my death.]

Huge changes appeared on Aiwa's face.

[Hahaha didn't you say that a man's penis likes warmness? Don't tell me my sword isn't warm enough?]

That woman laughed.

[Hehe, Good Older Sister, you still haven't tasted my this divine tool's goodness, if it's hurt then the gains wouldn't make up for the losses.]

Along with that woman's laughter, that fire on that sword blade also disappeared.

[You come over.]

The witch laughed.

Aiwa had no alternative and walked over. That sword jabbed towards Aiwa's crotch region again, that woman's jade wrist shook lightly, and that sword tip passed by with a lightning speed

Chapter 8: Conquering The Witch

Volume 3 Chapter 8

Conquering The Witch

TLN: Vol 3 is done at last.. Like usual I'll be taking a 2-day break before starting the next volume... Volume 4 synopsis will be up tonight.. And the poll for the next ero series similar to Lovely Belle would also start today and the poll would last for 2 days so people from different time zones can vote. It will be released today evening or night along with the first chapters of each series so look forward to it..

When that woman lifted the sword, Aiwa had already closed his eyes from the fear, thinking: [Finished! My penis is surely done for!]

Although there wasn't any feeling, thinking that from now on he won't be a man anymore, Aiwa couldn't help but shriek loudly. That woman's sword slowly moved away from the tip of Aiwa's nose, afterwards she threw that sword towards the wall. Listening to the screeching sound, Aiwa opened his eyes to look at that sword neatly go inside its sheath hanging on the wall!

At this time, Aiwa subconsciously moved his hand towards his lower body, he didn't know whether that hanging male weapon was still at its original position.

Feeling that thing still hanging there, he simply went mad from the elation.

[It's still there!]

Aiwa's happiness could be felt in his words. However, when he bowed down his head to look, he saw that his clothes were sliced at the crotch region which made that meat spear stick out.

Aiwa quickly used his hands to cover the hanging weapon which had come out.

[Didn't you want to fuck me?]

That woman was still lying there, not even showing a little bit of shyness, as if what happened just now was an ordinary affair; similar to eating food and drinking matter. She slowly closed her eyes, waiting for Aiwa to come on top of the bed.

[I can begin here?]

Aiwa didn't dare to be sure of his ears. Not only did she not cut off his penis, she still wanted him to fuck her? Inside this cave!

[Then where do you think we'll go?]

That woman impatiently opened her eyes and asked.

[All right, we'll do it here! We'll do it here!]

He quickly agreed, afraid that this woman would transform again.

Right now, perhaps because of drinking that toad water, Aiwa felt quite energetic. He couldn't get erect before because of getting scared by this woman, but he believed he was strong as ever.

Aiwa cautiously walked in front of the bed, not daring to get on top of it as he really wasn't sure whether or not this woman would suddenly turn hostile again. However after looking at this woman lying there with her eyes half narrowed, his male thing gradually started reacting. Though this woman was very enigmatic, she was absolutely a first class beautiful woman. Her lovely sticking out breast peaks, exquisite curves, dainty cheeks, were none which could be made a fuss about, again her slender beautiful legs overwhelmed him.

[What should I call you?]

Aiwa stooped his body, still not daring to caress her breast peaks.

[Call me whatever you want. Don't you think I am a witch? Then call me a witch.]

That woman opened her eyes slightly to look towards Aiwa and closed them again.

[How can you be called a witch? Only heinous humans can be called a witch, you are not bad; you should be called a fairy.]

Aiwa continued to flatter her, afraid of stirring up this woman's anger.

[Still, calling me a witch suits me. I am not a fairy, call me a witch!]

That woman said with her eyes still closed.

[Hehe, even if I called you a witch, that was also to be intimate, I didn't have any malice. Shall I call you Witch Older Sister then?]

Aiwa probed out.

[You can.]

[Witch Older Sister, then can I be a bit rude?]

Aiwa didn't dare to set his hand out to caress that alluring body.

[Are you still a man?]

The Witch opened her eyes to glance towards Aiwa's crotch, however, it was already swollen and red hard, as if a snake had crawled out from the crotch region, [Why haven't you stripped your clothes, you want to sleep with your clothes on the bed?]

The witch coquettishly protested.

[I'll strip, I'll strip.]

Aiwa quickly stooped down, removing the clothes that witch had cut open which revealed his body's well-built muscles. That woman admired as she sized him up. Aiwa could make out that she was quite fond of him from her expression, so he had some confidence in himself.

Aiwa thought: [If I don't satisfy you today, you won't promise me to cure Beira, therefore I must use all I've got to satisfy you, moreover, make you promise me at the time you're suffering the most.]

So, before going on the bed, Aiwa silently read the incantations, carrying out the Yin Technique. To handle such a valiant woman, using any other method wouldn't work.

After reading a few times, a pink fog pervaded inside the entire cave, this dense fog had an aphrodisiac effect. Although the witch was highly skilled in martial arts, she also couldn't see this dense fog. Not waiting for Aiwa to come

up, that Witch unconsciously started groping her breasts.

[Oh come quickly aah]

The Witch groped her breasts with closed eyes while moving her body slightly.

[All right, I'm coming!]

Aiwa courageously went on top of the bed, however, he wasn't in a hurry to undo her clothes, and rather lied beside her and used his hand to massage her girlish breasts.

[Is this comfortable?]

Aiwa massaged her breasts and provoked her. He liked hearing a woman speak out her feelings.

[Oh very comfortable, like this]

That woman crossed her legs as her breast got massaged by Aiwa's big hand.

Aiwa's hand was soft and hard at times, sometime grabbing, sometimes massaging, making those breasts flat and round and flat again. In order to provoke her libido, Aiwa released his two lewd serpents. Those two lewd serpents were already different from before, their growth followed with their master's growth, and their ability to bewitch a woman also becomes greater. Aiwa's two snakes entered inside that witch's skirt, reaching directly the destination. The witch didn't know they were snakes, she only felt as if there was a meat spear softly studying her vulva. Actually when that snake licked her labia, her body which has been lonely for many years and resembled a pile of firewood, suddenly ignited into huge flames.

[Oh wu]

The Witch was not all anxious that Aiwa still hadn't pierced her pussy; she also wanted this pleasure to last a bit longer, even if Aiwa barely caressed her body, she felt very satisfied.

After Aiwa played with her breasts for some time, he used his mouth to suck the nipple through the muslin clothes. He occasionally bit her erect nipple, also sucking more than half of her breast inside his mouth from time to time; this made the Witch's body feverish.

The Witch's hand also couldn't help but caress Aiwa's body as her slender finger aimlessly caressed him, not knowing where to place her finger.

[Wu oh]

She moaned as she writhed her body, wishing she could make her whole breast go inside Aiwa's mouth. Her muslin garments were already moist with Aiwa's saliva, her captivating red and erect nipple could clearly been seen through her muslin clothes.

The two lewd snakes released by Aiwa were the manifestation of his thoughts, and weren't real bodies, therefore, although they were visible they were nevertheless incorporeal; moreover they cannot survive after separating from their master's thoughts. They moved according to their master's thoughts, wherever the master thoughts said to move, they quickly made their way over there. However, this operating range was very small, they cannot leave a radius of 2 zhang from their master, but inside this region, not matter which position on a woman's body the master wanted to touch, those lewd serpents made their way till there. In other words, lewd serpents were the feelers made from the master's thoughts. To be a bit blunt, those lewd serpents were equal to being the master's two extra hands.

Right now, those sensitive positions on the witch's body were being touched by Aiwa's lewd serpents. From the witch's perspective, it was as if Aiwa was using his hands to caress that her genitalia, digging it out. Moreover, those lewd serpents movement were comparable to Aiwa's hands, seeming more soft and erotic, expressing the master's sexual fantasy to the pinnacle.

Aiwa used his teeth to bite her erect nipple, sometimes softly and sometimes hardly. The biting caused the witch to show a painful expression on her face sometimes, but that pain would be soon submerged inside the pleasure brought over her entire body.

Aiwa used a lewd serpent to explore that witch's flesh hole; her flesh was exceptionally delicate, but also full of tension. Whenever that snake's head drilled inside her, she unconsciously clamped her vagina, thereby receiving the pleasure. At this time, those intense merry feelings followed and reached inside Aiwa's thoughts.

Right now, passion was already ignited inside the witch's body and soul, her hand couldn't help but move towards Aiwa's crotch and grip his already erect thick meat rod as her another hand moved towards her navel and pulled her skirt up.

[Oh I feel hot]

Her soft hair swayed along with her head's movement, some of them were on top of her face, exhibiting a very lewd expression.

Her breasts lightly trembled along with her body's movement; her nipples were already moist due to getting sucked by Aiwa, protruding out of that soaked muslin garment, seeming very tempting.

Seeing that the witch's thoughts were already bewildered due to the passion, Aiwa also wasn't cautious anymore, he simply grabbed her collar and forcefully pulled, her muslin garment made a *chi* sound and split open till her navel. Two glorious white meat flowers plunged out of that crevice, trembling on her snow white silky bosom. The skirt at her lower body wrapped up against her, sticking to her flat and smooth underbelly. Her body continuously moved and the curves on her belly also moved along with her movements.

Seeing that the lewd serpents have already shown the results, Aiwa simply received them back and directly stretched his hand inside her skirt, feeling her calf and thigh on the way. Her leg was very smooth, similar to silk cloth. When that hand reached her genitalia, he clearly felt it was already muddy there, completely filled with liquids.

However, Aiwa didn't touch her vulva directly, rather only moved around on her thighs, this made the witch's desire burn even more. Right now, she was eagerly looking forward to Aiwa, her hand immediately brought that long thing in her hands near her tormented and craving flesh hole, to stop that burning feel inside her.

She made a great effort to pull Aiwa's thick thing towards her body. When a woman recklessly wanted a man to pierce her, it showed how intense her desire was! However, Aiwa who had got on top of several women was not even a least bit anxious; he turned his body around, and twisted that Witch's body. His two hands clasped her butts, separating her skirt, he started sucking her vulva.

Aiwa's thick thing also reached that witch's face, that hotness was similar to an iron stick, making the witch excited. When Aiwa started sucking her genitalia, that witch also sucked that hyperaemic meat spear inside her mouth.

Aiwa slowly took off the Witch's skirt till her thighs, looking at the small obscene clothes under them. Aiwa's hands pulled them and they were torn into two pieces, exposing a woman's most hidden place, scarlet and delicate, that flesh hole overflowing with sexual secretions opened and closed there. Aiwa used his hands to separate her two shy legs to either side, lush pubic hair was above her genitalia, zigzagging, scattered in a regular triangle shape.

Aiwa's mouth lightly pressed forward, when it was just about to touch her vulva, he felt that witch's body tremble from the wave of intoxication because his tongue was poking her clitoris. It was a woman's most sensitive region; a single touch there could make a woman excited.

[En En]

The witch sucked Aiwa's thick meat spear in and out as she moaned. Aiwa's sucking made her tender flesh feel very pleasurable. She continuously moved her waist, making her genitalia grind against Aiwa's mouth.

As Aiwa kept licking it gradually became more vigorous as it proceeded, suddenly increasing its pace, pressing the lips against her clitoris, using the tongue's tip to sweep over her labia, that witch's body immediately convulsed. She immediately released that meat spear from her mouth, holding it in her hands.

[Oh aah wu]

Along with her waves of yelling, sexual secretions surged out of her flesh hole, Aiwa knew that this woman's body was overflowing with energy, so he hurriedly ingested them inside his body, sucking at one side as he transformed it into his own energy.

[Aah pierce me don't don't lick]

The Witch was already tormented by Aiwa's mouth, wanting to stop but can't, not matter how she moved her crotch, the rubbing between her genitalia and Aiwa's mouth made her feel intense pleasure, this was an issue which simply

couldn't be solved.

However, Aiwa didn't listen to her, and rather brought that thick meat spear till her mouth, and pushed that meat spear deep inside her throat. Aiwa thought: [Since this woman is so ferocious, it would be impossible for her to be unable to bear it] so, he stabbed his meat rod until the depths.

The witch resisted, that scorching meat rod thrust inside her throat ten times. When Aiwa took it out of her mouth, he turned his head to discover that the Witch's face had already become perverted; it was surely the result of his thrusting. Aiwa's heart couldn't help but feel satisfied.

[Where do you want me to insert now?]

Aiwa questioned her although he already knew the answer. He saw saliva flow out of the witch's mouth due to sucking his cock just now.

[Oh quickly insert it below it's itching to death]

The Witch's hands massaged her breasts, it's a pity there wasn't any mother's milk inside them, if not it would have sprayed on top of Aiwa's face. Aiwa slapped that Witch's butt, she stuck her perfectly round butt out on her own initiative, separating her legs, bringing that scarlet cave mouth towards Aiwa, Aiwa also leisurely advanced forward, and softly jabbed a small section of that cock inside her.

[Wu deeper inside]

The witch's face was totally intoxicated, and at the same time also filled with a tint of embarrassment. Her clothes were already messy and unable to cover her body.

Although she was embarrassed, she had no choice but to listen to Aiwa's arrangements. Although she matched up with Aiwa's demands, he didn't stick in his entire cock as she desired. He supported his body and only made his glans penis thrust in and out of her flesh hole at high speed. The faster the thrusting became, more it made a woman feel unwell, because a woman's desire was stimulated very quickly, but it was difficult to satisfy it, that's the main reason for a woman to like a man with a thick penis. A small thing could only make a woman itch, but not solve the problem.

[Oh Aiwa can't you go a bit deeper? I request you this is making me feel unwell]

The Witch continuously moved her body around, but no matter how she moved, she couldn't suck Aiwa's cock inside her flesh hole. [Then I'll also request a thing from you, will you promise me?]

Aiwa set off a slow rhythm and asked.

[I'll promise you anything you want quickly insert it it feels very unwell]

[I want you to cure Beira, can you do it?]

Aiwa's body stopped, he had to let this woman feel as if she won't be able to endure this.

[All right I'll cure her quick it's itching]

Sexual secretions continuously sprayed out of her flesh hole, making Aiwa's glans penis feel waves of warmth. Her labia quite powerfully clamped on his glans penis; however those two small labia really couldn't be compared to that strong vagina, and were simply unable to catch hold of Aiwa's glans penis. The rubbing between her glans penis and her small labia as she tried to clamp him already made her experience her second orgasm.

However, Aiwa knew that although this woman had promised to do it right now, she may not cure Beira later. After getting satisfied, she may even fall out and become hostile towards him.

Therefore Aiwa immediately recalled a method, that was to put a Gu inside her body, and the Gu Aiwa was going to put was a chaste Gu, a woman who has received a chaste Gu had to be forever under the Guist's control. In this way, if the Witch didn't listen to Aiwa, then he could use the Gu to torment her body. The most important thing was that after the chaste Gu was administered, she couldn't sleep with another man anymore, if her heart had any wicked intentions, then that chaste Gu would start tormenting her.

TLN: Gu= Legendary Venomous Insect, Guist= A Gu controller

This was something Aiwa had learned from a heretical school in East Empire;

therefore even his tutor also didn't know that he had this skill in his hand. However, it was impossible for Aiwa to put a chaste Gu inside every woman, because that would consume too much of his energy and essence power, every time the chaste Gu is operated, Aiwa's body and mind both had a corresponding sensation. Therefore if a chaste Gu is put inside the body of many women, then he won't feel peaceful anymore.

And using this chaste Gu on this Witch's body was an inevitable matter. If it wasn't to cure Beira, he also didn't want to consume almost 1/10th of his energy to do this thing.

[Remember your words! You should know that every woman who has promised me but broken that promise has never had a good end, although it's up to you whether to believe it or not.]

Aiwa slowly inserted that meat spear till the depths, making her experience his cock's wonderful skill.

Aiwa's cock could enlarge and shrink according to his thoughts, after going half the distance inside her, he already used his thoughts to make that cock twice its usual size, that brimming sensation immediately made that witch feel satisfied.

[I promise to cure her, quick go deeper]

Right now, the witch already didn't care about what condition Aiwa spoke about, if only Aiwa satisfied her desire, she was ready to agree to anything, because that it wasn't easy for a human to suffer that desire's torment. At present, she felt as if there were 10 million small insects biting inside her flesh hole.

Aiwa stooped down his body and bit her nipple, at the same time, he inserted that cock deep inside her flesh hole, making that huge glans penis directly touch her uterus.

His chaste Gu mingled inside his semen, after Aiwa moved his thoughts, that slumbering chaste Gu slowly started to wake up and moved around in his vas deferens, waiting for the master's orders.

Aiwa bumped that huge scorching glans penis against the Witch's uterus, each bump made her body tremble, but the pleasure from it also made her unable to

think about anything else.

[Oh pleasant very comfortable]

Her body responded to Aiwa's ramming as she moaned. Those already weren't moans and seemed like yelling to Wuya who was down the cliff.

Wuya raised her neck to be able to listen to the sounds above, after a long time, her neck was already sour, but those voices were really alluring, from that Witch's yelling, she could imagine how much this woman enjoyed getting fucked by Aiwa.

[Aiwa, are you all right?]

Wuya was bored to death under the cliff and couldn't help but yell towards Aiwa using a horn.

[It's extremely comfortable; this woman's pussy is very vigorous! A bit more powerful when compared to you, her clamping makes me feel very pleasant!]

Aiwa worked on that Witch's body as he yelled towards the cave exit. He wanted Wuya to know how much he was enjoying riding this woman's body.

Aiwa released her nipple and kissed her neck. That huge cock pumped inside her flesh hole in an unrestrained manner, that violent pleasure couldn't help but make the Witch moan.[Aah dying wu]

At this time, that semen mixed with Aiwa's chaste Gu directly shot insider her uterus. That burning hot semen made the witch feel even more pleasure, making her spray out a wave of sex fluids. Aiwa didn't miss opportunity to suck in her sex fluids; her energy was sucked inside his body as his body enjoyed the pleasure.

The witch's body convulsed for a while. She thought of kissing Aiwa's mouth but his mouth was still kissing her neck as he used that huge glans penis to grind her flesh hole's abyss.

[Wu]

The witch held Aiwa's head, lifting it from her neck as she pressed her mouth forward to kiss him, that small fragrant mouth advanced towards Aiwa's mouth. She sucked his tongue, wishing to suck his everything inside her body.

Although he had ejaculated, Aiwa's cock was still erect and firm. It was quite

hard for that already weak Witch to continue bearing it. That intense pleasure had already overwhelmed her vagina, it could only instinctively spasm. However, this gave huge pleasure to Aiwa.

After a long time, Aiwa's cock also halted its provoking. The witch's body also calmed down.

[You're really very fierce! My previous man could never give this kind of pleasure to me!]

The Witch hugged Aiwa's neck, not letting him come out of her body.

[There's a person still waiting for me down! Didn't you promise to cure Princess Beira? You won't go back on your word's right?]

Aiwa's big hand grabbed her well rounded breasts.

[Why are you so anxious? First, let me properly kiss you!]

The Witch madly kissed on Aiwa's neck, her soft and hot body tangled around Aiwa, but Aiwa was still anxious.

[It can be dangerous if it's too late.]

Aiwa said with worry.

[First let me take a look at your darling.]

Saying this, the Witch cleaved her legs open, letting Aiwa's thick cock come out of her flesh hole; it was moistened with that Witch's secretions.

[Very huge! Come; let me clean it for you!]

The Witch said charmingly.

Aiwa thought she was going to use water to wash it but he didn't expect that she would make him stand in front of the bed as she lied naked on the bed and used her tongue to lick Aiwa's long thing. The sensation of her fragrant tongue licking that cock was very wonderful, if Aiwa wasn't anxious about curing Beira, he would have definitely gotten hard again and cum inside this Witch's mouth.

The witch carefully licked it, she even licked his testicles clean. Whenever her small tongue swept against his testicles, Aiwa felt his entire body go limp.

[Wu Your tongue is pretty good!]

Aiwa couldn't help but relax his body and because of this, that cock got hard inside the Witch's mouth again.

[How about I help but you suck it?]

The witch lifted up her charming face, sending a lovely gaze towards Aiwa as she asked this.

Which man didn't wish to enjoy this? However, Aiwa had a heavy responsibility right now. Before getting Beira's cure, he also didn't have the desire to do anything.

[First cure Beira and then say again!]

Aiwa forcibly made that cock go soft.

[Is she that important?]

The Witch sent an unhappy glance towards Aiwa.

[She came to this place because of me, moreover, I promised her mother to protect her. If you keep her spirit drop, then how am I going to explain it to her mother?]

Aiwa felt this Witch was going to break her promise.

[She's more important than me?]

That Witch merely used her hand to play with Aiwa's cock, sending a gaze filled with expectation towards Aiwa as she asked this.

[You are also important. How can I save Beira without you?]

Aiwa feared that this Witch didn't hold Beira as anything.

[Not matter what you say; you did all this for that little slut. If it weren't for saving her, you also wouldn't have satisfied me, right?]

The Witch was clearly displeased with Aiwa's explanation. She had very difficultly found a man who could satisfy her after spending 10 years inside this ravine, but he hurt her heart like this.

[No. Witch Older Sister's appearance is like a fairy, which man's heart couldn't be moved? Looking at you once made me intoxicated, I really want to marry you and make you my wife.]

In order to fawn over this witch, Aiwa caressed her plump and soft body.

[Don't call me Witch Older Sister again, I have a famous name.]

She pouted her mouth in anger.

[Tell me, what is your name?]

[Call me Lisa. You think I am a woman who sleeps with any man? If I speak out my history, it will scare you to death!]

Lisa haughtily rolled over on the bed after releasing Aiwa's cock.

[Really? Why don't you say it then? What is the history behind you?]

Aiwa looked towards Lisa who was acting in anger and asked. This woman's childish temper appearance was very good-looking, however, hearing her words, Aiwa felt that her age was not small, it was at least several times his age. Looking at her figure, she seemed to be at most 18-9 years old, this bewildered Aiwa, therefore he was interested towards her history.

[Let it be. There is no use in speaking it to you, you wouldn't know it. I'm going to sleep now, you can go!]

Lisa turned her body, making her back face towards Aiwa, not even sending him off.

[It's such a high cliff, how do you want me to go down? It can't be that you want me to fall to my death down this cliff after you satisfied your desire right?]

Seeing this woman act so shamelessly, Aiwa also couldn't help but get angry. He had seen many shameless women, but it was the first time he had seen a woman shameless to this extent!

Chapter 1: A Strange Encounter In The Canyon

Volume 4 Chapter 1

A Strange Encounter In The Canyon

TLN: Let the adventure begin! I have only read till here before; so from now on, I will be reading along with readers! It's quite exciting!

Aiwa knew Lisa was going to break her promise when he saw her lazy attitude. Luckily, he had already foreseen this and planted a Chaste Gu inside her, or else, he couldn't have done anything to her.

[You promised to cure Beira, how can you go back on your word?]

Aiwa calmly questioned her.

[Does it matter? Brat, I let you experience pleasure using my body; was it not enough?]

Lisa lied there as she looked towards Aiwa, however, it didn't seem like she was going to move. Aiwa had absorbed a significant amount of her energy when he had sex with her, therefore, her strength was completely washed out.

[Anyway, those who renege on their promises; suffer the wrath of Heaven.]

Aiwa looked towards her alluring naked body and said in a cold voice.

[Wrath of Heaven? What wrath of Heaven? To hell with it! I don't care about Beira! I only want more spirit drops.]

Lisa sat on the bed after she said this and prepared to assimilate the spirit drop into her bloodline.

However, as she sat, she felt as if there was an insect biting inside her pussy; scared, she leaped on the bed.

[Aaaaahhhhh! What is happening?]

Lisa incessantly scooped out her pussy; however, no matter how much she did that, a continuous itch accompanied by the pain caused by an insects biting attacked her. That pain wasn't a normal one; rather it was quite unbearable.

[Ooww — —]

The more Lisa scratched, the more it itched, however, she didn't have any other alternative but to scoop out her pussy as she rolled on the bed.

[I said it right, whoever reneges on their word in front of me, all suffer the wrath of Heaven. How is it? Is it painful?]

Aiwa complacently looked at Lisa's sorry appearance. Even such a fierce woman also had a time when she made a fool of herself.

[You!]

Lisa suddenly leaped up and gripped Aiwa's throat with her hand.

Although that hand seemed very fragile, Aiwa almost suffocated due to its force.

In terms of strength, Aiwa was not this woman's opponent.

[If you choke me to my death, then the insect inside your body will bite you to death!]

In order to save himself, Aiwa forced himself to resist that suffocation and fished out these few words.

Lisa really loosened her hand; she didn't know whether Aiwa was speaking the truth or not, however, she was feeling a unbearable pain right now.

[You planted an insect inside my body?]

Lisa's beautiful eyes opened wide, however, her hand didn't leave Aiwa's neck.

[I didn't deliberately put them, my body had them from the beginning. Whenever I sleep with a woman, those insects automatically crawl inside the woman's body and only listen to their master's will.]

In order to intimidate her, Aiwa bravely explained her about the dangers involved.

[Take it out of me then!]

Lisa was in a bad mood because of getting played by Aiwa, except when she was taking refuge during her childhood, she had never suffered defeat at any person. She didn't expect that it would happen at this youngster's hand this time.

[They have already penetrated deep inside your body, I have no method to take them out. However, if you listen to me and don't make me angry, they'll calm down. Otherwise, they'll also get angry along with me and harm the attacker, since they comply to the master's will, even I can't do anything; you can do whatever you see fit!]

Aiwa struggled free from her hand when her will waned a bit; he looked at her long fingernails, feeling afraid. If she had made a tiny movement, then they would have skewered his throat.

[You want to control me?]

Lisa was angry; she desperately roared towards Aiwa.

I don't plan to control you. If you cure Beira and return her spirit drop back, then I won't bother you anymore. After parting our ways, I naturally won't be angry towards you and you also won't receive those insects attack.]

Aiwa used warm words to persuade Lisa.

[Oowww — — It hurts — —]

Lisa shouted again.

When Aiwa used his words to convince her, that tormenting pain attacked her again. This woman wouldn't submit easily unless she tasted some sufferings.

[You will have to promise me, if you don't, then my mood won't improve. Beira is my woman, I won't let her become a crippled person!]

Aiwa firmly said. He didn't want Lisa to hold any plans in her mind.

She had to obey Aiwa's order.

[Aaahhhh — —- You bastard! I should have pushed you down the cliff to your death! Aaaahhhh — —] After cursing, Lisa felt the pain and itching become more violent; that insect bit all over inside her pussy.

[I promise you]

Lisa was muddled from the pain. If it wasn't for her apprehensions towards Aiwa's words, she would have recklessly kill this bad brat who dared to plant an insect inside her!

[Ooowww — —]

At the moment Lisa said [I promise you] these three words, she felt the pain lighten, however, her genitalia still hurt. [Why does it still hurt? I already promised you — —]

Her body curled up as she covered her vulva with her hands.

The sexual secretions from the time she made love with Aiwa had squeezed out and moistened her hands and thighs.

[Come down with me together. Cure Beira, then my mood will become better and you will also feel better.]

Aiwa spoke his conditions.

[I promise you. You go first, I still haven't worn any clothes!]

Lisa embarrassingly said; looking at her wet body.

[How will I go down? You want me to jump to my death? If I die, those insects inside your body will start biting you, and then, no one will be able to save you.]

Aiwa used a grave tone to make Lisa not dare to do this test; this was the only way he could preserve his life. It would be difficult to obtain anything from her unless she was very frightened.

[Then use a rattan to go down!]

Lisa disgustfully said.

[The rattan has already fallen down, I will wait for you here. I want to go down together.]

Aiwa patiently sat on the bed.

Without any other option, Lisa got down from her bed, naked, she took out a pair of clothes from a small closet.

Although she lived in the canyon, Lisa was very particular about the details; her clothes were extremely gorgeous.

[From where did you get such good-looking clothes?]

Aiwa's was curious after looking at those clothes.

[These clothes can only be worn by the Wolf Kingdom's Princess!]

Lisa proudly spoke. She wore these beautiful clothes every day, representing her grandeur identity, only at this time, her that noble vanity was satisfied, however, a vengeful flame also ignited at her heart simultaneously.

[So, what you're saying is, that you're the Wolf Kingdom's Princess?]

Aiwa jeered at her.

Right now, that pain had already disappeared, so, Lisa leisurely wore her princess clothes.

[What? I don't seem like a princess?]

Lisa disdainfully looked towards Aiwa, however, her grandeur couldn't be expressed even if she proved her identity in front of Aiwa, because the weight Aiwa held in her eyes was very light, she felt it was unworthy to showcase her true identity in front of him.

[You seem like it, seem like a real princess!]

Aiwa repeatedly emphasized that she merely seemed, that's all, and didn't say that she was a real princess. This made Lisa quite displeased, even though she didn't want him to believe her.

[Promise me one thing. After I give her spirit drop back, you have to leave this Khalila Canyon immediately, not taking even a single step further, or else, I would prefer to break down into pieces!]

In order to be free from worry, Lisa had no choice but to raise this condition towards Aiwa.

[That's easy, what would we do in this damned region? This isn't a place for humans!]

Aiwa coldly said. He only wanted to make Lisa feel relieved, if she cured Beira,

then they won't disturb her.

After hearing Aiwa would avoid this region, Lisa immediately got angry: [Curse again, and I will throw you down from here!] Lisa grabbed his hand; although he was tall, he was still powerless in front of this woman's hand. Aiwa thought: [Don't tell me, she wasn't affected after getting her essence qi sucked out of her?] Aiwa but clearly felt her pussy convulse when he was sucking her essence qi.

[Older Sister Lisa, you mustn't joke like this, I still haven't carried down the ancestral line for my Holtzer family!]

Aiwa tightly grabbed her hand, fearing that she would throw him out of the cave. If so, even his corpse wouldn't be left for Old Kyle to see.

Receiving the influence of East Empire's conventional culture, Aiwa knew [There were three ways to be unfilial; not leaving behind an offspring was the worst!]

[Take a look at your cowardly appearance, what hero are you thinking of becoming if you're afraid of death so much?]

Lisa sent an even more disdainful glance towards Aiwa, however, she didn't shake his hand off.

[It's not necessary for a person wanting to become a hero to face a pointless death! Moreover, there are many beautiful women waiting to be exploited by me. If I die; won't many women suffer?]

Aiwa smiled as he tightly held her wrist.

If this Witch threw him on a mountain during the flight, it would be a wonder if he didn't starve to death! It would be better to die with a full stomach, or else, it was possible to become a hungry ghost; moreover, if he had to die, he would prefer dying in a woman's embrace, after all, dying a beautiful death, even becoming a ghost would be an accomplishment!

[Your words have some reason. Let's go then!]

Lisa was amused by Aiwa's words, as a matter of fact, living inside this grand canyon was really lonely, it felt good to have this stinky brat talking to her now.

[Good older sister, I'm worried. I'm very heavy, maybe I should hug you. I am giving thought for you, if I die, it would be difficult for you to live. So, still ... still; let me hold your waist.]

Aiwa was really afraid that Lisa would *accidentally* drop him down in mid-air.

Although he had rid her alluring naked body a moment ago; he didn't dare to hug her waist without her permission right now.

Seeing Aiwa's pitiful appearance, Lisa also felt a little pity in her heart. Moreover, she wanted to display a heroic demeanor in front of Aiwa; after all, there was no one who could match her inside this valley, however, there was no fun in it.

[All right, however, hug as tightly as you can, or else, don't blame me if you fall down!]

Lisa opened her arms; holding her bee waist out. After her skirt was pulled by her waist, her breasts were showcased more.

After obtaining Lisa's permission, Aiwa became bold and hugged her slim body, fastening his hands together; that kind of hug, made his face stick at Lisa's well developed breasts.

Lisa coquettishly glanced towards Aiwa; however, she didn't get angry. Getting held by such a big boy; felt even tastier than the time he was using his cock to thrust inside her.

[Hehe, there's nothing I can do about it. Or else, older sister has such a slender body; wouldn't I slip if I don't hug tightly?]

Aiwa flattered and smiled at her.

[So what you mean is that you're holding me against your wishes? Originally, you don't like me?]

Lisa pretended to be angry at Aiwa.

[No, No, I want to lie in older sister's embrace like this every day! Hehe, older sister's breasts are really soft!]

While taking liberties with her, Aiwa opened his mouth and nibbled her nipple.

[Don't make trouble, let's go!]

Lisa clearly enjoyed Aiwa biting her nipple like this.

[Let me prepare properly. You take off, let fly in a pair!]

Aiwa hardly finished speaking before he quickly bit Lisa's erect nipple again, as if that was the only thing capable of guaranteeing his safety.

Lisa didn't argue anymore and came to the cave entrance. She jumped and flew out of the cave with Aiwa.

Their bodies didn't fall down; rather, they floated in the air. Aiwa held Lisa tightly; it felt as if he was flying himself, the wind blew Lisa's long hair back as her sleeves also floated backwards.

Wuya was standing at the ground; looking at them flying in pairs, she felt envy and jealousy.

[Aiwa, I am here.]

Wuya anxiously yelled from below. However, Lisa merely glanced at her before their bodies dropped down at a distance 10m away from Wuya.

[Wuya, quickly catch up, Older sister Lisa promised to cure Beira!]

After dropping down, Aiwa loosened his mouth which was biting Lisa's nipple; his hands were still tightly hugging her slender body.

Aiwa completely disregarded Wuya's current feelings; she was waiting below the cave entrance for such a long time, whereas, these two individuals were having a happy time inside the cavern. However, she was waiting like an idiot, wouldn't she be angry?

Wuya also didn't talk anymore; she pouted her mouth and walked beside Aiwa and Lisa.

[Apparently, this girl really likes you; I really can't see how a woman can be captivated by a man like you!]

Lisa struggled free from Aiwa's embrace; she felt that he had already gotten much gains.

[Hehe, which strong point of this general isn't liked by a woman? How? Didn't

you experience enough pleasure in the cave just now?]

Aiwa proudly laughed.

[Stop showing off, let's see if you will still be so rampant after I use my sword to remove it?]

Lisa made a chopping posture.

[Don't! I still have much of its use! Didn't I say? I haven't left behind a son or daughter for my Holtzer family, if it's cut, who will solve the itching of all the women in the world?]

Aiwa was unable to stop his habit of smooth talking.

Lisa ignored his ramblings and walked over to the cave Beira was in.

Wuya also followed her; a group of maids were anxiously surrounding Beira.

Right now, Beira was lying there at her last breath, unable to move her body.

Seeing Lisa arrive, those maids didn't dare to utter a sound, after all, she had just touched Beira's forehead lightly and Beira became like that; how could they be their opponent? Moreover, after everyone saw Wuya come along with this Witch, the made way for her.

Wuya had placed all her hopes on Lisa, her hand couldn't help but grip her sword hilt. If this woman dared to injure Beira, then, she was willing to fall into a life and death struggle with this devil.

Lisa simply ignored Wuya; she passed through the maids and crouched beside Beira's body.

[Indeed a beautiful woman, no wonder Aiwa that guy cares so much about you!]

Saying this, her slender finger caressed Beira's pale cheek; those long finger nails made Wuya anxious. If only she use more force, those finger nails would resemble daggers, skewering Beira's throat. Wuya's heart tensed up.

Aiwa came inside at this time.

[How is it?]

He anxiously pushed those maids away and stooped his body down.

[No problem! I guarantee to cure her properly. However, you have to promise me; from now on, you won't use that wretched magic to torment me, this old woman!]

Lisa turned her body and firmly said this.

[Hehe, feel relieved, you feel I, Aiwa, am a man who goes back on his word? However, whenever you miss this general, you have to simply find me, I will surely make you feel pleasure to your heart's content!]

Aiwa patted his chest and said.

Lisa glanced towards Aiwa before looking towards Beira again, and said as if she was talking to her herself: [It's a pity about the spirit drop I gained just recently; I looked for so many years and have never seen a girl possessing such spiritual qi, all of my efforts have gone down the drain because of you!]

[Hehe, it doesn't matter, relying on your skill, where wouldn't you be able to find another girl possessing spiritual qi? Moreover, Beira is just a little girl, what spirit drop would she be able offer to you? Quickly return it back to her!]

Aiwa feared that this Witch would renege again, so, he continued to go on the psychological offensive.

Lisa shot a disdainful glance towards Aiwa and said: [You understand fart! A girl possessing such spiritual qi like her, I fear it would be difficult to meet another one in several years.]

[Since she has such talent, there's no need for you to destroy her right? You're already very amazing, I am an expert at Hass Empire, however, I am still not your opponent. What realm are you trying to reach? Don't tell me you're thinking of attaining the Heavenly Seat realm?]

Heavenly Seat was something every martial artist in this world yearned for, however, it was never heard that someone had reached that realm. A person who has reached that realm, whether it be a male or female, can obtain eternal life, moreover also retain their youth forever.

Lisa went silent for a while before releasing a sigh.

[After getting cured, she isn't allowed to stay inside this canyon anymore. If

she runs into me again, her luck wouldn't be good like today!]

Lisa said to Aiwa, as if she was speaking to her man.

[She won't come. As for us, we also won't come here again. This damned region!]

Aiwa firmly said that in order to make it clear, however, after receiving Lisa's glare, he suddenly laughed, saying: [This is a good region, it's not a place where nobodies like us can stay, only you this kind of daoist immortal older sister can stay in this wonderland!]

Lisa satisfactorily turned her head back. After she took a deep breath, she brought her hands together; slowly, a beautiful halo appeared between her hands; that halo separated from her hands and slowly floated on top of Beira's head.

After that halo rotated on Beira's head a few times, it disappeared into her hair.

Aiwa thought: [That halo should be the spirit drop Lisa had absorbed, now, it has returned back to Beira's head.]

Aiwa only hoped for Beira to wake up quickly.

However, Beira's beautiful eyes were still closed; her breath weak, only her slightly swelling bosom could be seen moving up and down.

[Lisa, is she alright now?]

Being unable to see the results, Aiwa anxiously asked Lisa.

[She'll recover in a moment. However, I advise you to leave this canyon as soon as possible. This is not a place where you can stay, besides the God Wolves, there are many more disastrous monsters at here.]

Lisa slowly stood up and left the cave.

[Have a good journey; Miss Lisa. Thank you.]

Seeing her leaving rear view, Aiwa had no choice but to believe her.

[You all; do your best to behave.]

Saying this, Lisa suddenly soared off from the precipice; however, she didn't go

back to her cave, rather, she flew towards another direction.

By the time Aiwa turned his head back, Beira slowly opened her eyes.

[Beira!]

[Princess!]

All of them happily yelled together.

Beira strangely looked towards everyone and asked: [What happened to me? Why are you all looking at me so much?]

Wuya explained the matters about the Witch Lisa sucking her spirit drop to her.

However, Beira didn't feel a single difference from before. She only felt a bit dizzy; a maid supported her as she stood up.

[Beira, we're returning, anyway, we have got the God Wolfs' fur, take a look!]

Aiwa brought the two God Wolfs' fur for Beira to see.

[They weren't beaten by me.]

Beira had recovered her spirit drop just now, so her strength was still weak, as well as her voice.

[However, this is the outcome of our collective battle, without your warning; wouldn't I have already died under that God Wolfs' claw?]

Aiwa was speaking the truth, thanks to Beira's warning at the moment of crisis; he could evade that Wolf Kings' attack.

[Anyway, I didn't shoot that Wolf to its death; I won't claim another person's contribution as mine! You want me to lie in front of Tanzyanians? I won't do it!]

Beira firmly said.

[However, Beira, you can also see how dangerous meeting those God Wolves' was? We almost lost our lives; we shouldn't take such dangers again!]

Wuya reminded. If another accident happens, she wouldn't be able to explain it to Kayseri.

[If you want to return empty handed, then you can return; I won't return!]

Although Beira's body was fairly weak, her determination was firm.

Without anything to bring back, she wouldn't be able to face her mother.

Really, it was she who had challenged Wuya, and if she returned back empty handed; it would be only good for Wuya. It was very hard for her to accept returning back empty handed.

[Beira, that woman living inside the canyon said there are many dangerous monsters in this canyon, which are far more disastrous than the God Wolves, it wouldn't be right for us to advance forward.]

Aiwa had no choice but to try persuading Beira.

[Since someone is living inside this canyon, what's the point of being afraid? Aiwa, if you're unwilling to advance forward, then, you can return back with Wuya; I'll go alone!]

Beira was determined to continue progressing inside this vicious, unfathomable Grand Canyon.

[Beira, you must not be so willful. If you encounter some unexpected accident, then, what would I do?]

Aiwa also got angry.

[Isn't that only a chance? At that time, you can take Wuya as your wife without the slightest hesitation!]

Beira acted in a fit of pique as she glanced towards Aiwa; no other girl has dared to throw a fit in front of him like this, it was only her.

However, Aiwa really didn't want anything to happen to her.

[All right, the Princess says we'll go, then, we'll go; everyone shall die together!]

Although Aiwa said these words, he was in no way thinking to die an easy death; if not, he would have already died several times. The path from the East Empire back to his home was also filled with numerous dangers.

[Support me to stand up.]

Beira commanded her maid.

Under the maids' arms' support, she difficultly stood up.

[How can we do like this? She would fall down while on the horse; let me pass some energy to her! If not, she would definitely fall from horseback.]

Saying this, Aiwa received Beira from the maids' hand.

After he circulated the dou qi inside his body for a complete circle, he amassed a part of energy on his palm; a flame emerged from his palms' center.

After the flame disappeared, Aiwa pressed his palm on Beira's navel.

The best method to transmit energy is through sex, that would lessen the energy lost in the process, however, Aiwa didn't have a genuine skin relationship with Beira yet; if he has sex with her in front of these few maids, she would surely be embarrassed.

Let alone, as the Princess, how could she sleep with a man as she wishes?

Beira felt a wave of warmth at her navel; very quickly, that share of energy spread throughout her entire body from her underbelly.

Soon, Beira felt her spirit high; as if stimulants had been delivered to her body.

Since Aiwa's hand stretched inside her clothes to transmit energy to her; he had to stick it on her skin, unavoidably touching Beira's that thicket.

Actually, it couldn't be called a thicket; it was only a sparse fuzz of hair that's all. She felt very tender, when Aiwa touched her vulva, it felt very different.

Aiwa's finger didn't continue to slide, merely, it touched that soft little area under her mons veneris; his hand immediately came out. However, even that simple touch made Beira's pale face become ruddy.

[Look, Aiwa's energy had already been transmitted inside the Princess's body, her complexion has become better!]

Wuya deliberately shifted the focus in order to cover for Beira.

[Let's set off.]

Beira really felt an abundant strength fill her body.

Everyone picked up their weapons and set off again.

Their party advanced 10 li in a stretch, and when they raised their head to look, they suddenly found that the canyon wasn't merely long and narrow, it was also serene and hidden, the precipices on either side were ten times higher than those at the entrance; taking a look now, only the sky could be seen at the top.

[Aiwa, are we still going to advance forward?]

Wuya was frightened by the dangerous terrain in front of her. If they ran into something at this region, even a corpse wouldn't be left after their death! By looking at this dangerous terrain, it could be seen that some never before seen vicious beasts roamed this place.

Aiwa was sizing up the terrain here; suddenly, a strange hissing cry sounded from a place not far from here — — naturally, it was a sound which hadn't been heard by any person before; extremely frightening!

Chapter 2: Brave Battle Against The Python

Volume 4 Chapter 2

Brave Battle Against The Python

TLN: All right guys.. Moving on with the mess that has happened; let's enjoy DBW! LAWS will be up tomorrow night..

You can chat with me or help me @ <https://discord.gg/Vn2zRny>

Everyone looked towards at the direction of the voice; each of them was immediately dumbstruck.

From a cave on the left cliff, a python was exploring its head out; the bifid tongue slithering out its mouth was over 2m long.

The hair standing terrible hissing sound had come from this monsters mouth!

[Aiwa, python!]

Beira had already noticed the python sticking its head out of the cave; she immediately took an arrow out and placed it on her bow, preparing to shoot that python.

Aiwa pressed Beira's arrow down, rigidly looking towards that python: [Don't enrage it. If it doesn't attack us, it would be best to avoid this guy!]

Aiwa was approximately 10m away from that python, however, he could still feel that python's intimidating power. It could easily swallow a tall person like him effortlessly after opening its huge mouth.

Aiwa looked at the surrounding individuals; after noticing a flying claw in one of her maids' hand, his eyes shined.

That flying claw was used for climbing cliffs, if it's thrown on the cliff, it would hook onto a rock firmly, and then, a person could climb up by pulling on the

rope.

[Give it to me.]

Aiwa stretched his hand towards that maid; she passed that flying claw to him.

[Aiwa, what are you planning to do?]

Wuya had already grabbed his clothes. She wasn't afraid of going into battle, however, confronting this monster, she was nervous, she almost felt her heart-beat stop.

[All of you retreat to the back!]

Aiwa took the long sword from Wuya's hand; his other hand tightly gripped that iron flying claw.

[Hissss — —]

That python issued a hiss once again, that voice continuously rebounded inside the valley for a long time, making the hairs on everyone's body stand up.

[Aiwa, you must not go near it!]

Beira shouted as she retreated back,

[Princess, quickly go to the back, General Aiwa will handle it!]

A maid pulled Beira's hand as she ran backwards.

She knew, relying on her power, she couldn't contend against that monster.

Aiwa visualized the distance between him and that python, checking the length of the iron flying claw's rope, he knew it wouldn't reach the python, even if he pounced forward, it would be futile, because, without power, it wouldn't grab that python firmly.

[Beira, shoot an arrow towards it once, then, quickly hide yourself!]

He looked at a huge rock beside Beira, if that snake coiled around it, then, it wouldn't be able to attack Beira.

Beira placed her arrow on the bow, aiming it towards that python; she pulled it completely, fearing that she would be unable to hit that python if the force was too small.

Followed by a 'Whoosh' sound, that arrow flew towards that python, however, Beira's power was really small, and that arrow wasn't quick enough, that python unexpectedly dodged it. Only, Aiwa didn't count on Beira to injure that python, he merely wanted that python to come out of the cave, or else, he also couldn't go near it.

That arrow really showed the results; that python swung, avoiding that arrow, it simultaneously came out of that cave.

Its target wasn't Aiwa; rather it was Beira who shot at it.

Aiwa could clearly see that the python was more than 10m's long! Its speed was quite quick, completely betraying Beira's imagination, there wasn't even enough time to hide behind the rock beside her, and that python had already covered $\frac{2}{3}$ rd of the distance.

Right now, Aiwa was only a few meters away from that python; he immediately swung that flying claw towards it.

That flying claw grabbed that python's mandible; his hand pulled the rope with all this might, at this moment, that huge python's head was being pulled over towards Aiwa.

That python's latter half of the body, especially its tail section, had a very huge power. Its tail's swinging was fatal to any person encountering it; barely swaying in the air, the swishing sounds it caused was already astonishing.

The python's head was firmly hooked by that flying claw, it was simply unable to get out, but it didn't lose its desire to fight. When it discovered Aiwa, it angrily opened its huge mouth, planning to swallow Aiwa.

Aiwa thought of using that rope to control the python, however, he didn't expect that python to be so powerful, when he was planning to control it, he suddenly felt his body flying as light as a feather.

[I'm finished!]

Aiwa's body flew towards that python's huge mouth.

[Aiwa!]

Beira and Wuya screamed in despair, a python's mouth had one kind of

digestive fluid, if a person was swallowed inside, then, after a little time, that person would be digested until nothing remained.

When his body flew towards that python, Aiwa suddenly raised that long sword in his hand.

Naturally, it was a named invincible sword in Tanzya tribe, a veteran of hundred battles but it still hadn't received over 50% of damage. Since Wuya had battled well, Kayseri had bestowed it to her.

When Aiwa flew towards its mouth, he operated his dou qi, and formed a protective layer over his body, like this, he wouldn't have to be anxious about getting injured by the python's digestive fluids, also, it would make his body slide quickly inside its body. The faster he slid, the lesser time he had to spend in its abdomen, in that way, he could avoid getting smothered to death. Then, he could operate his dou qi to use his thunder palm and come out of the python, however, the explosion would also injure him.

Dou qi follows the master's control inside the body; however, if it is exploded outwards, it wouldn't differentiate between foe and friend, and injure the master.

Aiwa stuck out the long sword; quickly going through the python's abdomen, he could hear woman's screaming sound from outside.

Aiwa suddenly thought of a treasure while going through – snake gall, it's a treasure containing all kinds of poisons. He used his sword to slash against the snake's abdomen; trying to find the snake gall.

After he discovered an oval thing, he immediately tried to grab it, and swallowed that snake gall into his mouth.

Aiwa's long sword couldn't cut pierce the python's abdomen!

[Don't tell me, this kind of sword is unable to pierce the python?] Aiwa immediately realized the danger, thinking: [This time, I'm really finished, turning back and trying to leave through its mouth is also something easier said than done!] Aiwa became anxious; he looked at the snake's anus. Right! Here was the python's most weak position.

Aiwa thought of leaving by piercing through the python's anus, however, he

immediately felt the python's body tremble violently.

The people outside could see the python's body painfully hovering in the air; however, their hopes of Aiwa being alive were already extinguished.

Beira had already started crying.

[Aiwa — — my husband!]

Beira sat paralyzed on the ground, completely disregarding the python's attack.

The python was quickly circling in the sky; besides the bow and arrow, there wasn't any weapon which could handle this monster, moreover, Aiwa was swallowed by it, if they attacked it, it could also injure Aiwa.

The python struggled in the air, and suddenly dropped to the valley floor. A long sword cut out a huge cave in its tail section; a person's silhouette scuttled out from there.

That python violently writhed on the ground for a few moments, finally, it became motionless.

[Aiwa, you're alive?]

Wuya and Beira immediately rushed ahead.

Since he was inside the python's abdomen for a long time, Aiwa's face was greenish.

A few maids supported him and took him to a creek within the valley; washing the mucus on his body.

A maid's strength was pretty good; she pulled out the iron flying claw from the python's mandible.

[Wuya, peel this guys skin. It's very strong; several armors can be made from it!]

While Aiwa was being washed of the mucus, he didn't forget about this treasure.

Since his long sword couldn't slash against it when he was inside its abdomen, it meant that this python was not ordinary.

Aiwa slashed a huge cave at its belly; the filth inside it immediately came out.

[All right, you can peel its skin!]

Aiwa threw the long sword to Wuya; a few maids also fished out a few long daggers to peel its skin.

[Hahahaha You this brat unexpectedly weren't consumed by it!]

Aiwa had just recovered from his panicked state, however, he suddenly heard a clear and bright laughter from the top of the cliff, raising his head to look; it was the Witch Lisa.

[It can't be that you want to sleep with me again? Your libido is so intense?]

Hearing Lisa's laughter, Aiwa didn't feel happy, she unexpectedly wished for him to be eaten by the python.

[I thought I wouldn't see you anymore, didn't expect, you still had this ability, unexpectedly killing this guy. You know? It has stayed here for 30 years, and now, it had died at your hands. Only, it's really a pity, I heard snake gall can increase a person's energy, it would have better if you ate it!]

Lisa floated down the cliff; looking at the maids skinning the python.

[I already ate it. If you had come earlier, I could have shared it with you.]

Aiwa proudly said.

[You really ate it?]

Lisa shouted.

[Didn't you say it can increase a person's energy? I need it!]

[Child, how big is your ability? Unexpectedly dare to eat such a huge python's gall by yourself?]

Lisa's complexion changed.

[I said right, if you had come earlier, perhaps you could have got a share, right now It's late!]

Aiwa put out a having no alternative expression.

[You don't want to live? You'll die! Quickly vomit it out!]

Lisa wasn't joking. She heard that a single person should not devour the entire snake gall, especially, for such a huge python; a single person's body can't contain its energy and would explode.

[It's real or bogus?]

Aiwa saw that Lisa didn't seem like she was telling a lie.

[What's to be done?]

Hearing that swallowing the snake gall could bring this kind of consequences, Wuya and Beira were immediately afraid. Aiwa had escaped that python's abdomen with great difficulty, if something happened to him again, how could they continue living?

[This python's gall bladder has a very huge energy, in case it enters a person's body, it will make that person's blood circulate at a 10 times speed, moreover, it will keep increasing the speed, until that person's body explodes.]

Lisa said with a solemn expression.

[It's really like this?]

Beira grabbed Lisa's clothes and pleaded: [Older sister Lisa, don't you have any method? Quickly save Aiwa!]

[I once saw someone swallow the gall bladder of a 3-4m long snake, those two person's eyes popped out and their body exploded. Moreover, this python's body is more than 10m long, and its age is more than 10 years, its gall bladder must have accumulated a huge amount of energy; if Aiwa really swallowed it, I fear it would be difficult to preserve his life. There's only one way now, precisely to vomit that snake gall out, even if a tiny part is vomited out, it can lighten the symptoms. Only, even if there's a small half left inside his body, it would still endanger his life.]

Lisa spoke with certainty.

Hearing Lisa speak in such a grave tone, Aiwa quickly tried to vomit it out. However, no matter how much he tried, not a single thing came out; not even a nauseous feeling could be achieved.

[Older sister Lisa, I am unable to vomit out]

After hearing her serious tone, he was also frightened. He could guess from Lisa's expression that she wasn't playing a joke with him.

[There's only one other way now.]

Lisa said.

[What? Quickly say it, older sister Lisa!]

All the women pulled Lisa's clothes, as if she was the only doctor who could save Aiwa.

[Let him drink urine!]

[Drink urine?]

All the women were amazed. Who didn't know that urine wasn't something which could be drunk; moreover, all of them were women, so naturally he would have to drink a woman's urine.

[Besides this method, is there anyone who can make him vomit out the snake gall? Hurry up; if it's too late, that snake gall would start transforming inside his belly. Furthermore, if urine is drunk, it can neutralize a portion of the snake gall liquid.]

Lisa's gaze swept over all the women here.

[Aiwa, there's no other way, saving your life is important!]

Beira persuaded Aiwa.

[Drink at once drink, what's so terrific about that? Only, you want me to drink from whom?]

Aiwa's sight swept through a few girls' face. He had already experienced Wuya and Lisa, and he didn't want to eat Beira right now, a good thing had to be left for the end.

Aiwa's gaze fell on the prettiest maid's face.

[Mowa , let Aiwa drink from you.]

Beira could guess Aiwa's thoughts. Mowa was her maid, her looks were very pretty.

Mowa's face went red. [That I Should urinate at where? We threw the kettle's we used on the way.]

Mowa embarrassingly said.

[Still use what kettle? Let me directly drink from you.]

Aiwa watched Mowa's towering bosom; his gaze seemed a bit lewd and demonic. Looking at her well rounded body, Aiwa forgot the impending danger he was facing.

[Princess!]

Mowa shyly hid behind Beira.

[Mowa, Aiwa is also your master. In order to save your master's life, you should be able to disregard everything.]

Wuya was also worried.

[Hehe, no need to be anxious, I'm still alright, I will slowly strip Mowa's clothes, no matter what, she's also a girl, it's inevitable that she would be shy.]

Aiwa contrarily quite leniently sat on the ground.

[Mowa, what are feeling shy at this time? You should be honored that Aiwa pointed at you, are you still unhappy?]

Beira was unhappy. If Aiwa wanted to drink from her, she would have done it without the slightest hesitation.

[Yes, Princess!]

Seeing her master get angry, Mowa quickly walked from her back. She shyly looked towards everyone's face, then, she slowly untied her clothes.

Aiwa sat there, looking at this girl stripping her clothes one by one. When only her obscene underpants were left, Mowa looked towards Beira again.

[Stop dillydallying, if something happens to Aiwa, I'll take your life!]

Seeing Mowa hesitate, Beria wished to step forward and slap her face.

However, Wuya pricked her long sword towards Mowa's obscene underpants,

a small hole immediately split open in them, exposing her lovely and tender flesh.

[Aaaahh — —]

Mowa was frightened by Wuya's sword; she thought Wuya was going to kill her. After looking at Wuya's angry face, she started to move.

Mowa was absolutely naked in front of Aiwa, a thick black thicket was at her underbelly, hidden below it was her deep valley. Aiwa didn't stand up, rather, he waited for Mowa to come in front him, his hands caressed her well rounded butt; the shy Mowa had no choice but to stick her naked body to Aiwa's face.

Although it was rather cold inside the canyon, right now, Mowa's body was boiling. She embarrassingly opened her eyes to look towards the surrounding people, she felt their gazes fall on her naked body; it was the first time she felt a person's sight could feel so hot.

[Urinate, I will drink it as you do!]

Aiwa lifted his head, as if the person waiting to be saved was not him, rather the other person.

[I am unable to urinate]

Mowa shyly said. She wasn't lying, the terrifying event just now had evaporated all the moisture on her body; how would she be able to urinate?

[Unable to urinate? I can use another method!]

Aiwa evilly laughed.

He knew Mowa was a virgin who hadn't been plowed, if he used his tongue to tease her clitoris, she would surely urinate. So, Aiwa's mouth slid until her underbelly, he used his hands to slightly push, Mowa at once obediently separated her legs; Aiwa's tongue reached her clitoris.

[Master I]

Mowa mumbled.

[What?]

Aiwa had no choice but to lift his head.

[Let me wash that place.]

Mowa changed her gaze towards Beira, she was her genuine master, and she would listen to her.

[Go!]

Beira angrily shot a glance at her, [Really troublesome!]

Mowa quickly washed her genitalia inside the brook once; although she was going to urinate in order to make Aiwa vomit the gall bladder, any girl wouldn't want to leave a bad impression in front a man she liked.

When she came up, Aiwa could see a few droplets on her pubic hair.

Mowa stood in front of Aiwa, he clasped her butt once again, blowing on her pubic hair; those droplets fell down due to that. After using his finger to twirl that thick pubic hair, he gazed towards her clitoris.

[Hehe, it's very soft!]

Aiwa laughed towards that beautiful woman, Mowa became shy. Her arms supported her bosom, closely enclosing her towering breasts, those tender mammary areola and her captivating red nipples brought out her body's maturity. When she was feeling shy, Aiwa's tongue had started to lick her clitoris.

[Aaaahhhhh — —]

Aiwa had licked once, and she was unable to restrain herself, moaning under this teasing, she closed her eyes from the shyness.

[Look at her appearance, it must be surely pleasant!]

Lisa laughed and said. She naturally knew the feeling of getting licked by Aiwa, however, Beira hadn't experienced it, from Mowa's expression; she could only make out that it must be very comfortable. Only, letting Aiwa lick her in front of everyone, moreover, urinating in public, she didn't have this courage, not so, she would have stepped forward bravely.

After getting licked by Aiwa, her arms which were holding her breasts were now on top of Aiwa's shoulders; her well rounded breasts were completely exposed now.

Wuya was also stunned and couldn't help teasing her: [Mowa, isn't it quite

pleasant?]

[Oh pleasant or not, young lady wouldn't understand unless she tries!]

Mowa's master was Beira, she wasn't afraid of Wuya. Moreover, after fighting along Wuya all this time, there wasn't much discern between master and servant, thus, she also joked with Wuya.

[This slave is becoming more wanton; it's she who is enjoying comfortably, but she's showing off her cleverness. If I let Aiwa lick me, would you be able to enjoy right now?]

Wuya laughed and moved forward; pinching Mowa's plump breasts, this stimulated her lust.

Right now, she wasn't shy, and rather took the initiative to turn her butt around, letting her genitalia rub against Aiwa's mouth.

[Wu — — Aaahhh — —]

Mowa's moans became more and more licentious in front of everyone. She bent her legs, making her genitalia open up and stuck her body out, letting Aiwa lick her entire vulva.

[Aaahhh — — oh — —]

Mowa grasped Aiwa's hand as he got licked by him.

[Mowa, how can you grab your master's head?]

A maid looked at Mowa's infatuated as well as pained expression and couldn't help but laugh.

After getting reminded, Mowa released her hand, however, without anything to grab, she grabbed her breasts and fondled them.

[Mowa, why haven't you urinated? Isn't master's licking making you comfortable?]

Another maid laughed.

Seeing her suffering appearance, Aiwa also stopped.

[My below part is also suffering, who will come to help me settle it?]

Aiwa looked at those beautiful women standing in a circle.

[I know all you have misgivings towards my identity; still, let me do it. Anyway, I am a shameless woman; this won't make any difference to me.]

Saying this, Lisa stripped her muslin skirt.

Lisa's plump breasts and her exquisite figure made all the beautiful women present there exclaim in admiration, especially, when she stripped her clothes in front of everyone, Wuya and Beira felt ashamed at being inferior to her.

What made them admire was Lisa unexpectedly lowered her genitalia, letting Aiwa suck her breasts. She still raised her head to brazenly look towards those women, a charming breath spread from her body, making ripples form at those women's hearts.

[Older sister Lisa is very pretty!]

Beira praised her.

[You need not praise me; I also got fucked by Aiwa. You don't know how fierce Aiwa is; he was able to make the woman with the most intense desire in this world faint!]

Saying this, Lisa took her breasts out of Aiwa's mouth; letting Wuya spread a cushion under her body, she lied down.

She separated her legs, and directly exposed her vulva, not feeling even a little bit shy, like she said, precisely a shameless woman; it was impossible for Wuya to be like this.

[Hehe, older sister Lisa, want me to lick you twice?]

After seeing Lisa's snow white naked body, that thing between his crotch had already risen up.

[Focus on licking your little slave; if you cannot make her urinate, then, you're finished!]

Lisa coquettishly protested. She also cared about Aiwa's life, he had already said, if he dies, no one could control the Chaste Gu inside her body; therefore, she tried her best to save Aiwa's life.

However, Aiwa still used his hand grope her genitalia; it was already wet.

[Hehe, it seems that older sister Lisa wanted my huge cock very badly, or else, how could you have taken the initiative to come forward?]

Aiwa's hand continued to caress Lisa's vulva, showing a lewd face.

Beira was embarrassed to look at it, so, she turned her head away.

[You really don't know the difference between good and bad, I but wanted to save you. Come, quickly insert that chap here; see your appearance, you only licked that little child twice, and you're already erect. Were it not for me, who would be able to satisfy your itching?]

Aiwa slowly rid her body, under those numerous stares; he inserted his thick cock inside her honey hole dripping with sexual secretions.

Lisa's flesh hole was different from other woman, it was very deep, and it unexpectedly swallowed Aiwa's pike until only 2cm was left out.

[Oh — — very pleasant — —]

When Aiwa's pike hit her uterus, Lisa couldn't help but moan.

Aiwa thought to insert deeper inside her, but, it had already reach her most deep part.

Lisa's vagina strongly clamped Aiwa as his meat rod slowly pulled out.

Beira's felt shy, and didn't dare to look at this copulating behavior; however, the curiosity urged her heart to turn her head back.

Right now, all the girls were looking towards Aiwa and Lisa having sex; his every deep penetration and taking out didn't escape their eyes.

Listening to Lisa's moans, looking at the intoxicated expression on her dace, all the women felt as if Aiwa was thrusting inside them, gradually, each of their lower bodies became wet.

[Oh — — Aiwa, thrust faster, you're tormenting me to my death!]

Lisa wished for Aiwa to be quicker, it would be difficult to say what change would come in him after that snake gall energy broke out.

[Mowa, come, your job isn't done!]

Aiwa yelled. Mowa quickly came forward; he made Mowa separate her legs on Lisa's two sides, like this, Aiwa could suck her vulva and also thrust inside Lisa's flesh hole, both wouldn't interfere with each other.

After Aiwa licked her vulva a few times, Mowa was already intoxicated. Her hands massaged her breasts, with closed eyes, her body continuously trembled.

A girls' clitoris was very sensitive, each lick made her desire flare up. Her butt turned quickly, her vulva rubbed against Aiwa's lips; that feeling made her feel extreme pleasure.

As a servant, there wasn't any thoughts of being licentious or not, the only mission was to serve the master, the master's need was the work. Moreover, right now, she could also enjoy while working for the master.

[Aaaahhhh — —]

After getting licked ferociously by Aiwa, Mowa's body trembled, a portion of sex fluids shot out of her secret hole.

[Did she urinate?]

Wuya asked anxiously.

[Aaaahhh — — Aiwa — — faster — — thrust faster — —]

After Lisa's uterus was hit by Aiwa's thick meat rod, time after time, her originally intense desire had already bubbled up, similar to a flood gate opening up.

Chapter 3: Night Ambush

TLN: Sometimes.... You never notice things creeping up behind you... For example... Lab exams.. lol... Anyway... I got through one of them successfully... Holiday time right now... Let's start with the next chapter of DBW! ☐

Volume 4 Chapter 3

Night Ambush

Aiwa rode Lisa's body; however, it was right to say she was moving her body, engulfing Aiwa's thick meat stick as he busied himself on Mowa's body, engrossingly licking her vulva.

After Mowa sprayed out sex fluids due to Aiwa's licking, he moved on to lick her urethra.

Sure enough, after a few licks, Mowa at once urinated.

[Oh aahhhhh I can't hold back]

Although her task was to urinate for Aiwa to drink, at that moment, she felt she was a bit disrespectful, because Aiwa was after all her master's fiancé. How could she urinate in his mouth?

[Urinate quickly then! Who asked you to hold back?]

Wuya anxiously urged her. After seeing Mowa's excited appearance, she knew she had already climaxed several times.

Mowa didn't restrain herself anymore, grabbing Aiwa's head, pulling him towards her crotch. Aiwa sucked her urethra hole; urine poured out of there.

[Aaahhhhh I urinated]

Mowa felt very refreshed after peeing, that urine flowed out her urethra, bringing extreme pleasure to her.

After the final bit of urine came out, Mowa trembled from the cold pleasure.

[Oh]

Mowa moaned comfortably as the last drop spurted out.

Aiwa didn't have a nauseous appearance after drinking urine; he didn't feel a girl's urine to have any strange taste.

[Aiwa, why haven't you vomited?]

Beira and Wuya anxiously asked him.

[I don't feel nauseous, how will I feel like vomiting?]

Aiwa released the limp Mowa, concentrating on working Lisa's body.

[Aaahhhh Oh]

Lisa yelled in a loud voice, moving her body continuously: [Harder I want to feel happy]

Aiwa slammed down a few times; Lisa was unable to under his thick meat stick's thrusting, especially when it hit deep till her flower bud, that intense pleasure made her body shudder.

Lisa spread her legs open, continuously moving. The surrounding women could see the sexual secretions from her nectar hole flow along her butt, spreading all over the cushion, making it wet.

Aiwa's thick meat stick deeply thrust inside her pink vagina like a piston, giving rise to a [ZeZe] sound.

Aiwa silently read the mental technique, making his penis slender.

He didn't thrust fiercely anymore, rather made his penis look for her uterus mouth inside the vagina.

Actually, that uterus had opened up long ago, Aiwa's penis slowly advanced inside her uterus, slowly thrusting. Her uterus contracted, bringing pleasure to Aiwa's penis from getting clamped.

Aiwa didn't make long deep thrusts anymore; rather, he thrust inside her uterus in small but quick range.

A woman's uterus was very sensitive; Lisa couldn't endure Aiwa's rapid thrusting.

[Aaaahhhhhh unbearable stop stop thrusting you'll kill me]

Lisa gasped for breaths; only, she didn't have any energy to be angry.

However, Aiwa didn't stop immediately, rather, he thrust a few more times and suddenly pushed forward, making his penis advance inside her uterus; his semen sprayed inside her.

This time, it would be difficult for her to scoop out the semen. Aiwa wanted this Witch to give birth to his child.

Burning hot semen strongly spurted inside Lisa's uterus, not giving that semen any opportunity to flow back.

Lisa's uterus convulsed violently, sucking all the semen inside her.

She understood in her heart, this time she was in dregs; she would surely conceive this brat's illegitimate child!

[You stinky brat dare to forcefully rape me?!]

Lisa didn't get up, but loudly shouted.

[Lisa, you aren't allowed to make venomous slander! Obviously, it was you who wanted Aiwa, but now, you're falsely accusing him of forcefully raping you; there are many witnesses here!]

Wuya indignantly said.

She had seen many unreasonable things; however, she had never seen such an unreasonable thing.

Lisa didn't argue with Wuya, crawling up, she fiercely glared towards Aiwa, leaving to wear her clothes.

Aiwa naturally knew what the 'forceful raping' she spoke of was. During their last sex, Aiwa saw her completely squeeze out all the semen inside her, but now, he had shot deep inside her uterus, she was unable to squeeze it out, therefore, she said that he forcefully raped her. The other woman simply couldn't understand her word's meaning.

[Didn't you drink Mowa's urine? Why aren't you vomiting?]

Lisa didn't want to think about the pregnancy matter, she was concerned about Aiwa's life first.

[That urine didn't smell like urine, I didn't feel nauseous at all, simply not feeling like vomiting.]

Although Aiwa was merrily working on these 2 woman's body a moment ago, right now, he had no choice but to consider the danger. [Do you have any other method?]

[Come, follow me!]

Lisa pulled Aiwa and ran forward.

[Where are you going?]

Beira and Wuya shouted from behind.

[To find a medicine which would make Aiwa feel like vomiting!]

Lisa answered back and flew off the ground along with Aiwa.

[Where are you taking me to?]

Aiwa puzzlingly asked her.

[You'll understand soon!]

Aiwa gradually saw that cave on the cliff which was Lisa's hideout.

When they were 5-6 meters away from the cave, Lisa released Aiwa's hand and went it ahead while Aiwa floated over following her.

[Lisa, what medicine are you going to give me?]

Aiwa was tired from the sex just a moment ago and lied down on Lisa's bed.

Lisa dragged Aiwa, pulling him towards the toad water jar.

Aiwa bowed down to look at the toad moving about inside.

[I won't drink! It's nauseating to death!]

Aiwa thought of running right away.

[Do you think you can really fly, why don't you give a try? It will be a wonder if you don't fall to your death!]

After Lisa saw Aiwa calm down, she released his hand, [Why will I want you to drink it if it wasn't nauseating?]

[Older Sister Lisa, is there no other way? This I really don't want to drink it! Moreover, didn't you say this water can't be drunk within a day again?]

Aiwa anxiously looked towards Lisa. After knowing there was a toad inside when he was drinking it for the first time, he had vomited and was on the point of dying, and now, seeing that nauseating guy moving about inside the water, how could he drink that?

[There's no other way. You have to drink this if you want to live, think about whether you like it or not after drinking!]

Lisa wasn't in a hurry; she sat on the small bed, sticking her beautiful legs for Aiwa to gaze at.

[I will die from the nausea after drinking it!]

After seeing Lisa's leisurely and carefree appearance, Aiwa couldn't help but feel he was the most unfortunate man in the world.

[Dying from nausea is better than the body exploding. If I wasn't anxious about my child becoming fatherless in the future, I wouldn't have cared about your life or death!]

[Then can I drink only a small mouthful?]

Aiwa pitifully asked Lisa.

[I don't care how much you drink if you can vomit out the snake gall.]

Without any other option, Aiwa came in front of the toad water jug, picking up the ladle, he closed his eyes after filling half the ladle, because he could see a layer of filthy stuff on that water surface, he couldn't imagine himself drinking it.

After filling the ladle, Aiwa thought of using his mouth to blow away the layer of filth on top of the water surface and drink only a small mouthful. However, when he opened his eyes, he saw that toad crouching towards him inside the ladle!

Aiwa threw the ladle away in fright, and that toad jumped towards his body.

Aiwa was originally afraid of that thing; he didn't dare to touch it and could only wave his hands while shouting loudly.

[You mustn't touch it. If you touch it, it will attack you. You'll certainly die if it bites you.]

Hearing Lisa say this, Aiwa didn't dare to move. He wished he could turn into a specimen immediately, so as to not get attacked by this toad.

[Zeus, come over!]

Lisa called it and that toad unexpectedly jumped into Lisa's embrace. She gently caressed it as it stayed docile.

[Why are you raising such a monster? It can frighten a person to death!]

[Chi]

That toad immediately shouted towards Aiwa, as if it could understand Aiwa had scolded it.

[You're a good person, a good person!]

Aiwa was frightened and quickly begged forgiveness; Lisa couldn't help laugh out.

[Quickly go and drink! It will be too late if that energy rises out!]

Lisa waved her hand and that toad jumped back inside the water jar.

[Can't you hold it for a moment, and make it return after I drink?]

Aiwa asked Lisa.

[What's the use if you don't feel nauseous?]

Lisa didn't concede.

[Didn't you say that this water has special energy replenishment abilities? I have already eaten the snake gall and if I drink this energy water, wouldn't it increase the burden? Darling Lisa, please think of some other way.]

Aiwa stood there, refusing to drink the bubbling toad water.

[I don't care. There's no other way if you want to live.]

Lisa was simply unwilling to respond to him.

[Hehe, Lisa, can't you see that I'm fine? I don't feel abnormal at all, there's no need to drink that filthy stuff right? Don't you want to give birth to my child? I

wasn't sure of the previous time, why don't I ride you again?]

Saying this, Aiwa came in front of Lisa, grabbing her soft bosom.

Lisa didn't resist, letting his hands go wild over her breasts.

Aiwa was about to untie Lisa's skirt, but he suddenly felt his underbelly warm up. By now, the protective membrane of the snake gall had long ago been digested by his stomach's gastric fluids; that snake gall scattered all over his stomach.

[Darn!]

Aiwa was frightened; he felt that heat wasn't ordinary.

[What happened?]

Lisa also stood up.

[My belly feels warm!]

Aiwa covered his belly.

[Are you still not going to vomit? The snake gall energy is surely going to flare up!]

Right now, Lisa was convinced that snake gall contained large energy.

[Nothing will happen right?]

Aiwa still held on to a thread of luck, not wanting to drink that water.

[You'll be finished by that time!]

Lisa didn't wait for Aiwa and went to fill that ladle, pouring it in Aiwa's mouth.

Although Aiwa didn't want to drink it, he drank two mouthfuls inside.

That water still hadn't entered his belly and he already started vomiting.

The water he vomited out was yellow in color.

[Vomit again!]

Lisa hit Aiwa's back to make him vomit; however, nothing came out no matter how much Aiwa tried to vomit.

Lisa thought of making Aiwa drink two mouthfuls of water again, but Aiwa

refused to drink it.

Aiwa's still felt his belly warm up, as if there was a fireball ignited inside.

Aiwa didn't want to vomit it, he didn't want to waste such a difficulty obtained treasure. After finding a treasure capable of raising his energy, how could he be willing to vomit it out?

He ignored Lisa's advice and sat cross-legged on the ground. He used his dou qi to move the huge energy emitting out towards his veins.

Every time, he transformed the energy he obtained from others using this procedure, he didn't want to believe this case would be an exception.

However, it wasn't easy for him to control that huge energy; the muscles on his body slowly began to swell up.

[Aiwa, it's dangerous! Your muscles!]

Lisa couldn't help but cry out in fear as she saw Aiwa's muscles swell up.

However, Aiwa still peacefully operated his qi, moving that huge energy towards all over his body. Aiwa's original body underwent a transformation at each place that every passed by. After his body swelled up, it gradually became more rugged.

If it was a common person, their body would have exploded long ago, but, Aiwa's body was a little special; he muscles reinforced themselves every time they received external or internal stimulation.

These circumstances weren't foreseen even by Doctor Lucy, she completely held Aiwa as a test subject.

Aiwa firmly bit his jaws. He thought: [I will rather go die than not being able to contain this energy in my body!] He thought that it was worth facing this danger in order to obtain such large energy.

Aiwa utilized his skill to see the snake gall remaining inside his body, it was like boiling water, bit by bit transforming into larger energy, moving towards Aiwa's veins. Aiwa used his dou qi to control this energy, if not; this energy would breakthrough his veins and explode out his body.

He didn't dare to be careless, no matter what Lisa said, he merely focused on

operating his dou qi, guiding the energy to a safer region bit by bit.

After some time, the snake gall energy was completely brought under Aiwa's control, and regularly flowed inside his body. His bulging muscles also recovered slowly.

Lisa's anxious expression also relaxed.

Aiwa slowly exhaled a deep breath, opening his eyes.

[Aiwa, you're alive?]

Lisa embraced Aiwa.

[You wanted me to die?]

After passing through the danger, his mood had also relaxed.

[You're really conscienceless; you don't know how frightened I was!]

Lisa coquettishly cuddled in Aiwa's embrace.

[Go, let's go meet them, they must be anxious.]

Aiwa stood up while embracing Lisa.

[I saved you; they didn't do anything at all!]

Lisa stuck her face at Aiwa's chest.

[Remembering that toad water makes me feel like vomiting!]

[Without my toad's water, perhaps you would have already lost your life.]

Lisa pouted her mouth like a little child. Aiwa knew that she wasn't a little child, according to her own words; she's perhaps a few decades old, it wouldn't be wrong for him to call her 'Grandma'. However, seeing her young appearance makes him call her 'Older Sister'.

Lisa stood up; Aiwa walked until the cave entrance: [How will I go down if you don't help me?]

Aiwa turned around to look at Lisa and laughed. Whenever he made a request from Lisa, his voice softened a bit.

[Didn't you refuse my help? Go down yourself!]

Lisa laughed.

[Older sister saved me from the gates of hell with great difficulty, how could I have the nerve to damage this small life again? I wasn't thinking for myself, rather I was thinking for older sister, also thinking for the child inside older sister's belly! Hehe, am I right or wrong?]

[Thank your sweet-talking!]

Lisa laughed, grabbing Aiwa's hand; she stood at the cave entrance.

Right now, the other woman had already come over here.

[Aiwa, are you alright?]

Beira anxiously asked him.

[I'm alright!]

Aiwa pulled Lisa and jumped down the cliff.

In midair, Lisa suddenly released Aiwa's hand.

Everyone below Aiwa cried out at the same time.

[Lisa, don't you dare harm him!]

Wuya immediately roared, pointing her long sword towards Lisa.

However, Lisa flew over towards another direction.

Aiwa didn't fall down vertically; rather fell down light as a feather to the ground.

[Aiwa, you're alright? You can also fly?]

Seeing Aiwa fall down so lightly; Beira was frightened as well as happy.

[I could fly since the beginning!]

Aiwa proudly patted his chest and said.

By the time everyone saw Lisa, she had already flown out the valley.

[Aiwa, have you vomited all the snake gall?]

Wuya asked.

[Aaahhhh]

Aiwa immediately felt a nauseating feel as he heard her, [Can you stop speaking about that matter? It's nauseating to death!]

Aiwa covered his belly and stated.

[What did that stinky woman make you eat?]

Wuya asked after seeing Aiwa's unsightly complexion.

[Stop asking again and again! You're going to nauseate me to death!]

Aiwa's words frightened Wuya, making her cover her mouth.

[Aiwa, let's return back, my mother must certainly be anxious!]

Beira didn't expect issues to keep arising, experiencing the God Wolves and that Python in a single day really made her unable to imagine what would happen next. They escaped the calamity each time due to luck, but there was no guarantee this luck will keep lasting.

Aiwa and that group of women returned back to the cave they rested in before, taking the wolf fur, they prepared to leave the valley. This time, they travelled in the light in order to be a little safe.

As they walked for half a day, the sky's color became darker.

Going through today's battle made them tired; so they wanted to stop and rest a movement.

Therefore, they raised a tent at a region 1 li outside the valley.

The Tanzyanians custom was to live in tents, raising a tent at such a countryside place was a usual affair.

[Mowa, there's no need for you to keep watch outside, you must have been exhausted these past few days, come in to rest.]

Beria sympathized with her maid, especially Mowa, she obeyed the order and stripped naked in front of so many people to save Aiwa, this made Beira raise a good opinion about her.

Mowa was really tired, when didn't she think of sleeping in the tent for a night? However, a maid's duty was to serve her master, therefore, she didn't accept immediately: [Princess, you sleep inside, I feel quite warm outside.]

[No need, there's no other tribe or person in such a desolate place, go to bed at ease, we'll hasten on with journey tomorrow.]

Beira lied at Aiwa's side, closing her eyes.

Mowa also felt it was no good to go against the princess' kindly intentions and went inside the tent to sleep. Everyone entered into deep sleep; it was completely silent in the entire grassland except for a few occasional wolves' howls.

Those howls weren't of God Wolves'; rather they were of Wild Wolves. Aiwa turned his body and entered into deep sleep again.

At midnight, there was a detachment which advanced towards this tent on the grassland.

They slowly advanced forward, so as to not alarm the persons inside, covering their horse's hoofs with cloth.

[Hahahaha This is a Tanzanian tent! Brothers, we'll be sleeping with woman tonight!]

The sudden laughter outside the tent immediately roused all the people inside the tent.

[Who is it?]

Although Beira's age was small, however, she was the Generalissimo's daughter; she had long ago developed a heroic spirit and courage. Hearing the laughter from outside, Beira was not all afraid, rather loudly shouted towards the outside region.

[Haha, little Tanzanian woman, quickly throw your weapons away, let this uncle satisfy my pleasure! Or else, don't blame this uncle for being impolite!]

The horse hoofs outside the tent started becoming rampant, it was clear that the tent had been surrounded.

[What to do?]

Beira moved her gaze towards Aiwa; however she couldn't see anything at this moment. Although there was starlight outside the tent, it was pitch black inside.

They were really tired these past days and submerged into deep sleep, that's why they didn't hear any noise.

Aiwa didn't speak, he stretch his hand towards Beira's quiver. When he was going to sleep, he remembered that quiver was just above him and Beira, so he raised his hand to get it.

He pushed Beira, making her lie down, taking out an arrow from the quiver. He listened to the voice which was speaking to determine the man's height on horseback. Aiwa operated his dou qi, amassing it in his hand, he suddenly threw the arrow outside the tent.

The arrow pierced through the tent following a [Zi] sound.

Only the outsider's screaming sound could be heard, that man on horseback immediately covered his injured eye, tumbling down the horse.

Aiwa's right hand threw another arrow, another scream was heard simultaneously.

[Be careful of a hidden attack!]

The persons outside the tent shouted loudly in order to warn their companions.

The outside horse hoof sound's immediately become disordered.

Although Aiwa's hearing was quite good, it became difficult to distinguish the enemy's direction due to the disorder.

Aiwa knew, the counterpart may use pikes to pierce their tents which will be quite dangerous. He wasn't worried about these person's pike, however what about these group of women?

Aiwa didn't dare to hesitate, raising his qi, he flew through the tent's roof, followed by a [Chi] tent tearing sound; Aiwa had already flown out a few zhang high.

While in midair, the arrow in his hand flew out, in moment, 3-4 individuals tumbled down the horse.

However, the counterpart had more than 10 individuals surrounding the tent, he knew, only Wuya had the ability to resist them and the other maid's didn't

have the ability to fight in a battle.

When Aiwa was feeling anxious, Wuya came out with her sword.

[Really brazen! I am Tanzya's Wuya; quickly leave if you don't want to die!]

A few surrounding men were frightened after hearing Wuya's shout.

However, she was after all a girl, when they noticed the young and tender tone, those men started laughing instead.

[Wuya? You think you're Tanzya's princess? Hahaha ... we would have been a little afraid if you were Tanzya's Generalissimo. Brothers, advance!]

4-5 men advanced forward, holding a blade in their hands, a cold light gleamed across them in the night scene.

A man tore open a hole in the tent, frightening a few maids to scream.

Hearing the girl's screaming, Aiwa pointed his palm towards that man. His dou qi was enough for him to kill a man a few meters away from him, also, his energy had greatly increased after eating the snake gall. His energy was 5 times what it was before.

Aiwa's this hit immediately compressed the air between him and that man, that compressed air rapidly attacked that man. That unaware man only felt as if a person had punched his stomach, and fell down the horse, remaining motionless.

Right now, Wuya was also brandishing her sword in fight with a few men. The counterpart's hooked blade was very powerful, the entire body may be cleaved into two pieces if hit by it, therefore, Wuya had to be very careful.

Wuya didn't dare to attack with all her might and merely defended. She protected the princess inside the tent and also protected herself; the sounds of weapons colliding with each other were never-ending.

Inside the tent, the maids had surrounded the princess closely; they had pledged their life to preserve the princess' life.

Soon, Wuya's situation was worsening; Aiwa came over at this time. He used his deft reaction speed to grab Wuya's sword and pushed her inside the tent. There were only 7-8 fellows left outside.

Aiwa didn't kill them immediately; they were just 7-8 men and killing them was easy, he wanted to toy with them. If they came near the tent, he used his sword to block them.

Wuya was worried inside the tent, she looked out to see Aiwa fighting with those 7-8 men, Aiwa's figure was wandering freely, that sword seemed like it was playing in his hand. He didn't stab them and merely resisted; those 7-8 men could do nothing to Aiwa.

[Aiwa, your skill is pretty good!]

Wuya couldn't help but praise. She had never seen such exquisite sword play. The Generalissimo had gifted a sword to her due to her exquisite sword play which was infallible at the Tanzya tribe. However, looking at Aiwa's sword play, she had indeed widened her scope.

When those 7-8 individuals were gasping for breaths, Aiwa suddenly set about. Two of them were beheaded instantly, not even having the opportunity to scream.

Aiwa's figure revolved once, that long sword seemed like lighting under the sky, by the time his body had completed a circle, four of them dropped dead from the horses.

Aiwa's sword stopped; there was only 1 person left on the other side.

That man immediately turned about and ran; Aiwa also didn't chase him and sat there like a statue.

Chapter 4: Wolf Kingdom's Army's Retreat

TLN: Finally... The next chapter . I'll try to get the next one out by tomorrow

Volume 4 Chapter 4

Wolf Kingdom's Army's Retreat

Aiwa stood there after beheading four people with his sword, as if he was also hit by the enemy.

[Aiwa, are you all right?]

The party of women shouted from the back.

Aiwa snorted with disdain. He waved the sword in his hand; the entire sword turned sparkling clean in a flash.

[Aiwa, don't let that last one escape!]

Wuya anxiously said as she came out of the tent.

Aiwa used the bow to shoot an arrow towards that fleeing man.

That arrow shot through the horse's eye, piercing its heart. It staggered for a moment before falling down along with the man riding it.

That man rolled on the ground and again ran after standing up.

Wuya took the sword in Aiwa's hand to chase over but she was stopped by Aiwa.

[Why didn't you kill him?]

Wuya wished to slice that man into a thousand pieces.

[Haha, if he doesn't return and report back, they will believe that Tanzynians are easy to bully!]

Aiwa laughed while he looked towards that limping man.

[Who were they?]

At this moment, Beira also came out of the tent. She felt very shameful for being unable to participate in the battle due to getting blocked by the maids.

[From their weapons, they seem to be the Wolf Kingdom's cavalry.]

Wuya said.

[What were they doing here?]

[Maybe they were seeking prey.]

[Aiwa, are you all right?]

Beira advanced forward and caressed Aiwa's chest as she asked this.

[I'm all right.]

Aiwa caressed her face as he replied. This young girl could really arouse a man's care.

[After returning back, I'll tell my mother about your contributions and make her reward you!]

Beira happily stuck her face on top of his chest.

With nothing to do, Wuya turned back to return inside the tent.

Aiwa estimated that the trouble had calmed down temporarily, thus everyone lied down in the tent for a while again. After sometime, Beira sent the order to continue walking, she felt that defeated soldier from the Wolf Kingdom will surely come back with reinforcements.

The party made haste to travel day and night until they finally saw the Tanzya tribe tents.

[Princess, we've returned back!]

The maids were excited. It wasn't easy for them to experience all those harsh events, however, as for Mowa, she didn't hope for any rewards, because she had already experienced the wonderful feeling of getting her pussy licked by a man.

Among the maids, only Mowa wished to continue travelling with Aiwa.

At this moment, Aiwa felt as if something was wrong; he could faintly hear the muffled horse hoofs sound from behind.

Wuya followed Aiwa to look behind and shouted loudly: [It's the Wolf Kingdom's army!]

This time, even Aiwa was afraid. There were around 10,000 troops arranged in a battle formation, with banners waving above as they advanced towards his location.

[Inform the Generalissimo!]

Aiwa ordered immediately.

The soldiers who were coming to receive Princess Beira made a u-turn and dashed towards the camp.

[Mowa, escort the princess back to the camp, I and Wuya will stay behind!]

Aiwa said without hesitation. He knew that Beira will never escape alone. However, it will raise the burden on him and Wuya if she stayed behind.

[Aiwa, they have many troops!]

Beira insisted on staying behind with Aiwa and Wuya. She felt that Aiwa and Wuya would be trampled like ants if they entered inside the enemy ranks alone. Beira didn't want Wuya to throw away her life, their experiences the past few days had already deepened the bond between them.

[Beira, I will be all right since Aiwa is there with me. You feel relieved and return!]

Although Wuya felt anxious, she remembered Aiwa's words: [Don't you want to return back as a hero?] Moreover, Wuya didn't intend on shrinking back from the beginning.

It will be a kind of honor and happiness for her even if she died along with Aiwa at this battle.

Wuya believed that Aiwa could easily defeat 10 enemies, but the enemy strength this time was in thousands and their side only had two individuals. It will be difficult for Aiwa come out unscathed from the battle even if he could resist against 100 enemies.

[Mowa, take the princess and return back quickly!]

Aiwa roared. That maid didn't dare disobey his gaze which seemed like it could kill a person.

[General Aiwa, take care!]

Mowa and the other maids pulled Beira as the party hurried back to the camp.

[Aiwa — You have to live —]

Beira yelled as she was dragged back to the camp by the maids. However, she knew how stubborn Aiwa was; the only way to save Aiwa and Wuya will be to face the enemy with the Tanzya army.

A smile appeared on Aiwa's face as he saw Princess Beira gradually go far.

[Aiwa, are we going to die?]

Wuya felt as if her judgment day had arrived when she looked at the Wolf army approaching towards them. She decided to commit suicide by cutting her throat if she fell in the enemy hands so as to not let herself be disgraced by them.

[Do you fear death?]

Aiwa held her arm and kissed her.

Wuya shook her head, saying: [No. I don't mind dying several times if you're with me!]

Wuya firmly looked towards Aiwa.

[Do you know why I told you to stay behind?]

Aiwa continued.

[No, I don't.]

Wuya didn't think it was because of her ability in battle as she was insignificant in front of that 10,000 strong army.

[It's because you can pin down the enemy troops and in the meantime, Kayseri can attack them with the Tanzya army from behind.]

Aiwa said as he gazed in to her clear eyes.

[You won't abandon me and run away alone right?]

Wuya was most anxious about this.

[Me? I will fight along with you! Believe me, if you're here, the enemy will focus on us and surround us. This way, Kayseri's army can strike at them from behind.]

Our odds of survival will increase if Kayseri's army confronts them.]

Wuya didn't believe Aiwa will shamefully use her as bait because he was standing together with her.

[Listen, you mustn't go far from me. I will protect you!]

Aiwa held the sword in his hand firmly as he looked towards the approaching enemy troops.

Wuya also pulled out two daggers from her waist, preparing to face the enemy.

Aiwa could see their genuine appearance after the Wolf Kingdom army neared towards his location. All of them had grease color paint applied on their face, looking malevolent; each one of them seemed exceptionally fierce with machetes on their bodies.

They didn't pursue Beira's party but rather surrounded Aiwa and Wuya.

[Is this woman the Princess of Tanzya?]

A man galloped on his horse out of the enemy ranks and pointed towards Wuya beside Aiwa and asked.

[I am!]

Wuya already understood the reason why Aiwa made her stay behind and followed up.

[Haha ... you're really pretty. Girl, why don't you become my wife?]

That leader-like man came in front of Wuya, simply ignoring Aiwa from the beginning.

[General, he's the man who killed 17 of our brothers!]

A short man popped out of the crowd and shouted while pointing towards Aiwa.

[It's him?]

That general moved his gaze towards Aiwa but started laughing after sizing up Aiwa once: [He killed 17 of ours troops with his sword? You really were a trashy group! Let me see with my own eyes how he kills 17 individuals! Except 17

soldiers, everyone else retreat back!]

17 soldiers dismounted their horses and advanced forwards.

The other men all retreated back, leaving an open space for the fight.

[Wuya, there's no need for you to act, they won't injure you temporarily.]

Aiwa said to Wuya in a low voice.

Wuya stood in the open space, keeping a certain distance from Aiwa. Although Aiwa told her that she wasn't in danger temporarily, she still held the daggers in her hands firmly so that she could react at anytime.

17 soldiers holding a machete in their hands each surrounded Aiwa with him at the center.

Aiwa stood motionless at that spot with the sword in his hand.

These machetes could easily cut the target apart into two pieces in a single strike.

Aiwa didn't move and merely brandished his sword behind. Four sharp and clear metal clashing sounds echoed out after the machetes from 4 of the Wolf Kingdom's soldiers flew towards him.

At the moment Aiwa blocked those 4 machetes, another 4 machetes flew towards those soldiers from their comrades.

They knew that facing an expert like Aiwa weaponless was simply throwing away their life.

Although that surviving Wolf Kingdom soldier had warned them, no one believed there was a expert in the Tanzya Tribe who could kill 17 individuals alone. However, after seeing Aiwa's reaction, they didn't dare to treat that warning lightly anymore.

Those 17 soldiers glanced towards each other and rushed forth at the same time, slashing their swords towards Aiwa.

If it was an ordinary expert, 7 machetes were enough to turn that individual into mincemeat, let alone these were 17 machetes.

Wuya had shut her eyes as those 17 soldiers besieged Aiwa. She didn't wish to

look at her beloved man be killed in such a cruel way.

She only heard a series of [*Pu Pu Pu*] sounds. Opening her eyes to take a look, she saw those 17 soldiers were standing motionless, looking at Aiwa with their eyes wide open.

Gradually, Wuya saw all of those 17 soldiers fall down.

Looking towards Aiwa, he was still standing at his original position as if he hadn't even moved. There wasn't even a single drop of blood on his sword.

Even that enemy general was stupefied, although he was also skilled in martial arts; he had never seen such an opponent before. He understood that if this continued, then he will lose a lot of his soldiers.

[The one who kills him shall be rewarded!]

That general shouted in a loud voice. He knew there were many experts inside his army and they will surely be able to kill this stinky brat if they acted together.

There were 4 individuals who flew out from the troops. It wasn't a exaggeration to say that they flew out as they leapt out over the soldiers and directly dropped in front of Aiwa.

They were the four great experts of the Wolf Kingdom's 1st Wolf Squadron. They assisted the general in keeping the squad's order while executing the missions, directly giving the death penalty to those making a ruckus. Moreover, each one of these four experts were all unrivalled.

They had different weapons from the Wolf Kingdom soldiers, holding a sword in their hands. Moreover, seeing the cold light flickering on the swords, Aiwa could make out that they were all made by a highly skilled person.

Aiwa immediately withdrew towards Wuya after realizing their strength.

[Don't be afraid, they will be unable to injure you!]

Seeing Aiwa kill those 17 soldiers without batting an eyelid raised Wuya's confidence. She naturally couldn't make out the strength of these 4 experts and thought that Aiwa will kill them in an instant.

However, even if these 4 men were defeated, they still will not be able to escape the enemy ranks.

Will he be able to resist 10,000 men alone?

As Aiwa reached Wuya, she felt their bodies become shrouded by a indistinct hazy gas as if they were inside a defensive screen.

Was this the thing that Aiwa said would protect her?

Those 4 men didn't discover this anomaly and confidently pressed towards them.

Maybe those 4 men were over-confident, so they didn't surround Aiwa but rather stood in front of him and pointed their swords towards him simultaneously.

[Attack him!]

Following the order, those 4 swords jabbed towards Aiwa like vicious vipers.

Aiwa dodged the enemy's attack along with Wuya. He kept the sword outside the defensive screen so he can use it to fight the enemy.

He knew the swords in their hands were all treasures; therefore, he didn't meet them with force but rather used the method of using softness to conquer strength. No matter how the enemy attacked, Aiwa's sword blew their swords away.

Sometimes, their swords pierced the defensive screen set up by Aiwa, but they immediately bounced back as if they were hitting a flexible invulnerable ball.

Those 4 experts soon understood something was wrong and thus shifted their attacks towards Aiwa's hand which was holding the sword.

If it continued to go on like this, Aiwa will soon become exhausted and then his dou qi defensive screen will also be unable to resist the enemy's attack.

[Run!]

Aiwa and Wuya killed past towards the enemy troops carrying a momentum.

Aiwa's plan was simple; these soldiers simply couldn't injure a single hair of his or Wuya's. However, those 4 experts will be unable to showcase their entire skill amidst the confusion and will only end up killing soldiers on their side.

This kind of situation carried on for an hour and the numbers of soldiers killed

by those 4 experts were already innumerable while Aiwa and Wuya were completely void of harm inside the defensive screen.

Aiwa merely blocked those 4 experts' attacks which came over occasionally. He didn't need to use a huge amount of energy because those common soldiers' attacks didn't affect him at all.

The enemy ranks fell into disorder due to Aiwa and Wuya rushing inside them. At this moment, Kayseri also came over with her army and attacked them.

The army was utterly defeated after it fell into disorder.

Tanzia's army wasn't that different from the other kingdom's armies. Moreover, their combat skill was a notch higher than those kingdom's regular armies.

The battle continued for half an hour before the Wolf Kingdom army fled.

Those 4 experts besieging Aiwa and Wuya also escaped after looking at the huge reversal.

There were numerous soldiers who were trampled to death as they fled.

This was a total victory for Tanzia.

Kayseri and Beira rushed over in excitement after seeing Aiwa and Wuya were both unscathed.

[You're alright? This is simply a miracle!]

Kayseri didn't dare believe that they remained completely safe and sound within the 10,000 men army; even a single hair was uninjured!

[Hehe, Heaven protected us. Moreover, they didn't want to kill us and only wanted to capture us alive.]

Kayseri looked towards the dead bodies of several soldiers around Aiwa and asked: [You killed so many of their men?]

[Not all of them, some were killed by their own comrades.]

Aiwa pretended to be calm; he didn't want Kayseri to think he was just a child.

[Aiwa, Wuya, your contribution this time was huge. If it wasn't for you both pinning down the enemy troops, it would have been difficult for us to defeat

them so quickly. I will properly reward you tonight!]

[I thank you, General. However, I want to return back. I haven't returned back to Favargo for such a long time, wouldn't it be turning my back on Her Majesty Queen as the senior military officer of Favargo?]

Aiwa assumed the appearance of a person worried about the country and its people.

[Isn't it just Favargo? I guarantee no one will disturb your little garrison again!]

Kayseri protested coquettishly.

Previously, she was merely attracted towards Aiwa as liking someone of the opposite sex. However, she was thankful to him and also admired him right now.

His skill and wisdom were all she had never seen before, without him, Beira would have also met with an accident.

[I'll accept your invitation then. I don't know what reward has General prepared for me this time?]

Aiwa walked alongside Kayseri while occasionally gazing towards her still young and charming face.

Right now she was wearing an armor which made him unable to appreciate her well developed twin peaks. He decided to make this woman use her most charming position in front of him tonight.

[It depends on what our hero wishes to get.]

Although Kayseri had already promised the two princesses' to this little lady-killer, her love for Aiwa didn't fall short of anyone.

[I want Tanzya's most beautiful woman to accompany me!]

Aiwa leaned towards her face and said.

Kayseri was a woman who could cover up her expressions quite well, but right now, she also couldn't help but blush.

[It's natural that you can select any woman to accompany you since you saved Tanzya!]

Kayseri naturally understood Aiwa's intentions; she deliberately emphasized

the word [any], hinting that she was also included in them. [Transmit down the order; the beautiful women within each army shall celebrate together with General Aiwa inside my army tent!]

This was the first time the Tanzya army had crossed swords with the Wolf Kingdom's army in such a wide scale. They had only run into small parts of the army before but also couldn't bring such disastrous casualties to the enemy. Therefore, Kayseri felt that this was worthy of celebration.

After all, Tanzya was merely a tribe, and Wolf Kingdom was a powerful land possessing strong military strength. If they hadn't given such a heavy blow to the Wolf Kingdom's army this time, their homeland would have surely been invaded sometime in the future. Kayseri knew that this time Aiwa had done a huge help to Tanzyanians.

That night, Kayseri held a huge banquet to celebrate this victory, all the heads were gathered here. Even the guilty Lumen was allowed to participate in this banquet with the identity of a maid.

[Call all the beautiful women together and let General Aiwa personally select one of them. Whomever he likes can share a night with him.]

Kayseri wanted to enjoy the night alone with Aiwa. However, she had already declared that Aiwa could choose Tanzya's most beautiful woman to accompany him for the night; she couldn't go back on her word now.

Aiwa sat on the high seat like Kayseri. After Kayseri finished speaking, a party of beautiful women lined up there.

Aiwa lifted his head to look at each one of them but he felt they lacked in comparison to Kayseri, Wuya and Beira's beauty.

At the time Aiwa's interest had almost waned, his eyes suddenly shined as a girl wearing skin-tight black animal-skin clothes appeared in front of Aiwa.

His body couldn't help but lean forwards.

Kayseri pouted coquettishly after looking at Aiwa's expression, saying: [Found your sweetheart?]

Aiwa gave a hollow laugh after realizing his actions and smiled after sitting

upright again, saying: [This girl is pretty good.]

[What are you called? Come over.]

Kayseri pointed towards that girl.

That girl advanced forwards 2 steps, saying: [Slave servant is called Tachi.]

This girl's stature was tall, her looks charming, bosom well developed, exquisite waist, possessing a graceful appearance. Even Wuya and Beira couldn't rival her.

[How old?]

Kayseri asked.

[16!]

That girl obediently replied to the Generalissimo. At here, the Generalissimo was the ruler whom no one dared to disobey. This girl had already revealed her talent previously and was sent over by one of the female chief's, Hwajiya.

[Let it be her!]

Aiwa feared that this girl would be driven away by Kayseri so he anxiously said to her in small voice.

Kayseri laughed towards Aiwa, [Why are you so anxious? Are you afraid I won't give her to you?]

Following on, Kayseri asked in a loud voice: [Who sent this girl?]

[It was this General.]

Hwajiya could make out Aiwa's intentions from his gaze. According to her understanding of Aiwa, she was sure that Aiwa was fond of Tachi. Moreover, Hwajiya already knew that Tachi was from the blood lineage of another tribe's famous noble house. Only, her mother and father were captured as slaves and as a captive child, she also naturally became a slave.

[Good. Tell her to change her clothes and prepare to spend the night with General Aiwa.]

Kayseri felt the animal-skin clothes on this girl's body were not in decorum.

[No need. I like it the way she is!]

Aiwa's eyes shone, wishing he could immediately embrace Tachi on the bed.

[Originally, you're fond of girls wearing animal-skin clothes?]

Wuya made fun of him, saying: [If I had known it before, I would have also worn animal-skin clothes, then perhaps I could have been tonight's main cast!]

[That python skin we obtained is for making full body armor for you and Beira, they will surely look good on you both.]

Aiwa said to Wuya and then avariciously gazed at Tachi's body.

[Tachi, come and sit here. You belong to General Aiwa tonight, you mustn't be reserved.]

Kayseri called out to her; Tachi came to her side.

[It's General Aiwa who wants you, not the Generalissimo. What are you doing over there?]

Wuya couldn't help but laugh after seeing Tachi's restrained appearance. She pulled her in front of Aiwa and pushed her into his embrace.

Aiwa directly held her in his bosom, the fragrance from her body made Aiwa intoxicated.

[You're really fragrant!]

Aiwa took a deep infatuated breath.

[I specially made her take a perfumed bath before coming here.]

Hwajiya promptly appeared to take the credit.

[Generalissimo, shouldn't General Hwajiya be rewarded with something?]

Aiwa felt a little apologetic and hence raised the matter of a reward for Hwajiya.

[Hwajiya requests the Generalissimo, since General Aiwa has put out a high contribution for Tanzya, he ought to enjoy all the beautiful women of Tanzya.]

Hwajiya immediately replied back.

[Is your Generalissimo a beautiful woman?]

Aiwa immediately changed his gaze towards Kayseri.

[The Generalissimo is naturally a beautiful woman; she's our tribe's most beautiful woman!]

No one dared to speak, however Wuya immediately yelled and the others followed after her.

[Then, can I ask for the Generalissimo to accompany me tonight?]

Aiwa came beside Kayseri and also hugged her into his embrace.

[Tonight, you can enjoy all the beautiful women inside this tent!]

In order to escape the embarrassment, Kayseri dragged down all the beautiful women in the tent along with her.

Aiwa walked forward and kissed several beautiful women generals.

Those generals all felt happy getting kissed by a hero like Aiwa.

[You still haven't kissed me! Am I not a beautiful woman?]

Beira stood up and pouted her mouth unhappily.

[Hehe, if my Princess isn't a beautiful woman, then no one can be considered as a beautiful woman!]

Aiwa earnestly kissed Beira's lips.

Beira also bashfully raised her small face and explored her fragrant tongue out to kiss Aiwa.

[Good. Everyone's tired today; all the personnel except the patrolling squad can rest! Let's not disturb Aiwa's night. Tachi, properly serve General Aiwa tonight, your slave status shall be erased from tomorrow onwards, you'll become a commoner.]

Kayseri especially said before leaving.

Aiwa was especially given a tent for his contribution today.

After everyone withdrew, only Aiwa and Tachi remained inside the tent.

Aiwa immediately wanted to get affectionate with Tachi, but two maids came inside carrying hot water with them: [We ask the General to take a bath.]

Aiwa stood there as one of the maids filled the bathtub and the other stripped

his clothes. Aiwa had never experienced such treatment at home; it seemed to him that a place with several women was indeed a good region!

Although the maid stripping Aiwa's clothes was young, she was properly proportioned at her womanly places; her eyes were full of life, arousing a man's nature. Aiwa raised her chin and used his other hand to grab her well developed breast.

That maid's face went red with shyness but she didn't resist him. Right now, Aiwa was her master and they had to listen to the masters will.

[We ask Miss Tachi to also take a bath.]

The maids said.

[She's already taken a bath.]

Aiwa waved towards Tachi; she shyly walked over. Aiwa held her waist with one hand and used his other hand to grab her breast through the animal skin clothes.

[Ahhh — General.]

Tachi immediately felt her body go limp all over.

[Wait on the bed for me; I'll come over to make you happy after finishing my bath!]

Aiwa entered inside the bathtub assisted by the two maids.

Chapter 5: Night Of Passion

TLN: Final chapter for this week.

Volume 4 Chapter 5

Night Of Passion

When Aiwa was being assisted by the two maids into the bathtub, Tachi returned to the bed and peeked towards Aiwa occasionally. One look at that long thing between his crotch frightened her.

She was wondering whether she will be able to bear this strange man's big chap.

[You two can only leave after properly scrubbing this General, I haven't taken a bath for several days. If you're able to serve this General well, I will let the Generalissimo reward you both.]

Aiwa placed his arms on the basin and made the two maids give him a scrub bath.

[Please feel relieved General, we both are your slave servants. We shall obey your wishes.]

The two maids followed his orders very earnestly as he was hero who repelled the Wolf Kingdom's army. Serving him was one kind of honor for them.

The maids wore a flimsy cloth over their bodies for bathing Aiwa, making their nipples visible through the surface. The two treasures at their bosoms swayed in front of Aiwa as they scrubbed him, keeping him occupied.

[Hehe, isn't it difficult to work from outside? Why don't you come inside, one can scrub my front and the other can do the back, this will make it easy and quick. Can't you see Tachi is already impatient?]

[This —]

Those two maids hesitated a bit. Although they were here to serve the General, it didn't mean that they could let the General take advantage of them!

Moreover, the Generalissimo Kayseri had sent Tachi here tonight to serve the General in bed, wouldn't it be disrespectful if the maids stripped naked and entered inside the bathtub first?

[You!]

Aiwa pointed at prettier maid.

That maid hesitated a bit but she followed Aiwa's order and finally untied her flimsy clothes.

Her clothes slid down her well proportioned and fully rounded body, revealing her alluring body to Aiwa. Although the thicket at her underbelly wasn't that lush, but her lovely and perky breasts almost made Aiwa's nose spray blood. Those breasts seemed like two white steam buns, looking at her areola and perky nipples made Aiwa drool.

That maid shyly drew her body closer and cautiously entered inside the bathtub. However, Aiwa could still see the tempting deep valley between her legs.

Aiwa gazed at this maid until she hid her body within the water. However, the water inside the bathtub couldn't hide her entire body, exposing her breasts at the surface.

[Is it me who's assisting in bathing you or it is you assisting in bathing me?]

Aiwa asked this shy maid in front of him. She had forgotten her task due to the embarrassment.

[It's slave servant who's assisting the General in bathing!]

The girl had to come in front of Aiwa to scrub him; this left her with no choice but to place her legs in between his legs. This made her knee touch his already erect huge cock.

The maid retreated in fear.

[Don't be afraid, it won't bite you.]

Aiwa looked at this lovely and pitiful maid. The maid moved forwards until her knee directly bumped into Aiwa's cock.

It was inevitable that her body was exposed at several locations when she extended her hands to scrub Aiwa's chest. Her chest swayed following her hands movements. Aiwa was somewhat intoxicated by this girl's body fragrance. He couldn't help but close his eyes, letting this maid wantonly scrub him.

Her little glossy hand's scrubbing gave him a very comfortable feeling.

[Aahh — It's really comfortable!]

Aiwa couldn't help but moan. The maid's body was quite close to him; his cock had already reached until her crotch and it kept on increasing in length unreasonably.

The thing between Aiwa's crotch wasn't of ordinary length, making it quite difficult for the maid to hide from it. Her face flushed as she scrubbed Aiwa.

Aiwa also stretched his hand inside the water and caressed that maid's buttocks, caressing her anal lobe twice and then moving on to her breast: [Let me scrub you too.]

The maid didn't resist. She naturally had to obey Aiwa's orders as his maid; moreover, Aiwa was offering to scrub her.

Aiwa scooped a little water from the bathtub and washed the maid's breasts. Those two originally perky nipples became more erect after getting washed once. Aiwa kneaded her breasts in a soft-hard manner.

[Mmn, the erectness is pretty good!]

Aiwa played with her breasts delightfully, [Can I kiss them?]

Aiwa lifted his head and asked that blushing maid.

[You can kiss as you please!]

The maid's voice shuddered from the fear of offending this master.

[See, your body is so far from me, how will I be able to kiss?]

Aiwa pretended to be angry.

The maid obediently brought her body in front of Aiwa, delivering her breast until his mouth.

[This is good enough!]

Aiwa pleasingly opened his mouth and sucked her breast.

Aiwa just sucked her for moment and that maid couldn't help but moan:
[Aahhh —]

[Do you feel unwell?]

Aiwa released her breast and asked.

[It feels comfortable —]

The maid closed her eyes from the intoxication. She had never been kissed by a man like this, how could she endure getting sucked like this? Her entire body felt limp when Aiwa sucked her.

Aiwa's hands stretched until her crotch; groping inside her vagina. The maid shyly clamped her legs together but how could she dare resist her master? In the end, she allowed Aiwa to play with her genitalia.

[Mmn ... aaahhh ...]

That maid was intoxicated with Aiwa's fondling; he used his mouth to suck her breast simultaneously. Moreover, Aiwa only inserted one of his fingers inside her vagina.

[Aaahh ... General ...]

The maid whispered shyly; she felt ticklish all over her body.

[All right, use your body to scrub this General now. I like it when a girl uses her breasts to give me a scrub bath.]

Aiwa finally withdrew his hand back from the maid's legs. However, that maid was already intoxicated, almost making her collapse. She had no choice but to obey Aiwa's orders and use her breasts to scrub Aiwa.

That maid used the basin to support herself and placed her bosom on top of Aiwa's chest, moving up and down. Those two lovely and perky flesh buns slid on top of Aiwa's chest, and this made Aiwa's cock longer and thicker, making it throb between the maid's legs.

After the maid scrubbed Aiwa's chest using her breasts for a while, he said:
[Don't just scrub here, do the place below too. Scrub all the places which I'll

need to use when I'll have sex with Miss Tachi, so as to avoid making her body dirty.]

That maid withdrew her body inside the water and used her breasts to scrub Aiwa's thick cock. This one scrub made his cock hyperemic in an instant.

[Oh — It's really comfortable!]

Aiwa couldn't help but raise his back as he was unable to see that maid's face due to the water's depth.

Tachi merely sat on the bed from the beginning, feeling embarrassed to look at this side; she could only listen to Aiwa's moans. When she curiously turned her head to have a look, she saw the scene of the maid in charge of bathing Aiwa use her breasts to scrub Aiwa clean. It would be proper to say it was massaging rather than scrubbing, the maid's breasts exposed themselves outside the water occasionally. Seeing the maid's spotless snow-white breasts become flat and round caused ripples in Tachi's heart.

The other maid used her hand to scrub Aiwa's back; she could clearly see everything happening in the front. Her heart fluttered when she saw her companion use her breasts to massage Aiwa's strong and muscular chest, wishing she could also strip and use her breasts to massage him.

[Not bad, thanks for your trouble!]

Aiwa felt it was enough; the hot water had already seeped into his body.

The maid felt reluctant to stop at this moment but she still crawled from on top of Aiwa's body. She used a towel to wipe her body and wore her flimsy clothes back.

Aiwa left the bathtub with the support of the two maids.

Tachi quickly moved her gaze away, lowering her head shyly.

Those two maids didn't leave the tent but rather waited inside the tent.

Aiwa walked until the bed and sat down. One of the maids quickly came and wiped his body using a bath towel, after that she retreated back until the tent's entrance.

[Tachi, are you tired?]

Aiwa used one of his hands to embrace Tachi's slender waist while his other hand snooped inside her leather clothes.

She was completely bare inside those leather clothes; Aiwa's hand grabbed her well-developed breast directly and kneaded it.

[Tachi shall sleep if the General wants to sleep.]

Tachi replied cleverly. When Aiwa kneaded her breasts, she felt as if her heart was almost going to leap out through her throat.

Aiwa proceeded to pull her chest zipper down, opening a big gap on her leather clothes which exposed all of her cleavage.

[Your breasts are really developed!]

Aiwa groped her breasts through that wide gap again. Her body reacted each time he touched her body.

[General ...]

Tachi's voice shuddered along with her body's trembling.

Aiwa pulled that leather clothes zipper to the bottom, [Did you make these leather clothes yourself? They're really pretty! Only, you'll surely be prettier after stripping them off.]

Saying this, Aiwa slowly stripped Tachi's upper garments, making her snow-white bosom sway up and down. Aiwa could clearly sense her tempting faint breaths.

Aiwa wasn't in a hurry to strip her leather underpants; rather he used his hand to massage her genitalia through them.

Aiwa's hand skill was very precise; his finger directly pressed at her pussy. At the same time, Aiwa bowed his head and took her nipple inside his mouth. That perky nipple didn't turn hard until he sucked it inside his mouth for a moment, just like an unripe mulberry fruit.

[Oh ... General ...]

Tachi was completely dazed; she couldn't help shut her eyes as her body fell down on the bed powerlessly.

Her legs were separated by Aiwa while he used his hand to massage her continuously.

Aiwa withdrew his hand back from her legs and pulled her underpants down, exposing the thicket at her smooth underbelly. Aiwa lightly blew her sparse thicket, making it tremble. He stretched his hand from her waist, passing through that scrumpy thicket, until his finger touched her flesh hole.

[Oh]

Tachi moaned.

[Help Miss Tachi take her pants off.]

Those two maids quickly came over and one of them pulled the pants while the other removed the underpants, those leather underpants were quickly taken off Tachi's body,

A pair of beautiful, snow-white and slender legs was exposed out.

Tachi brought her legs close shyly, but they were separated by Aiwa's hand again. Right now, her genitalia was facing towards the two maids at the entrance. Getting caressed by Aiwa's finger in this way made her embarrassed but she had no choice but to obey since this was General Aiwa's wish.

Aiwa stooped down and kissed Tachi's thin lips, proceeding to bury his mouth at her slender neck. It seemed as if Tachi's neck was more sensitive than her lips. Aiwa used his hand to knead her breasts as he used his mouth to kiss her neck; he slowly slid his tongue along her neck until he reached her cleavage.

His hand had also slid down until her legs, groping her exquisite, soft and silk-like legs.

Aiwa wasn't satisfied with just this licking and caressing; his mouth slid from her cleavage until her underbelly and directly licked her flesh hole.

[Oh ...]

Tachi's body couldn't help but twitch at the moment Aiwa's tongue touched her two tender flesh lips. The caressing had already shaken the young and inexperienced Tachi's soul, and now, it was very difficult for her to endure Aiwa's tongue.

Tachi longed for Aiwa to ride her body, use his meat stick to pierce her and end this play as soon as possible. However, Aiwa wasn't in a hurry at all, he brought a pillow her buttocks and raised her vulva; this made it comfortable for her when he licked her.

Her vulva had opened up because of the pillow under her buttocks. Aiwa pressed his lips at her vulva, if he used his tongue to lick inside her little hole once again, it will be very difficult for Tachi to keep enduring.

Aiwa used his mouth to suck her clitoris sometimes, pressing her clitoris using his lips. It was difficult for Tachi to resist that feeling. Her body couldn't help but get excited, the liquids overflowed out of her vagina, making it itch even more, craving for something to be inserted inside it.

[Wu ... General ... I ...]

Tachi shyly and lewdly moved her legs, making her vulva leave and press against Aiwa's lips; that unusual pleasure was coming from Aiwa's lips.

Aiwa's lips slid on her vulva continuously, making her vagina convulse several times.

Aiwa's lips could sense the condition inside Tachi's vagina, but he had no intention of attacking right now. Rather, he climbed up and brought his cock until the front.

[Tachi, do you know what this is?]

Aiwa held her head and raised it up. Actually, there was no need to do this as she could clearly see his long thing.

[General ...]

Tachi felt embarrassed as she peeked,

[Do you want it to enter your pussy?]

[Yes ...]

[However, your pussy is so small, just like your mouth; I wonder if it can even enter inside. Why don't you try using your mouth to test it first?]

Tachi didn't know how a mouth was used to suck a man's penis; however, Aiwa

had already brought it until her mouth, using that thick glans to separate her thin lips. She had no choice but to open her mouth and swallow that cock inside.

She didn't know how to suck and only took care to not let her teeth scratch Aiwa's thick thing. Aiwa didn't bother about it and kept pushing his cock insider her small mouth.

Aiwa didn't want her to suffer and only expected her to suck his glans with her small mouth.

[I think Tachi's lower body wants this General to pierce it, right?]

[Mmn!]

Tachi agreed shyly and separated her legs impatiently.

Aiwa stooped down and pressed his cock on top of Tachi's snow white naked body. His thick cock found the entrance at her lower body and forced into her narrow flesh hole; her two flesh lips clamped around his cock.

Aiwa directly pushed his cock deep inside her satiny flesh hole.

[Aaahhh ...]

Tachi screamed and grabbed the bed sheet with her hands; she wasn't expecting that ripping sort of pain. Moreover, Aiwa's cock continued to push deep inside her abyss, hurting her narrow vagina.

Although Tachi's vagina was narrow, it was quite deep, taking more than half of Aiwa's cock before it reached her flower bud.

The ripping sort of pain had slowly subsided by the time Aiwa's cock milled around at her flower bud, a huge pleasure just like the time Aiwa was licking her replaced that pain.

[Oh ... Wu ... Aaahh ...]

Tachi moaned along with Aiwa's thrusts. She was already incapable of worrying about the maids at the entrance; she had to moan; if not, she felt as if the pleasure would breakthrough her body and explode her. Her vagina kept on loosening, although it contracted, but it didn't contract tensely like in the beginning, rather it loosened and contracted matching with Aiwa's thrusting.

Aiwa restricted her hands, making her move her buttocks continuously; that long meat stick thrust inside her tender flesh hole in a slow and then followed by a faster tempo. Tachi's body trembled along with Aiwa's thrusting, moaning continuously: [Oh ... Aaahh ... Wu ...]

This girl's moans were completely genuine, devoid of pretension. The expression on her face transformed from time to time, revealing a painful, sometimes excited and a tensed expression at other times. Her flower bud gradually stuck out and Aiwa's thick glans struck against it, slowly rushing forth inside that small mouth.

Aiwa silently chanted the spell and make his glans transform into a sharp meat rod, making it stretch inside her uterus.

[Aaahhhh ...]

Tachi's body convulsed violently, wrapping around Aiwa's meat rod tightly, but Aiwa's meat rod still thrust rapidly inside her uterus, making Tachi curl up her body.

[General ... aaahh ...]

She raised her legs unconsciously; they shivered un-rhythmically in the air. Sex fluids ejaculated out of her, but they were blocked in by Aiwa's meat rod, spreading around it. Aiwa suddenly pushed his body and stopped thrusting, shooting the semen inside her.

[Aaahhh ... Wu ...]

That powerful spurt made Tachi's flower bud shudder. Her small mouth opened wide as she gasped for breaths, the intense pleasure had almost made her dazed.

However, Aiwa kept his meat rod inside her uterus, at the time Tachi's orgasm had receded, he moved again, making her body twitch once more.

Aiwa's tense and exhausted mood from the past few days had finally relaxed now; his huge body directly fell asleep on Tachi's body.

Hearing Aiwa's even breathing on Tachi's body, the maids knew that he had fallen asleep. They came to the front in order to support Tachi's body from under

him. But Tachi waved her hands, hinting them to not worry and let Aiwa sleep on her body.

The reason Tachi had participated in the event for choosing a female for Aiwa was to experience the hero who had put out such a huge contribution for Tanzanians. Just now, the moment he lied down on her body made her feel very happy, how could she wake him up again?

The two maids stood guard at the entrance in turns. However, Tachi couldn't fall asleep due to the excitement. She could feel Aiwa's sharp meat rod return back to its original thick size, Aiwa's cock was different from ordinary men; it was quite huge in its original state. Therefore, her nerves were unable to loosen since it was still inside her pussy, bringing about a slow and subtle pleasure to her.

Since Aiwa had sex with Lucy, Kayseri and Wuya, these three women possessing strange and different innate skills, his body's energy had been promoted by a large degree; plus eating that python's gall bladder in the Khalila Grand Canyon had increased his energy to a new level. Although he hadn't slept for 4-5 days, just an hour of rest was enough for him to recover completely.

Aiwa's thick cock slowly hardened along with his recovery, making Tachi's pussy feel Aiwa's huge cock's pressure.

When he had completely recovered his energy, the physiological clock inside his body roused him up.

Aiwa discovered that he had fallen asleep on Tachi's body, furthermore, his meat stick was still inside her pussy.

[I fell asleep?]

Aiwa asked Tachi embarrassingly.

[General has already slept on Miss Tachi's belly for two hours!]

One of the maids came forth. She really wished for Aiwa to embrace her and push her on the bed for a round, so she could also experience the taste of this man's huge cock.

[I slept on your body for 2 hours?]

Aiwa didn't dare believe that he let himself fall asleep on a girl's body for 2

hours.

Tachi smiled and nodded. Her smile was very charming, resembling a pretty angel under the weak lighting.

Aiwa found it hard to believe that a weak girl like her was capable of bearing his huge body, [I didn't hurt you right?]

[No, I feel even more powerful than before, it's as if the General sent a lot of energy to slave servant before sleeping.]

Tachi said shyly.

Aiwa remembered this. He suddenly felt tired after ejaculating inside Tachi's body and fell asleep. The energy he discharged out from the excitement was absorbed by Tachi through his meat rod inside her.

Aiwa tried to move his cock which was still inside Tachi's flesh hole, this provoked Tachi immediately. That chap stayed inside her pussy for the duration of 2 hours. It had gradually become hyperemic again due to soaking in Tachi's nectar, that thick thing provoked Tachi's sensitive nerves. Although Aiwa didn't twitch, the circulation of the blood inside his cock was enough to overwhelm Tachi.

Fortunately, it was just a weak stimulation, or else, Tachi would have climaxed in succession, making it difficult for Aiwa to fall asleep again. Right now, even if Aiwa moved just a little, the huge cock insider her followed by swaying, bringing out intense reactions from Tachi's pussy.

[Oh ...]

Tachi couldn't help but shut her eyes.

[How? Is it that serious?]

Aiwa believed that she was putting up an act.

[Oh ... Slave servant can endure for ... another ... few hours ...]

Tachi kept enduring so that Aiwa could sleep, however, since Aiwa had woken up, she also didn't restrain herself and moaned. At the same time, her lovely vagina clamped him, stimulating him as well.

Aiwa raised his body and used his hands to restrain Tachi, moving his back; he made long and deep thrusts inside her.

He took out his huge cock outside her and made deep thrusts inside her until her abyss. The maids at the side could clearly see Tachi's virgin blood on Aiwa's cock; moreover, they couldn't help but drool at the sight of that wriggling earthworm like cock.

[Wu ... aaahhh ...]

Tachi could only move her head as her hands were restricted; her originally smooth underbelly also couldn't help writhe along with her breasts trembling.

Aiwa stooped down and sucked her nipple, making Tachi feel ecstatic: [Aaahhh ... General ...]

She extended her tongue, as if she was thirsting for Aiwa's kiss. Aiwa kissed on top of her bosom as his thick cock kept thrusting inside her flesh hole, making Tachi's entire body tense up.

Aiwa was just preparing to bring his mouth towards her lips when she extended her tongue out.

Aiwa opened his mouth and let Tachi's creamy tongue enter inside his mouth.

A girl's fragrant tongue always excited a man, he was dying to swallow her tongue inside his mouth and Tachi was also dying to stretch her tongue inside Aiwa's mouth. Their tongues tangled and rolled over each other.

Aiwa craved for more and thus released her tongue. He inserted his cock inside her flesh hole and flipped her body over, making her kneel on the bed. He supported her waist with his hands and thrust with force from behind.

[Aaaahhh ... oh ...]

Tachi kept releasing crazier moans each time.

Aiwa grabbed her well-developed little flesh buns and kneaded them enthusiastically.

[Aaahhh ... General ... qu ... quicker ...]

Aiwa made quick thrusts inside her body, pounding her until she trembled.

At this moment, the maids outside the tent slowly dropped down, soon after, Tachi also fell on top of the bed.

Aiwa was thinking of asking what was happening but he also suddenly felt his consciousness become fuzzy and dropped onto the bed.